

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08043941 1



APV  
VARNU

VARNU





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation

<http://www.archive.org/details/varnumsofdracutt00varn>



THE  
VARNUMS OF DRACUTT  
(IN MASSACHUSETTS)

---

A HISTORY

— OF —

GEORGE VARNUM, HIS SON SAMUEL WHO CAME TO IPSWICH  
ABOUT 1635, AND GRANDSONS THOMAS, JOHN AND  
JOSEPH, WHO SETTLED IN DRACUTT,  
AND THEIR DESCENDANTS.

Compiled from Family Papers and Official Records

— BY —

JOHN MARSHALL VARNUM,  
OF BOSTON.

BOSTON :  
DAVID CLAPP & SON, PRINTERS.  
1907.



3,000

"Those who do not treasure up the memory of their Ancestors do not deserve to be remembered by Posterity." — EDMUND BURKE.

## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
PREFACE - - - - -	5
HISTORY OF THE FAMILY, BY SQUIRE PARKER VARNUM, <sup>5</sup> 1818	9
GENEALOGY :	
GEORGE VARNUM <sup>1</sup> - - - - -	13
SAMUEL VARNUM <sup>2</sup> - - - - -	16
THOMAS VARNUM <sup>3</sup> AND HIS DESCENDANTS - - - - -	23
JOHN VARNUM <sup>3</sup> AND HIS DESCENDANTS - - - - -	43
JOSEPH VARNUM <sup>3</sup> AND HIS DESCENDANTS - - - - -	115
 — — — — —	
SKETCH OF GEORGE VARNAM <sup>1</sup> - - - - -	13
WILL OF GEORGE VARNAM - - - - -	14
INVENTORY OF ESTATE OF GEORGE VARNAM - - - - -	15
SKETCH OF SAMUEL VARNUM <sup>2</sup> - - - - -	16
DEED OF SHATSWELL-VARNUM PURCHASE, 1664 - - - - -	17
TRANSFER OF LAND TO VARNUMS, 1688-1735 - - - - -	21
SKETCH OF THOMAS VARNUM <sup>3</sup> - - - - -	28
WILL OF THOMAS VARNUM - - - - -	29
SKETCH OF SAMUEL VARNUM <sup>4</sup> - - - - -	30
INVENTORY OF ESTATE OF THOMAS VARNUM <sup>4</sup> - - - - -	31
SKETCHES OF	
THOMAS VARNUM <sup>5</sup> - - . - - - - -	34
DEACON JEREMIAH VARNUM <sup>6</sup> - - - . - - -	35
MAJOR ATKINSON C. VARNUM <sup>7</sup> . - - - - -	36
JOHN VARNUM <sup>3</sup> - - - - -	45
INVENTORY OF ESTATE OF JOHN VARNUM - - - - -	47

SKETCH OF LIEUT. JOHN VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	51
JOURNAL OF LIEUT. JOHN VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	54-64
WILL OF LIEUT. JOHN VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	64-66
SKETCHES OF							
JONAS VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	67
ABRAHAM VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	.	-	-	-	-	-	68
JAMES VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	70
SQUIRE PARKER VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	74-78
COL. JAMES VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	78-82
JONAS VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	83
CAPT. WILLIAM VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	88
JAMES VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	89
JOHN VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	89
HON. JOHN VARNUM, <sup>6</sup> M. C.	-	-	-	-	-	-	90-93
COL. JOSEPH VARNUM <sup>3</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	118
FIRST REPRESENTATIVE FROM DRACUTT	-	-	-	-	-	-	120
COLONEL OF A TROOP OF HORSE	.	-	-	-	-	-	121
BOUNDS OF HIS FARM	-	-	-	-	-	-	123
WILL AND INVENTORY OF ESTATE	-	-	-	-	-	-	124
MAJOR JOSEPH VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	126
MAJOR SAMUEL VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	130
JOHN VARNUM <sup>4</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	132
LIEUT. EBENEZER VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	134
BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	137
SAMUEL VARNUM <sup>5</sup>	-	.	-	-	-	-	140
BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF:							
GEN. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	142
LETTER FROM GEN. NATH'L GREENE	-	-	-	-	-	-	146
REGIMENT AT SIEGE OF BOSTON, 1775	-	-	-	-	-	-	149
" " " BATTLE OF LONG ISLAND, 1776	-	-	-	-	-	-	150
" " " " WHITE PLAINS, 1776	.	-	-	-	-	-	151

## CONTENTS.

V

BRIGADIER GENERAL, 1777	-	-	-	-	-	152
AT VALLEY FORGE, 1777-78	-	-	-	-	-	155
RESIGNATION, 1779	-	-	-	-	-	159
MANSION AT EAST GREENWICH	-	-	.	.	.	160
VISIT OF GEN. LAFAYETTE, 1778	-	-	-	-	.	161
MEMBER OF CONTINENTAL CONGRESS	-	-	.	.	.	164
HIS ABILITY AND ELOQUENCE	-	-	-	-	-	165
FAMOUS CASE OF TREVITT VS. WEEDEN	-	-	-	-	.	166
HIS PERSONAL APPEARANCE	-	-	-	-	-	167
PRESIDENT R. I. SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI	-	-	-	-	.	167
APPOINTMENT AS U. S. JUDGE NORTHWEST TERRITORY	-	-	-	-	-	170
HIS LAST LETTER TO HIS WIFE	-	-	.	-	.	174
HIS DEATH AND FUNERAL	-	-	-	-	.	176
<b>BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF:</b>						
HON. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>s</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	184
LETTER TO HIS SON ON FARMING	.	-	-	-	-	187
CAPTAIN OF TRAINBAND AT DRACUTT, 1770	-	-	-	-	-	190
MARCHED TO REINFORCE Y <sup>e</sup> NORTHERN ARMY	-	-	-	-	-	191
IN RHODE ISLAND ENGAGEMENT	-	-	-	-	-	192
MUSTER ROLLS OF HIS COMPANIES [NOTE]	-	-	-	-	-	192-188
SERVICE IN SHAYS' REBELLION	-	-	-	-	-	193
MILITARY COMMISSIONS	-	-	-	-	-	195
ELECTION TO CONGRESS, 1795	-	-	-	-	-	195
CONTEST OVER HIS ELECTION	-	-	-	-	.	196
CHOSEN SPEAKER 10th AND 11th CONGRESSES	-	-	-	-	-	197-198
SPEECHES: ON DIRECT TAXES	-	-	-	-	-	198
SLAVERY QUESTIONS	-	-	-	-	-	199-200
JUDICIARY	-	-	-	-	-	201
MILITIA	-	-	-	-	-	203-206
ELECTED U. S. SENATOR, 1811	-	-	-	-	-	207
CANDIDATE FOR GOVERNOR OF MASSACHUSETTS, 1811	-	-	-	-	-	208

SPEECH AGAINST GILES BILL	-	-	-	-	209
PRESIDENT, PRO TEM., OF SENATE	-	-	-	-	210
PRESIDING OFFICER OF THE MASSACHUSETTS CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION OF 1820	-	-	-	-	210
REMARKS ON RELIGIOUS TOLERATION	-	-	-	-	212
POLITICAL COMMISSIONS	-	-	-	-	213
PERSONALITY	-	-	-	-	214
HIS DEATH AND FUNERAL	-	-	-	-	217
STORY OF SILAS ROYAL, GEN. VARNUM'S SERVANT	-				218-225
SKETCHES OF:					
MAJOR DANIEL VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	226
COL. PRESCOTT VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	230
GEN. PHINEAS VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	231
JOSEPH BUTTERFIELD VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	233
JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	237-242
CAPT. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	244
MAJOR JACOB BUTLER VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	246
HON. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	251-256
MOSES VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	258
JUSTUS BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>6</sup>	-	-	-	-	261
DR. JAMES VARNUM <sup>7</sup>	-	-	-	-	262
GEN. JOHN VARNUM <sup>7</sup>	-	-	-	-	264
HON. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM, JR. <sup>7</sup>	-	-	-	-	267-273
REV. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>8</sup>	-	-	-	-	280
COL. CHARLES ALBERT VARNUM <sup>9</sup>	-	-	-	-	282
GEN. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM <sup>9</sup>	-	-	-	-	285

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

	PAGE
WILL OF GEORGE VARNAM, 1649 - - - - -	14
SHATSWELL-VARNUM PURCHASE, 1664 - - - - -	17
MAP OF DRACUTT, 1702, WHEN LAID OUT AS A TOWNSHIP, BY JONA: DANFORTH, SURVEYOR - - - - -	27
SILHOUETTE OF THOMAS VARNUM <sup>6</sup> - - - - -	33
PORTRAIT OF DEACON JEREMIAH VARNUM <sup>6</sup> - - - - -	35
PORTRAIT OF MAJ. ATKINSON C. VARNUM <sup>7</sup> - - - - -	36
MAP OF DRACUTT IN 1791, BY FREDERICK FRENCH, SURVEYOR	45
POWDER-HORN OF LT. JOHN VARNUM <sup>4</sup> ; CROWN-POINT, 1760 - -	50
SILHOUETTE OF SQUIRE PARKER VARNUM <sup>5</sup> - - - - -	74
CERTIFICATE OF STOCK IN PAWTUCKET BRIDGE - - - - -	76
SILHOUETTE OF COL. JAMES VARNUM <sup>5</sup> - - - - -	78
INVITATION TO JONAS VARNUM, <sup>5</sup> SURVIVOR, ON LAYING OF CORNER- STONE OF BUNKER HILL MONUMENT, 1826 - - - - -	84
SILHOUETTE OF DOLLY VARNUM <sup>5</sup> OF PEACHAM, VT. - - - - -	86
CERTIFICATE OF ENROLLMENT OF FRANKLIN WYMAN VARNUM <sup>8</sup> IN SAN FRANCISCO VIGILANCE COMMITTEE OF 1856 - - - - -	111
TOMBSTONE OF RUTH, WIFE OF COL. JOSEPH VARNUM <sup>3</sup> - -	117
THE OLD GARRISON HOUSE, RESIDENCE OF COL. JOSEPH VAR- NUM <sup>3</sup> - - - - -	123
PORTRAIT OF GEN. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM <sup>5</sup> - - - - -	142
PUNCH-BOWL PRESENTED BY GEN. LAFAYETTE TO GEN. VARNUM	161
PORTRAIT OF MRS. MOLLY, WIFE OF GEN. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>5</sup> - - - - -	186
SILHOUETTE OF HITY VARNUM <sup>6</sup> AND DANIEL SWETT - - - -	182
SILHOUETTE OF HANNAH VARNUM <sup>6</sup> AND MAJ. EPHRAIM COBURN	183
PORTRAIT OF HON. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>5</sup> - - - - -	186
PORTRAIT OF JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM <sup>6</sup> - - - - -	237
PORTRAIT OF BENJAMIN FRANKLIN VARNUM <sup>6</sup> - - - - -	251
MAP OF DRACUTT, 1830, BY BENJ. F. VARNUM, SURVEYOR	254
PORTRAIT OF JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM, JR. <sup>7</sup> - - - - -	267



## PREFACE.

---

THIS work relates only to the history of the Varnum family since its first representatives came to America, and is testimony merely as to such of the name as are descended from George Varnum who with his wife Hannah and his children, Hannah and Samuel, settled in Ipswich, Massachusetts, about 1635; and his grandsons Thomas, John and Joseph, who with their father Samuel lived on land in Dracutt, Massachusetts, bought by said Samuel in 1664.

That George Varnum and wife, with their children Samuel and Hannah, came to America from Great Britain is well nigh certain, although evidence is lacking as to the ship by which they came over or the port from which they sailed. It is, however, stated by Mr. *Hutton*, a well recognized English authority on these matters, that many ship lists of that period were incorrectly kept or have since been entirely destroyed. It is, moreover, well known to all who have investigated the subject, that there are few if any records now extant of departures from the West coast of Great Britain at this period, the same having been destroyed in a great fire in one of the Government offices where such records were deposited. There are many reasonable indications that lead to the impression that George Varnum and family would naturally have sailed from the Western coast. While the exact locality in Great Britain, from which the Varnums emigrated, has not been clearly determined, in a manner satisfactory even to a family historian, it seems evident that Squire Parker Varnum's statement in his account of the family, that it came from "a hamlet called Drawcutt, supposed to be in Wales," cannot be substantiated.

There is not now, and apparently never was in the 17th Century, any place by that or any similar name in Wales. There were, however, and still are, a number of places in the centre or near the west of England bearing the name of Draycott, but careful researches made by the Hon Joseph B. Varnum, of New York, many years ago, and many times since by his son, Gen. James M. Varnum, indicate that the places by that

name are either of comparatively recent origin or of little importance, and that none of them have any records of the 17th Century extant.

Parker Varnum's suggestion of the Welsh origin of the family possibly came from a confounding of the names of Varnum and Farnum. Ralph Ffarnum, whose name is of record in Ipswich, January 1640, is recognized as the progenitor of the Farnums in America. The name appears so written, in the various original documents filed among the Ipswich Records, in Salem, Massachusetts, which is an indication that the name is of Welsh origin. George Varnum and his son Samuel were freemen of Ipswich at the same period as Ralph Ffarnum; but the former antedated the latter some five years, appearing of record in 1635. Although phonetically the names are similar, they were never actually confounded in Ipswich, nor afterwards in Dracutt, where they came into contact. A slight difference in the early spelling of the name Varnum appears in some cases in the Ipswich Records, where it is written Varnham or Varnam, but Samuel always signed his name Varnum, as is shown in 1649, when he was 30 years old, in his subscription to Maj. Denison's Command; in 1664, in his agreement with John Evered *als* Webb as to purchase of "Drawcutt upon Mirrimack"; in 1676 in his enlistment to serve in the Narragansett Campaign (King Philip's War), and in 1683 when he was 64 years old, in his deposition as to land in Ipswich.

As, in the suggestion of Welsh descent, it is possible that the family tradition as to coming from a place called Dracutt, or Draycott, in Great Britain, may have been confounded with the fact that Samuel Varnum's domain in Massachusetts, purchased by him in 1664 of John Evered *als*. Webb, was then described in the Deed as "Drawcutt upon Mirrimack." John Evered is said to have come from a place near or at one of the Draycotts in Wiltshire in England, and it is quite possible, if not probable, that his neighbors at Dracutt in Massachusetts may have come from at or near the same place.

It is but fair to state that the universal family tradition in the Varnum family, for very many years, sustains the view that the original member of the family came from a place called Dracot or Draycott in Great Britain.

Many of the name have been found in Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, New York, Pennsylvania, Kentucky and the West, with whom it would have been pleasant to have established a relationship in the following pages; but in the absence of direct evidence, it would have entailed

much labor. No attempt therefore has been made to trace connection with those of the Varnum name outside of original Dracutt lineage.

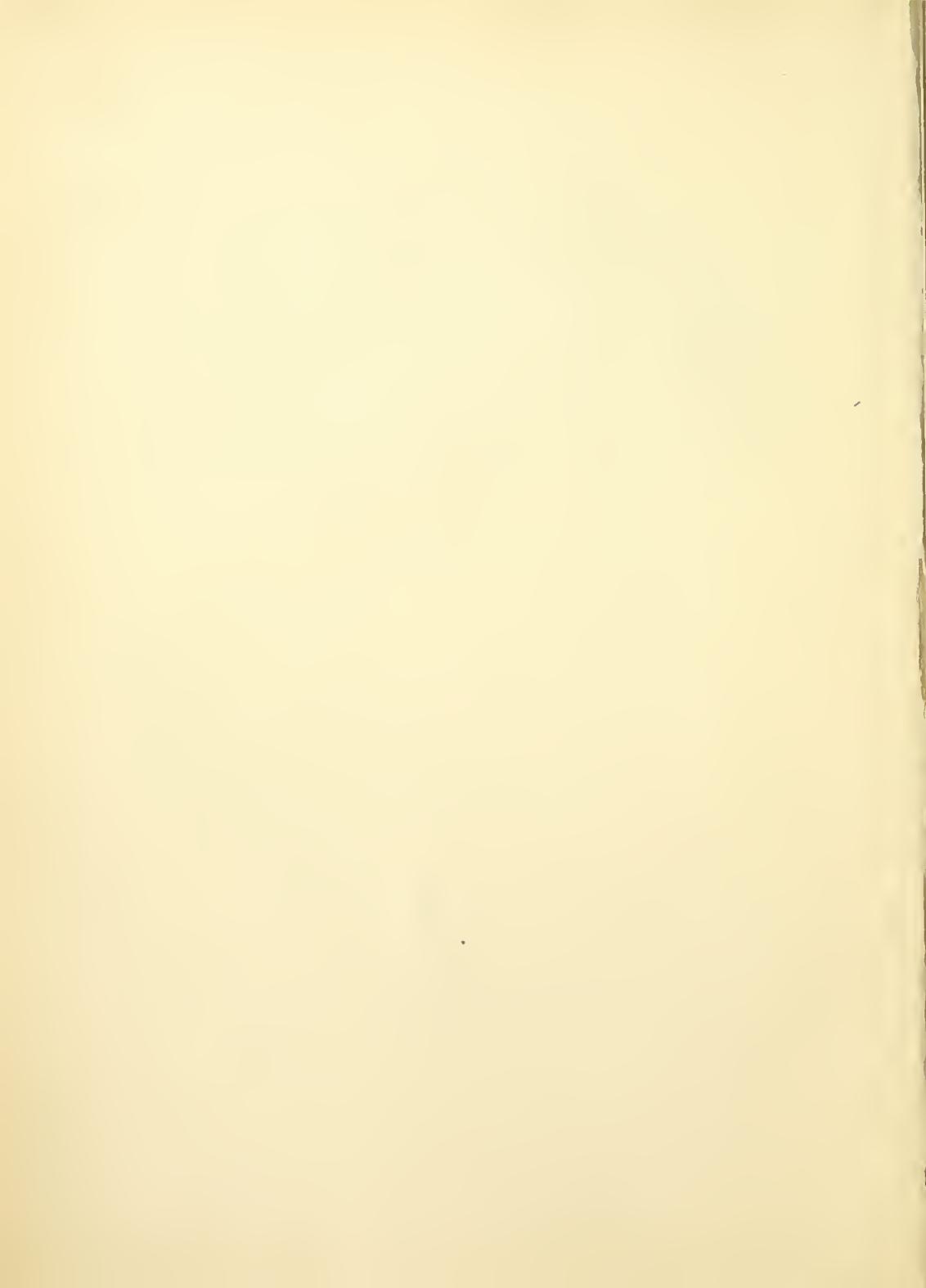
This work proposes only, to relate the story of the original George Varnum who settled in America, and his descendants, and recites as to them only, the absolute undoubted and well authenticated facts.

The Publication Committee believe that they are adopting the most wise and conservative course, in confining the scope of this work to the period from 1635 to 1906, since the substantial accuracy thereof can thus be sustained at all points by existing public and family records.

The Editor will be pleased, however, to receive any corrections or additions thereto relating either to the male or female line, and enter upon his records, to be embodied in a supplement to this work later, if there be sufficient demand therefor.

JOHN M. VARNUM, of Boston,  
JAMES M. VARNUM, of New York,

*Publication Committee.*



## HISTORY OF THE VARNUM FAMILY SINCE THEY FIRST CAME FROM ENGLAND TO AMERICA.

---

[Written by Squire PARKER VARNUM, fifth in descent from George the father of Samuel, Feb. 17, 1818, when he was 71 years of age.]

---

SAMUEL VARNUM married Sarah Langton, and removed from the town or hamlet called Drawentt (supposed to be in Wales) and settled in Ipswich, Essex Co., Mass. He brought with him two sons and one daughter.\* The sons' names were Abraham and Samuel. At Ipswich he had one son whom he called Thomas.

He removed afterwards to Chelmsford on the Merrimack River (where the Howards live), there being a garrison there on account of the Indians. He had purchased land on the North side of the River, which was called Draweutt (in Chelmsford) and turned his cattle over to graze. One morning in crossing the river in a boat with two of his sons and his daughter, to milk the cows, with a squad of soldiers, the Indians fired upon them as the boat struck the shore, and killed the two sons who were at the oars. One fell back into his sister's lap as she was sitting behind him. The soldiers were so alarmed as not to fire until called upon by the father who fired and called out "Do not let dead men be at the oars." They were

\* This is an error. Samuel Varnum was born about 1619, since, according to his deposition made in 1683 (*q. v.*) he was 64 years old. He with his father and mother and sister Haunah landed in Ipswich about 1635. This makes him to have been 16 years old. He married Sarah Langton of Ipswich somewhere about 1645.

buried in Howard's field near the river. The Indians fled, and it was uncertain whether any of them were killed or not.\*

Some time after a treaty was made with the Indians and the said Varnum settled on his lands in Drawcutt being the first settler.

About that time a Colburn family came and settled near him.† Soon after he (Samuel) had a son born unto him whom he called John, and who was the first white child born on the North side of the Merrimack River above Haverhill (Oct. 15, 1669). The Indians came and assisted the mother (there being no white person near) and dressed the child in their manner with wampum and called it their "Little White King" and "pappoose," and sung and danced with the child in their arms, playing upon instruments like jewsharps.

Afterwards he had another son whom he called Joseph.

The three brothers (Thomas, John and Joseph) settled near each other on land which their father purchased. They were often alarmed by the Indians, and wars breaking out, they built a block house bullet-proof, in which all the settlers assembled to sleep. At night, to prevent the Indians coming without their knowledge, they planted guns loaded, with lines fixed in every direction, so that the enemy could not come near without striking some of them so as to fire a gun. One night a horse

\* According to Hubbard's Indian Wars (p. 154) this was Mar. 18, 1676. His account reads: "At Chelmsford the said Wamesit Indians about Mar. 18 fell upon some houses at the North side of the river, burned down three or four that belonged to Edward Colbourne. The said Colbourne with Samuel Varnum, his neighbor, being pursued as they passed over the river to look after their cattle on that side of the river and making several shots against them who returned the like again upon said Indians, judged to be about 40. What success they had upon the Enemy was best known to themselves; but two of Varnum's sons were slain by the Enemy's shot before they could recover the other side of the river."

† Edward Colbourne, referred to above, was one of the early settlers of Ipswich. He purchased the interest of Richard Shatswell, of Ipswich, who with Samuel Varnum bought the 1100 acres of land in "Drawcott upon Merrimack" of John Evered, als. Webb. This joint interest led to the joining of the families in marriage, his son Ezra marrying the daughter of Samuel, and thus down to the present, the Dracut Varnums and Coburns are of commingled blood.

was killed by one of the guns. The people heard the horse groan and struggle and supposed it to be an Indian and dared not go out until morning.

Thomas, the eldest son of the said Samuel, married a Jewett of Ipswich, by whom he had two sons, Samuel and Thomas, and four daughters. Samuel married a Goodhue, and died in the prime of life, leaving one son and four daughters.

His second son Thomas, who lived with his father, married Sarah Colburn and died about one year after, leaving one son who was named Thomas. He inherited his father's estate and married Mary Atkinson, by whom he had five sons and four daughters, and died in the year 1805, aged 57 years. Mary, his wife, died Feb. 10, 1818, aged 55 years. Their children all live upon the land that was their great great grandfather's.

John, the son born in Drawcott, married Dorothy Prescott of Groton, by whom he had four sons and three daughters. He died at about 46 years of age. The sons were John, Abraham, Jonas and James, of whom the first two settled in Drawcott. Jonas settled in Pepperell, James in Chester, N. H., all having posterity. John was one of Capt. Lovewell's men on his first excursion to the Northward of Winipisookee pond in Winter on snow shoes, carrying their provisions on their backs. (In their march they found a bear, by the help of their dog, denned in a large hollow tree, which they killed ; but were unable to get him out at the place where he had entered as he had grown so fat. In a few minutes they were roasting and eating him. He was very delicate). They met a party of nine Indians and a boy at said pond, whom they attacked and scalped. This happened the 20th day of February, 1724. They got into Dover the 24th.\*

\* See Capt. Lovewell's Journal of the trip, also a list of the members of his party in which appears the name of John Varnum. The expedition started Jan. 27, 1724, and returned Mar. 10, 1724. N. E. Gen. Reg., 1853, p. 62.

They then marched to Andover and were there entertained by Joseph Parker. It was there John Varnum first met Phœbe Parker, whom he afterwards married and by whom he had thirteen children.

The said John Varnum died suddenly on the 26th day of July, 1785, aged eighty years and five months. The said Phœbe died the 31st of Jan., 1786, aged 74 years. Their first four children were daughters. Phœbe married Benjamin Poor; Lydia, Jacob Tyler; Susanna, Ebenezer Poor; Hannah, Benjamin Stevens, all of Andover. John, the first son, died of a fever at Crown Point in the year 1760, aged 21 years and 7 months, he being a Lieut. in the army in the war between the French and the English.

Dolly married Peter Coburn of Dracutt. They had one son, the mother dying soon after.

The other daughters died young. Parker, the second son, married Dorcas Brown, of Tewksbury, and lived with his parents on the same land that had descended from his great-great-grandparents. The said Dorcas bore him 15 children and died on the 29th of April, 1800, aged 46 years. About 19 months after the death of his first wife, Parker Varnum married Abiah Osgood, of Andover, who was 10 months younger than himself.

James, the third son of said John Varnum, married Prudence Hildreth, of Dracutt, who died soon after, leaving one daughter. He lived seventeen years a widower, and then married Eleanor Bridges of Andover. By her he had two daughters; one died young, the other is now living (1818). After their mother's death he married widow Martha Adams, of Greenfield, N. H. The said James was five years in the Revolutionary War, four years as Capt. and afterwards as Colonel in the Militia.

Peter, the fourth son of the said John Varnum, died when

about four years old. Jonas, the fifth son, married Polly Parker, of Dracutt, a granddaughter of the late Rev. Thomas Parker, who was the first minister settled in Dracutt. Jonas has three sons and one daughter now living.

Joseph, the third son of Samuel Varnum, was born Mar. 15, 1672. He married Ruth Jewett, of Rowley. He was wounded by the Indians, shot through the bowels; his gall came out, and part of it was cut off, but he lived to be old.\* He had three sons, Joseph, Samuel and John. All three settled in Dracutt. The father, Joseph Varnum, was Colonel of a troop of horse, and his two sons, Samuel and Joseph, were his Majors.

His eldest son, Maj. Joseph, was thrice married: to Rachel Goodhue; to Abiah Mitehell, of Haverhill, and finally to the widow Burns. By his second wife he had three sons: Bradley, Joseph and Ebenezer. The Hon. Joseph Bradley Varnum (Son of Samuel), for many years a member of the House of Representatives in Congress, and for many sessions its speaker, and Major Gen'l of the third division of the Massachusetts Militia, is a descendant of this branch of the family.†

1. GEORGE VARNHAM was among the earliest settlers of Ipswich, Massachusetts. He came over from England among the Puritan emigrants who early settled Salem and Ipswich, who are distinguished from the Pilgrims who settled at Plymouth. With him came his wife Hannah and their children, Samuel and

\* "A company returning from ye old meadows in Dracutt were waylaid and fired upon by the Indians at the fordway, which is now called "Old Meadow Bridge." A tradition has it that some were killed and some wounded. One Joseph Varnum was pierc'd by several balls. Part of his earl came out and was taken off; yet he recovered and lived many years."

[Reminiscences of Dracutt in *Lowell Citizen*, 1859.]

† The Compiler of these records takes this occasion to acknowledge gratefully his obligation to the memory of Squire Parker Varnum, the author of the above account, and to bear testimony to its remarkable accuracy. The following pages will show how research among the archives of the State of Massachusetts, as well as family records, has fortified every statement of his narrative. Without its invaluable aid this Varnum history might not have been successfully accomplished.

Hannah, both young, Samuel being about 16, and Hannah being next in age.

The first record of his name appears in the Ipswich Town records in 1635. "Granted Phillip Fowler\*—Likewise 6 aeres planting grounds on the hill next the town, having Christopher Osgood towards the north-west, and George Varnham south-east." Also in 1636 "Granted Phillip Fowler—also 6 aeres of planting ground on the north side of the town, having a planting lot of George Varnham's on the south-east." Also in 1639 "Granted to Varnham 3 acres of that planting ground formerly Mr. Bradstreets, and the remainder of it to Jarwell Bird, to be laid out by the layers and Mark Symonds."

Among the files in the Probate office at Salem, written in the quaint script of the 17th Century, appears the following unsigned "Will of George Varnum" dated the "21st of the 2nd month, 1649," which Will was admitted to Probate and an inventory filed of his estate: (Book 1, leaf 110.)

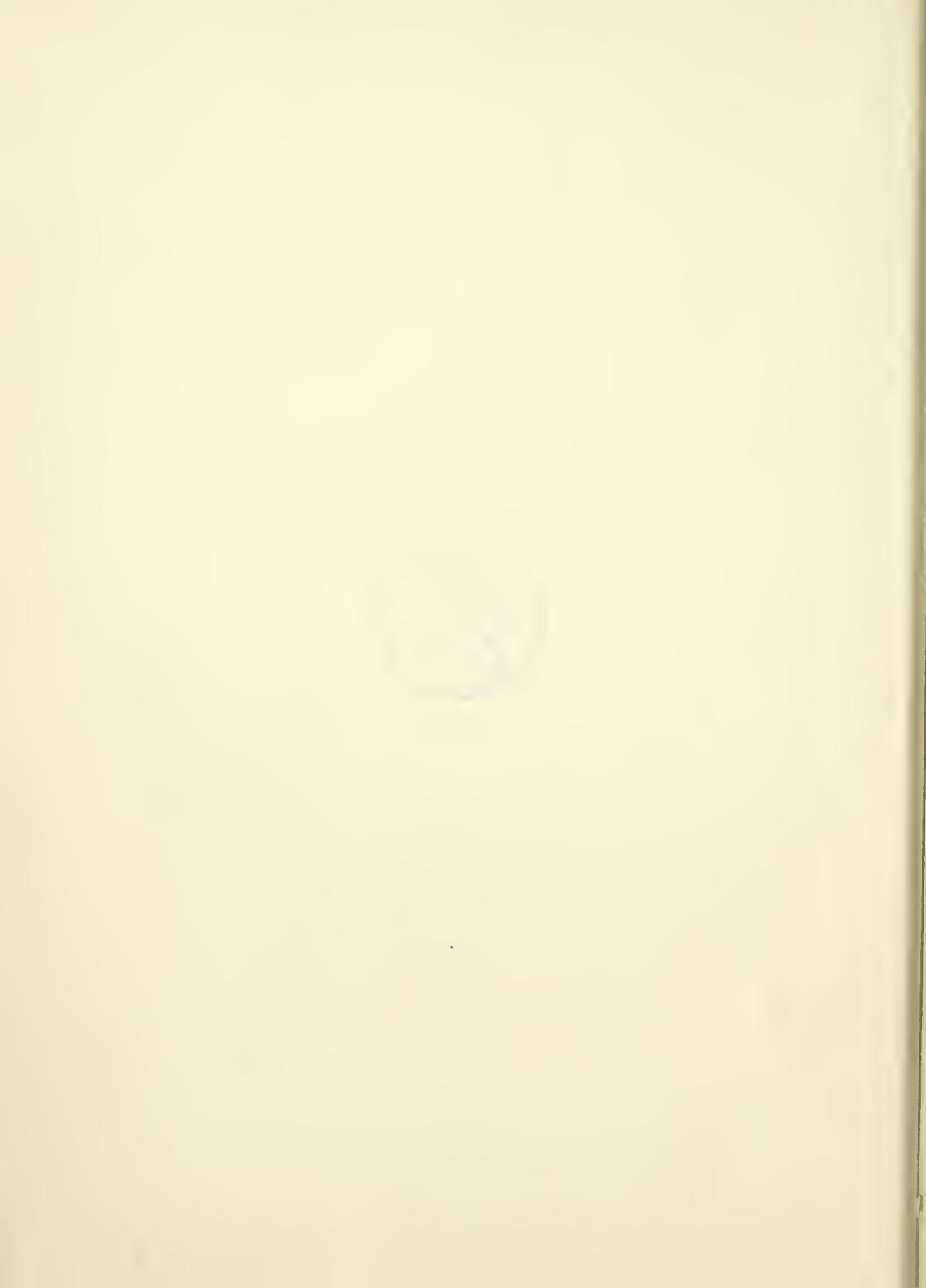
"I, George Varnam, of Ipswich being in perfect memorye doe ordayne this my last will and testament as followeth: first I give my house and barne and land and goods and chattells to my wife for hir life. And after hir decease two pts of all my estate to my sonne Samuel Varnam and the third part to my daughter Hannah, to be equally devided. And my meaning is, if my sonne dye without issue, my whole estate is to be returned to my daughter Hannah, and further so long as she remayne unmarried, she is to enjoye a chamber in my house, and I doe apoynte Thomas Scott and my sonn Samuel to be executors."

He must have passed away shortly after this testament, for there is filed "An Inventory of ye goods and chattells of George Varnam of Ipswich, taken the 12th day of the 8th month, 1649."

\* Phillip Fowler b. in England in 1590. Came to New England in 1634 in the "Mary & John" and settled in Ipswich. Died 24 June, 1678.

The 21<sup>st</sup> of the 2d month 1642

George Darmian of Hopkirk being in perfect memorye doo witness  
this my last will and testament as followeth. first I give my  
house and barns & lands and goods and chattells to my wife for her  
life, and after her decease two parts of all my estate to my sonnes  
Samuell Darmian and the third part to my daughter Hannah to  
be equally divided. And my meaning is if my sonne George  
die, my whole estate is to returne to my daughter Hannah, and  
further see long as she remaynes unmarried is to enjoye a chamber  
in my house, and if she doe appoynt Thomas Scott and my sonne Samuell  
to be my executors



Imprimis, Halfe the dwelling house and barne and all the ground	52£ 15s
Three cowes	14
Two oxen and a Shote	12 - 15
Halfe a cart a cheane a yoke and a halfe a share	12
Four pewter dishes, a fwiing pan and the tramells	16
For boding and some of his clothes and other things	1 - 16
For iron and chaines and other things	1 - 16
For a mortar a cheane and other things	1 - 16
For a matlock meale salt and other things	08
Seed Corne	13.6
	_____
Debts owing to several men to the value of	87£ 7s.6d.
	7£ 11s.

There appears in Ipswich-Salem records, Vol. V, p. 76, the following Deed of conveyance:

"This witnesseth that I, Thomas French, of Ipswich, tailor, for and in consideration of 5 £ by me received have soould unto George Varnham ten acres of upland ground at Reedy marsh lying between the land of Mr. John Whittingham, Robert Day and Goodman Pearley. . . . .

In witness whereof I have to these presents set my hand the 1st of April, 1647."

This property is mentioned in conveyances 1st day of 10th month, 1647 (V, 104), 28th Feb'y, 1653 (ii., p. 40) 16th May, 1644 (V. 144), and also referred to in deeds as bounding property belonging to Samuel Varnum, 3d Sept., 1652 (ii., p. 89), 4th Jan., 1663 (ii., p. 335), 29th May, 1665 (ii., p. 440), and as late Samuel Varnum's land, 12th June, 1665. (Salem Records.)

The Eastern Branch Boston & Maine R. R. now runs through this property.

1. GEORGE VARNUM died in Ipswich in 1649. Wife Hannah, no date of death.

Two children:

2. i. Samuel, b. about 1619; m. Sarah Langton.  
ii. Hannah.

2. SAMUEL VARNUM, whose name so spelled, appears in the Ipswich Town Records in Sept., 1649, "in a list of those that did subscribe to allow Maj. Denison those several sums yearly while he continues to be our leader, Samuel Varnum 3s."

He also appears in said records:

"4 March, 1650. Ordered that John Gage and Robert Lord shall laye out a highwaye to the marsh of Samuel Varnum, John Moss, and Roger Langton."

He was born about 1619. He makes this deposition, recorded in Ipswich Records, Salem, Vol. V, p. 14:

"The testimony of Samuel Varnum, aged 64 years. This deponent Testifieth and sayeth the Land in possession of Nehemiah Jewett which the said Jewett's father bought of Mr. Paine was land layed out by my Father being Twelve acres, part of it an Island made with Egypt River and a swamp being Rocky Island, to Mr. Robert Paine, soon after my father deceaseth and the said land I improved quietly and peaceably by Felling and cutting timber of the same, and I never knew of any common being left between it and the river, nor ever was interrupted in the peaceable use of it, nor my father before me.

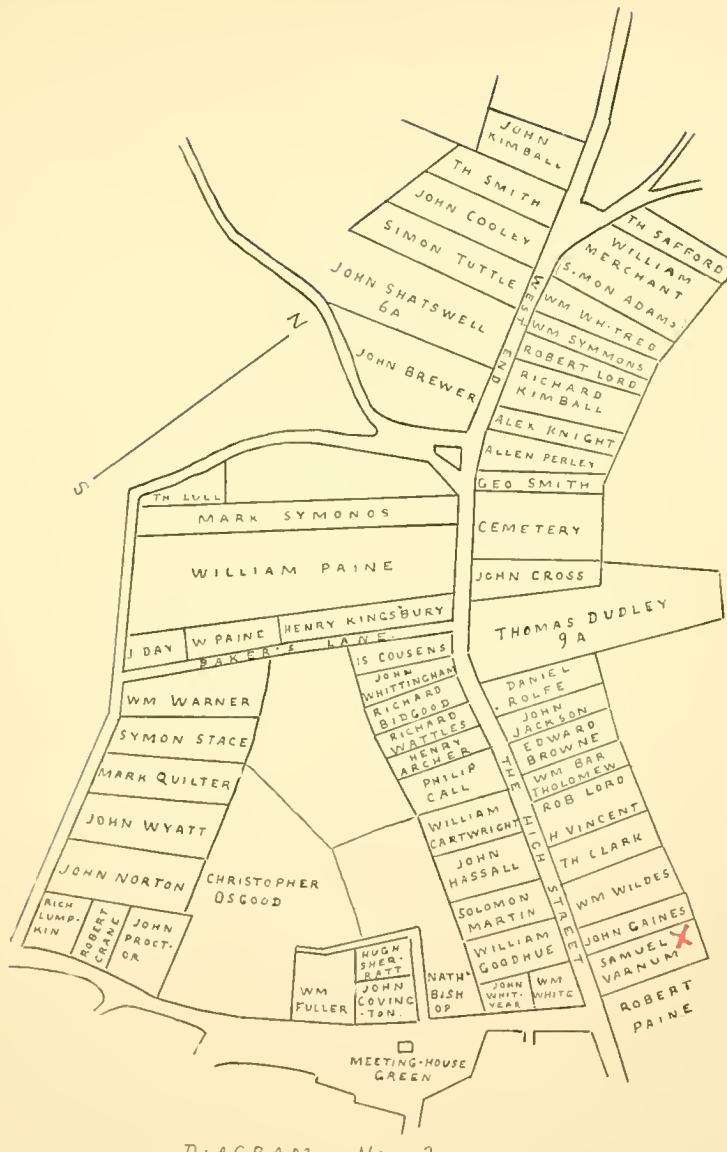
Sworn in Court, Ipswich, 25th Sept., 1683.

Ordered to be recorded.

JOHN APPLETON, *Recorder*.

Samuel Varnum's name with 30 others appears in a petition "to the Honored Generall Court at Boston" as to the Voting Rights of Freemen. Ipswich May ye 11, 1758. Mass. Archives, Vol. 112, pp. 102, 104.

Assuming that his father, George Varnum, landed in Ipswich in 1635, which is the first date where he appears of record, Samuel, at that date, must have been a lad of 16 years, and

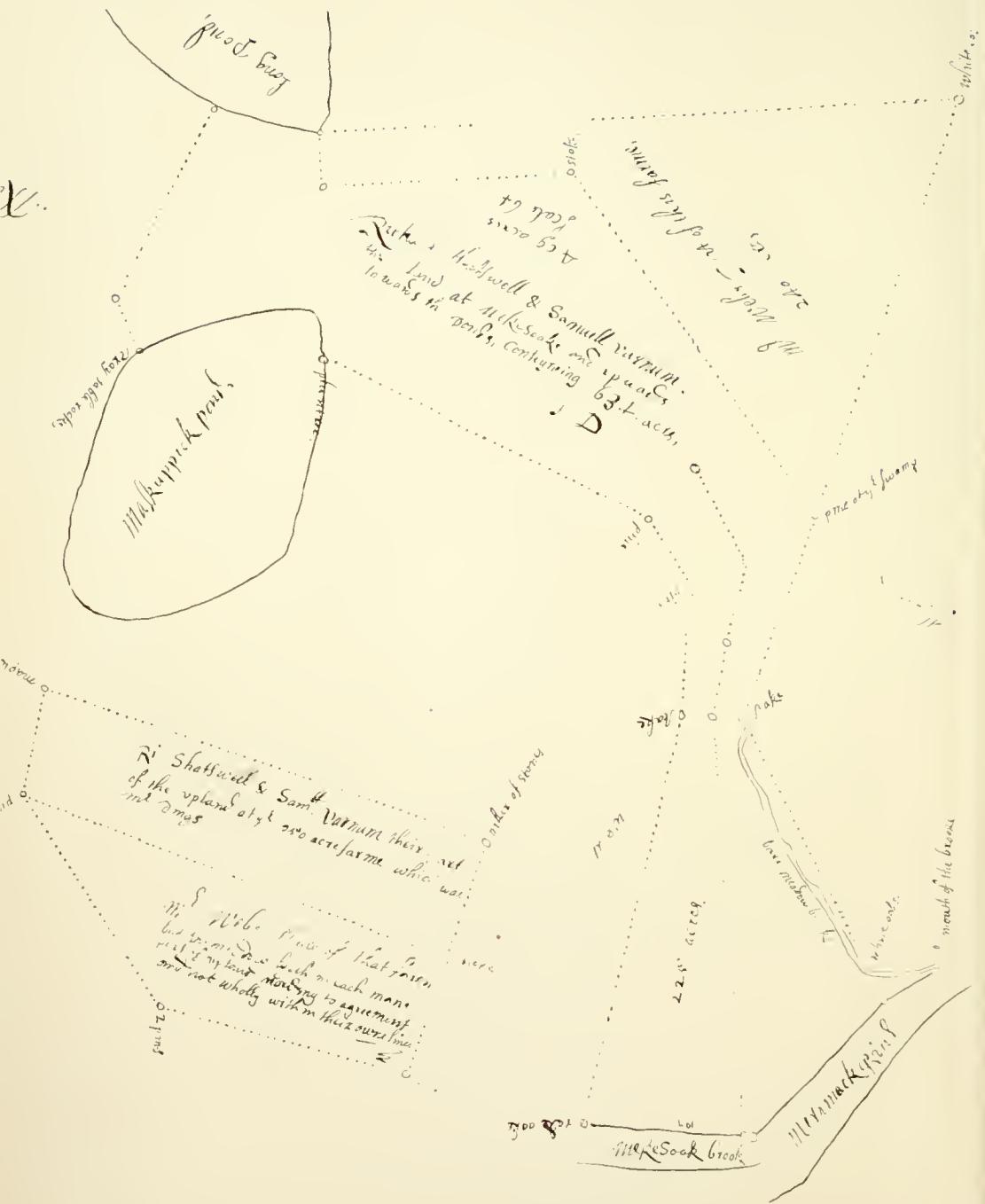


"The Old Manse, the home of Revd Nathaniel Rogers, pastor of the 1st Church, is on the site of the lot sold by Samuel Varnum, Sen., to Edward Dean, with a house, April 8, 1665. (Ipswich Deeds 2, 245)."

*Taken by the Permission of Rev. T. Frank Waters, author, from  
"Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony."*









THE SHATSWELL-VARNUM PURCHASE, 1664

*From original plat drawn by Jona. Danforth, Surveyor*

In possession of John M. Varnum

therefore unmarried. It is probable that his wife, Sarah Langton, was of Ipswich, from which town his two sons selected their wives, and related to the Langtons there. Mention is made in "Will of William Nevill, single man of Ipswich, proved 7th Month, 1643," who devises to Goodie, Mary, Joseph and Sarah Langton, and Roger Langton is appointed "my only executor and overseer." (Ipswich Deeds, I, leaf 5.)

In Inventory made 14th January, 1671, of estate of Roger Langton,\* Samuel Varnum's name appears as a party interested in the distribution. It is therefore confidently asserted that the aforesaid Sarah was the daughter of Roger and Goodie Langton, of Ipswich.

In 1664, he with his three surviving sons, George, Samuel, Thomas, and daughter Hannah, born in Ipswich, having lost a son Abraham the same year, removed to Chelmsford (now a part of Lowell), having, together with Richard Shatswell, also of Ipswich, bought a tract of land of John Evered als. Webb, being his estate of "Drawcutt upon the Merrimack." This was across the river from what is now known as Middlesex Village. The recorded deed in Middlesex Registry of Deeds, East Cambridge, has the caption "Articles of agreement made the 10th day of January in the year of our Lord according to the computation of England One thousand six hundred and sixty four, between John Evered, als. Webb, of Drawcutt upon Mirrimack, in the county of Norfolk,† in New England,

\* Hammett "Ipswich Families" says "Roger Langton took the freemans oath at Boston Mar. 4: 1634-5 when his name was spelled Lankton. He was a Commoner in 1641 and a subscriber (with his son Joseph) to Maj: Dennison's compensation in 1648. He possessed a home in Brook street in 1655."

† The County of Norfolk was established 10 May, 1643, and included territory north of the Merrimack, unknown Dracutt being then "ye wilderness," and certain New Hampshire towns, which needed protection from the Bay State Colony. The following named towns made up said County up to 1680: Salisbury, Haverhill (now in Essex Co.,) Mass.; Hampton, Exeter, Dover and Strawberry Bank (now Portsmouth), New Hampshire.

Gentlemen of the one party, and Richard Shatswell,\* of Ipswich, in the county of Essex, yeomn, and Samuel Varnum, of Ipswich aforesaid yeomn of the other part."—The consideration being "the sum of foure hundred pounds of Lawful money of and in New England, to be paid in man and forme following: Two third parts of the value of said sums of foure hundred pounds in Wheate, Manlt or Pease, and the other third part in beefe, porke or Indian corne in equal apportions, and in defect of porke to be paid in wheate or malte, and in defect of any or all of the said payment to be payd in merchantable fish current priece of New England." Said payments to be "1-3 in yeare 1665, 1-3 in 1666, and 1-3 in 1667," the conveyance being the "moyty of one halfe of the farme of Drawentt aforesaid." "The true intent and meaning thereof so that the moyty of one halfe of said farm is to containe by estimation eleven hundred acres at least."

According to Release recorded at East Cambridge, Samuel Varnum fully completed and satisfied his part of the agreement aforesaid by the 20th of May, 1668.

John Webb (1643) of Boston was admitted to the Church 9th of Feb., 1634, when he was called a single man. He probably went home soon after, and returned to America, 3d of June, 1635. He was a husbandman said to be from Marlborough, Wiltshire, England, and had an alias Evered probably to elude the tyrannical formalities.

He was a freeman 7th Dec., 1636, and became one of the early settlers of Chelmsford. He was ensign of a military company there and represented that town at the General Court in 1663-4-5. In the year 1665 he was expelled and disfranchised for a season, but was soon restored and had a grant of

\* Richard Shatswell was born in England, and came over with his father in 1633 to Ipswich, Mass. He later exchanged his Dracut properties for those of Edward Coburn in Ipswich, and thereafter does not appear as a resident on the Merrimack.—(GEO. A. GORDON.)

land. He was at Drawcutt in 1664, at which time he had the office of Captain. Rev. Sam'l Danforth says "17th, 8th month, '68, John Webb Alias Evered pursuing a whale was caught in ye rope twisted about his middle, and being drawn into the sea was drowned." He once owned the site of "the Old Corner Bookstore," in Boston. (Hist. A. & H. Artillery Co., 1896.)

That Samuel Varnum resided on the Chelmsford side of the river for sometime after his purchase of Drawcutt, on account of there being a garrison there for protection against the hostile Indians, appears from the Parker Varnum narrative. His children, John (1669), and Joseph (1672), were probably born there, as the two elder brothers were killed several years later (1676) while crossing the river to milk the cows in Drawentt. Moreover, Sammel Varnum appears in the ministers' rates 30th of Mar. 1671 (original Chelmsford Records, p. 107), as the enactment of the first General Court, 19th of Oct., 1630, set forth that "only those who belonged to some Church in the Colony should be made freemen and admitted to the freedom of the body-politic," and paid his tithes to that town.

Like all other settlers of New England of that day, his hand was against the red man. He enlisted in the famous campaign against King Phillip, and is credited in the accounts of the Colonial Treasurer, John Hull, 24th of April, 1676, for military services under Capt. Nicholas Manning, of Ipswich, in the Narragansett Campaign (King Phillip War) £2. It was in Mar., 1676, he lost his two eldest sons, George and Samuel, who were fired upon by the Indians, and undoubtedly he was ready to avenge their deaths in a war which was destined to break forever the Indian power throughout New England.

Sergt. Samuel Varnum's name appears with ten men in an old document owned by the N. H. Historical Society, probably presented by the late John Farmer, as of garrison in the West Reg't of Middlesex 1691-2. (N. E. Hist. and Gen. Register, Vol. 43, p. 370.)

No record can be found of the deaths of Samuel Varnum nor his wife. In the Middlesex Records of Deeds, 14th of Jan., 1698, there appears a conveyance "of all my visable estate lands & moveables" to his sons Thomas, John and Joseph, in which his wife joins. He was then 79 years of age. He was a subscriber to the petition to the General Court in 1702 for authority to lay out the town of Dracutt, at which date he was 83 years old.

Maj. Atkinson C. Varnum in his article on "The last resting place of the early settlers of Dracutt" states that Samuel Varnum and his wife, Sarah Langton, were "probably buried in a little cemetery about a mile and a half from Pawtucket Bridge, between Varnum Ave. and the Boulevard," but that from the scarcity of monumental stone in those days, their graves were not marked. Here also, was buried the Rev. Thomas Parker, the first minister of Dracutt. The cemetery is now (1906) neglected and abandoned, but some headstones are still standing.

The Deed of Conveyance of the 14th of Nov., 1698, was probably executed by Samuel Varnum in lieu of a Will. In it he conveys to his sons Thomas, John and Joseph, "all my visible Estate, Land and moveables."

2. SAMUEL VARNUM (*George<sup>1</sup>*), born in England about 1619, married Sarah, daughter of Roger and Goodie Langton, of Ipswich.

Seven children:

- i. } George and Samuel, b. in Ipswich. Killed by Indians 18th of  
} Mar., 1676, and buried near Merrimack River, opposite land of
- ii. } Thomas Varnum.
- iii. Abraham, b. 28th of Oct., 1659, in Ipswich; d. Apr. 3, 1660.
- iv. Hannah, b. 22d of May, 1661, in Ipswich. "Ezra, son of Edw.  
Colburn, and Hannah, daughter of Samuel Varnum, entered

into a covenant of marriage 22d, 9th month, 1681, before Samuel Adams Commr." He was born in Ipswich, 16 March, 1657-8. The Edw. Colburn mentioned, purchased the interest of Richard Shatswell in the Evered-Webb purchase. He came in the "Defence" from London, 6 July, 1635, aged 17, and settled in Ipswich and later in Drawcott. He died 17 Feb., 1700. (GEO. A. GORDON.)

Six children (Colburn), 1706:

Ezra, b. 1682, m. Lucy Nelson.

Samuel, b. 18 Sept., 1684; m. 1711, Mary Richardson.

Abraham, b. 7 Aug., 1687.

John, b. 15 Apr., 1690.

Hannah, b. 14 Aug., 1695.

Sarah, b. 10 Apr., 1699.

3. v. Thomas, b. 19th Nov., 1662, at Ipswich, m. Joanna Jewett.

4. vi. John, b. 15th Oct., 1669, at Chelmsford, m. Dorothy Prescott.

5. vii. Joseph, b. 15th Mar., 1672, at Chelmsford, m. (1) Ruth Jewett, (2) Mary Barron.

The early records of Middlesex Co. at East Cambridge contain many transfers of land to and between the Varnum Brothers, Thomas, John and Joseph.

As they held much land in common, mention is made of only such parcels as were conveyed to them in severalty.

30th Nov., 1689, in ye first year of their Majesties' reign, King William and Queen Mary, Thomas Richardson, of Drawcutt, conveys to Samuel Varnum 8 acres of land lying on ye North side of ye Merrimack River, part of meddow land which was sometime in ye possession of Capt. John Evered als. Webb. Consideration 8 £ sterling in a very good and substantial horse.

18th Mar. 1692, Elizabeth relict of Capt. Wm. Bond, of Watertown, conveys to Thomas, John and Joseph Varnum 6 acres of land at Dubble Brook. Consideration 30 £, lawful money of New England.

7th Nov., 1693, John Kidder, of Chelmsford, joyner, for and in consideration of six bnshels of good merchantable Indian

Corn, well and truly paid by John Varnum, of Chelmsford, conveys 500 acres of land on ye North side of ye Merrimack River at a place called by ye name of Pautuceott Falls.

17th July, 1696, Peter Proctor and Joseph Hides convey to Thomas and Joseph Varnum a tract of land situate lying and being on ye North side Merrimack alias Moremack River belonging to Wamaset Rock, sometime since purchased by Procter and Hides with others of ye Inhabitants of Chelmsford aforesaid, of ye natives of ye Country.

25th Nov., 1698, Thomas, John and Joseph, sons of Samuel Varnum, and Thomas, Daniel, Ezra and Joseph Coleburn, sons of Edward Coleburn, divide lands.

1st Nov., 1699, Thomas, John and Joseph Varnum divide "all that his mansion house, Tillage, Pasture and meddow ground purchased on the North side of the Merrimack River, our honoured father did convey to us." To Joseph was assigned the upper division; to Thomas the middle; and to John, the lower.

16th Sept., 1703, "In the second year of ye Reign of our Sovereign Lady Anne, Qneen of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith." Capt. John Bowers, of Chelmsford, conveys to Thomas, John and Joseph Varnum 28 shares of the fifty parts of the 500 acres of land commonly called ye Wamasett Purchase, bounded partly on Merrimack River on ye South and Beaver Brook on ye East.

5th May, 1704, Thomas, John and Joseph Varnum acquire the remaining shares of the Wamasett Purchase of Ensign William Fletcher and others, of Chelmsford.

15th Sept., 1710, Richard Mills conveys to Thomas, John and Joseph a tract of land in ye wilderness containing 200 acres on the North side of ye Merrimack River, about 7 or 8 miles from the River within ye town of Draweutt, bounded Westerly by Beaver Brook, Golden Brook running through said traet.

4th Mar., 1711, Joseph Varnum and Ruth, his beloved wife, conveys to John Varnum the third part of 340 acres, being undivided lands lying on ye North side of ye Merrimack River bounded by ye River on the South, and Capt. Sewell on ye West, and on ye North by Long Pond, and on ye Coleburne's farme on ye East and South-east so to ye River.

29th July, 1712, Joseph Varnum conveys to Thomas Varnum, husbandman, 50 acres, a tract of land lying on the North side of the Merrimack River, formerly called the Indian lands lying at Pawtucket upper falls.

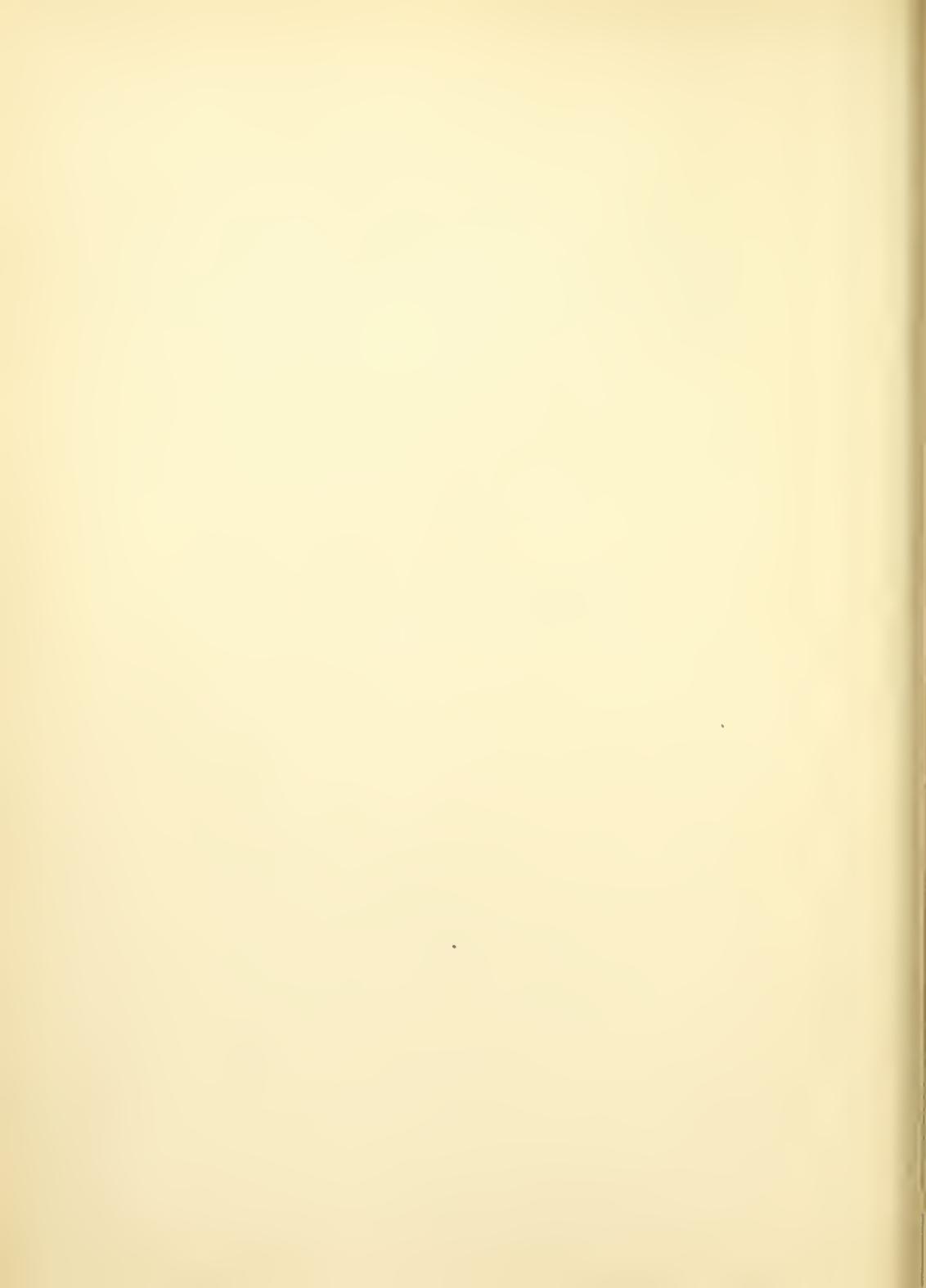
29th July, 1712, Agreement between Thomas, John and Joseph to divide lands purchased by our father, Samnel Varnum, Capt. Webb and Thomas Richardson, lying at place called the old meddow on ye South side of ye Brook, which is called the Old Meddow Brook, which Brook runs by the side of a great Spring in ye Meddow above named.

29th Oct., 1713, Thomas and John Varnum convey to Joseph a tract of land that lyeth on the North side of ye Merrimack River in a place called the 500 acres of Indian lands formerly bounded on Joseph Varnum's farm on the West, and 2/3 part of all ye lands between ye former farm mentioned on ye West, and Beaver Brook on the East and North excepting one hundred part of the 500 acres of Indian land that John Coleburn sold to Joseph Varnum, and bounded on ye South by Joseph Varnum's land, reserving to Thomas and John Varnum 2/3 parts in thirds of all the privileges for mill or mills on Beaver Brook and mill dams or mill ponds and log yards, board yards and mill houses, digging gravel as much as is needful, and teames to carry boards or loggs, whatsoever is needful in the management of the mill.

7th Oct., 1714, Joseph Varnum to Samuel Brown of Salem mtge. for 50 £. Satisfaction and release 2d Mar., 1720.

13th June, 1735, Henry Colburn, of Draeutt, conveys to John Varnum of same, 1/73 of the township granted to Jere Perley, John Britt and their associates by the Great and General Court 1733 to Capt. Lovewell and Capt. White, being lot 26 in the 300 township, which lies Northwesterly from Rutland. (Worcester Records.)

THOMAS VARNUM.



DRA C UTT, 1702

*Laid out by Jona. Danforth, Surveyor  
From original plan in possession of John M. Varnum*



Draught Township Land set & 26<sup>th</sup> 1702  
by Jonathan Simplicio Snarey  
Seal 256 pounds in weight  
Jan 7<sup>th</sup> 1711 A. B. a Copy of the original





## FAMILY OF THOMAS.

---

3. THOMAS<sup>3</sup> VARNUM (*Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), b. 19th Nov., 1662, d. 7th Sept., 1739, m. 10th Nov., 1697, Joanna, dau. of Nehemiah and Exercise (Pierce) Jewett, of Ipswich, who was first cousin to Ruth Jewett, who married his brother Joseph. She was b. 8th May, 1677, bapt. 3d June, 1677, d. 6th April, 1753.

### Eleven Children:

- i. Joanna,<sup>4</sup> b. 5 March, 1699, m. Jacob Colburn, of Dracutt.  
Five Children (Colburn):  
Daniel, b. 18 Mar., 1722.  
Joanna, b. 30 Sept., 1724.  
Mary, b. 7 Aug., 1726.  
Jacob, b. 10 Feb., 1729.  
Thomas, b. 2 June, 1731.
- ii. Merey, b. 17 April, 1702, d. 1785; m. (Int.) 9 Dec., 1722. Aaron Colburn, b. 27 May, 1700, d. 24 Feb., 1745.  
Four Children (Colburn):  
Hannah, b. 22 Mar., 1724; m. Wm. Foster, of Chelmsford.  
Deborah, b. 24 Sept., 1727; m. (1) Daniel Colburn, (2) Timo : Colburn, of Dracutt.  
Aaron, b. 6 Mar., 1731; m. Phebe Harris.  
Eleazer, b. 4 Mar., 1735; m. —— Hildreth. Eleazer's sons went to the Kennebec region of Maine, and settled in Canaan, now Skowhegan, where they have mightily prospered. Some have gone to Congress, and one was the War Gov. of Maine and died the wealthiest citizen of the State. (Geo. A. Gordon.)
4. iii. Samuel, b. 16 June, 1704; m. Mary Goodhue.  
iv. Mary, b. 28 June, 1706; m. Ebenezer Cummings, of Nottingham.  
v. Sarah, b. 9 Jan., 1709; m. Josiah Richardson, of Dracutt.

- vi. Mehitable, b. 29 Mar., 1711; m. Nathan Proctor, of Westford. She d. 20th Jan., 1760. No issue.
- vii. Jane, b. Apr., 1713.
- viii. Hannah, b. 31 Mar., 1715, d. in infancy.
- 5. ix. Thomas, b. 12 Mar., 1716/17; m. Sarah Colburn 4th.
- x. Hannah, b. 21 Sept., 1719; m. Ezekiel Hills, of Nottingham West.
- xi. Esther, b. 17 March, 1722.

THOMAS VARNUM was born in Ipswich shortly before his parents removed to Chelmsford. At the time of the slaughter of his two elder brothers, he was a lad of 14 years, and his sister Hannah, into whose lap sank one of the brothers when shot by the Indians, about 16.

He was married when 35 years old, going back to Ipswich for his wife Joanna, 15 years his junior. She was the daughter of Nehemiah Jewett, "a man very prominent in the affairs of Essex County, most of the Wills of the townsmen from 1675 up to the time of his death (1720), were drawn by him." It is probable that the 11 children of Thomas and Joanna were born at "Draweutt on Mirrimack," as shortly after his marriage, the town was laid out and its inhabitants had united in common defense. He became a husbandman, and settled on the land given by his father in his old age to his sons, who later made a friendly division among themselves. To Thomas, the eldest, was allotted the homestead and lands lying near to the banks of the river at the upper Pawtucket Falls, still (1906) in the hands of his descendants of the same name. The site of the original house was discovered many years ago. He was Town Clerk 1713 to 1715.\* Thomas died in 1739, aged

\* Dracutt April ye 11th in the year 1715. At a generall town Meeting it was granted to set our Meeting House, for the Town of Dracutt, on a pieee of land near the South side of a hill, called by ye name of Flag meddoe hill on Thomas Varnums land, bounded as followeth West by Joseph Varnums land, North by highway, Eastward by stakes and stones, on the South by stakes and stones, And it also is granted one barrell of Cyder and such a quantity of Rhum as the trustees shall think it needful for the raising of said Meeting House.

[Thomas Varnum T C.]

77 years, leaving a will dated 20th Jan., 1737/8. It is filed at the East Cambridge Registry of Deeds. It recites that his eldest son Samuel, who had married five years before its date, having by "a certain Deed of gift received about 200 acres of land and Medow of considerable value," "it is my Will that he shall have no more of my estate." He gives unto "my dearly beloved wife all my household goods of what name or denomination soever, Excepting one Bed with furniture for the same to my youngest son, Thomas, also one cow and one heifer out of my stock of cattle at her own choiee, and my white faced mare, and that she be allowed the full use and possession of one end of my now Dwelling house at her own election and choice, and in case my son Thomas should pull down my now Dwelling House, and build a new one, then to allow my beloved wife the full use and improvement of one good and comfortable foreroom, and provide her with firewood Winter and Summer, and that she have the use and improvement of one third part of my ploughland set off to her and one third part of my orchard."

To his grandchildren, "The surviving children of my eldest daughter, Joanna, 3£ to be divided equally, having given the mother of said children 30£ at marriage." To his daughter Mercy, wife of Aaron Colburn; Mary, wife of Ebenezer Cummings; Sarah, Mehitable, Jane, Hannah and Esther what, "with sums previously given, shall make up 33£ each."

He further wills "that my wife and two youngest daughters, Hannah and Esther, be maintained and supported out of my estate for the space of one full year from date hereof, and that all my flax be improved for the use and benefit of my present family according to the discretion of my wife."

To his son Thomas he bequeathes "all the rest of my estate, real and personal," and makes him his "sole executor."

The Will was duly probated Nov. ye 26th, 1739. Joanna,

his wife, certifying "I Do Not Desire that there shold be an Inventory Lodged on my accompt."

4. SAMUEL VARNUM<sup>4</sup> (*Thomas,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 16th June, 1704; died about 1748; married about 1734, to Mary, daughter of Ebenezer, and Mary Goodhue of Dracutt, who was born 8 Mar., 1716/17, and died about 1751. She was sister to Rachel Goodhue, the first wife of his cousin, Joseph Varnum, Jr.

Five Children:

- i. Nehemiah,<sup>5</sup> b. Dec., 1735.
- ii. Rachel, b. 11 Feb., 1736-7.
- iii. Mary, b. 28 Jan., 1738-9; m. (int.) 10 Jan., 1778, William Harris of Andover.
- iv. Olive, b. 7 Mar., 1740-1; m. Robert Jackson.
- v. Deborah, b. 2 Apr., 1744.

He was a yeoman, and settled on land deeded him by his father, Dec. 11, 1734, the year he was married to Mary Goodhue. He died at 44 years of age. Mary, his widow, was appointed, June 1748, administratrix of his estate. John Varnum, Ebenezer Colburn and Joseph Varnum appraisers. "Mary Varnum, widow, appointed 2d Oct., 1750, guardian of her son Nehemiah, a minor about 15 years of age, and son of Samuel Varnum, deceased." "Oliver Pierce, yeoman, appointed, 26 Nov., 1751, administrator of the Estate of Mrs. Mary Varnum, late of Chelmsford Deceased intestate."

The Inventory of the estate of Samuel Varnum, real and personal, show that he left "Homestead farme containing, by estimation, about 640 acres which was appraised at 900£." And personal property to the value of 403£ 17s, old tenor, making a total of 1303£ 17s. (Middlesex Co. Probate Records, East Cambridge.)

Nothing is known of his son Nehemiah, who is assumed to have died young, nor of his daughter's descendants.

5. THOMAS<sup>4</sup> (*Thomas, <sup>3</sup> Samuel, <sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), b. 12 Mar., 1716; d. 1 Aug., 1748; m. "Sept. ye 19, 1747, Thomas Varnum of Dracutt, entered the intention of marriage to Sarah Colburn ye 4th of Dracutt with me." (Draentt T. R.) Josiah Richardson, T. C.

Sarah was the daughter of Deacon Edward and Elizabeth (Richardson) Coburn of Dracutt. She was born 17 Sept., 1729.

#### One Child:

6. Thomas,<sup>5</sup> b. 5 May, 1748; m. Mary Atkinson.

Thomas Varnum was a farmer on the land devised him by his father. He died at 32 years of age, leaving a son of only four months, and a widow of only nineteen years of age.

He left no will, and his widow was appointed administratrix of his estate, 20 Dee., 1748, and subsequently guardian of her child.

The Inventory of his estate, made Dec. ye 5th, 1748, is interesting as showing the belongings of a Dracutt farmer of ye olden time.

#### Imprimis :

The Real Estate (viz.) ye Lands and Buildings in Draett all appraised in old tenor Bills of Credit,	£2860
---	-------

#### The Personal Estate as follows :

(viz) Quick Stock.

One Yoak Oxen at 75£

138- 0-0

Ditto        "     " 63£

86- 0-0

One Horse 20£, 3 Cows 66£

39- 0-0

    " Hefler 20£ and one 19£

12- 0-0

    " Calfe 8£ and one 4£

6-15-0

Three Sheep 45s. ea.

39- 0-0

4 Swine 9£ Ea. 2 Piggs 30s. Ea.

14- 0-0

A Cart Wheel and Irons 14£

17- 0-0

Sleds 40s., ploughs and plough irons 15£

4- 0-0

A Broad ax 4£

3- 0-0

Two narrow axes 2£ a hand saw 20s.

Half a spade 25s. a part of a crosscut saw 20s.	2- 5- 0
Two ox yoaks and Irons 3£	
A log chain 6£ 10s., a small chain 5£ 5s.	11-15- 0
A coller and hames 15s.	0-15- 0
A scyth and tuckling 20s., a shave 8s.	1- 8- 0
A Hoe 16s., a pease of square 6s., Betle Rings and Wedges 20s. 4d., 4 Harrow teeth 35s., a pitchfork 5s., Shad shovel 8s., Iron Hay Hook 6s., Hammer and Gimlet 1s., a bel 10s.	4-14- 0
A Saddle 10£ Saddle and Bridle 8£ 15s.	18-15- 0
A firelock 5£ A sword 4£, a cane £3	12- 0- 0
Wearring apparill	93- 8- 0
Household goods: one Bed and Bedding 51 and ditto 32£	83- 0- 0
14 yards of Bed Ticking at 14s. 6d.	10- 3- 0
Table Lining	10- 0- 0
A case of Draws 13s. 10	0-13-10
A ovel Table 5£ a square Table 30s.	6-10- 0
A Joint Stoye 30s. Two Chests 50s.	4- 0- 0
Six Chears 60s. A Spinning Wheel 60s.	6- 0- 0
Tubs 2s. Casks 7£ 12	7-14- 0
Pewter 5£ Brass 2£ 5	7- 5- 0
Iron ware 4£ 7 other Utensils 3	4- 3- 0
A Bible 30s., A Psalm Book 10s., A pocket Case 5s.	2- 5- 0
7 yards all wool cloth at 45s.	10-15- 0
The crops of Corn, Hay, Apples part geathered and part to geather, the whole appraised at	208- 0- 0
Cash in old tenor	64- 0- 0
A Debt Due from ye Rev'd. Thomas Parker	5- 0- 0
A Debt Due from John Coburn 20s., Jabis Coburn 20s., Robert Lindsay 10s., Caleb Parker 6s., Edw. Richardson 40s.	4-16- 0
About three years time of Negro boy named Jupiter as by Bargain appears	40- 0- 0
Making a total of	3863£ 3s.

6. THOMAS<sup>5</sup> (*Thomas<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), b. 5 May, 1743, d. 1 July, 1805. m. (int.) Mr. Thomas Varnum entered with me his intention of marriage with Mrs. Polly Atkinson of Pelham. Dracutt 11 Aug. 1781 (T. R., vol. 2, 433). She was born 1762: d. 2 Feb. 1813.

Nine Children:

- i. Mary,<sup>6</sup> b. 11 Nov., 1784; d. 8 Sept., 1859; m. 29 June, 1813, Lt. Peter, son of Hezekiah Coburn of Draeutt, who died in 1825.
  - Four Children (Coburn) :
  - Robert Parker, b. 6 Oct., 1814; d. 1820.
  - Jeremiah Varnum, b. 18 Dec., 1815; d. 1851.
  - Peter Sullivan, b. 22 Dec., 1817.
  - Fanny W., b. 27 July, 1823; m. Robert Mills.
- ii. Hannah, b. 29 Aug., 1786; d. 27 Jan., 1844; m. 3 Nov., 1807, Timothy, son of Jacob Colburn, b. 29 Aug., 1778, d. 14 June, 1819.
  - Four Children (Coburn) :
  - Czarina, b. 14 Aug., 1808; d. 11 Oct., 1842.
  - Timothy Varnum, b. 12 Apr. 1810; d. 19 Apr., 1860.
  - Abel, b. 24 Aug., 1816.
  - Bartlett, b. 6 July, 1819; d. 18 Aug., 1841.
- 7. iii. Thomas, b. 19 Apr., 1788; m. Mary Brown.
- iv. Sarah, b. 21 Oct., 1791; d. 30 Aug., 1853; m. (int.) 10 Mar., 1810, Charles Bodwell.
  - Three Children (Bodwell) :
  - Mary Varnum, b. 9 Aug., 1810.
  - Sarah Ann, b. 11 Jan., 1813.
  - Jane, b. 22 Feb., 1815.
- v. Samuel, b. 20 Mar., 1792; d. unm. 7 Feb., 1879.
- 8. vi. Jeremiah, b. 10 Mar., 1794, m. Mehitable Ford.
- vii. Ednah, b. 21 Feb., 1796; d. 1 Feb., 1832; m. 23 May, 1822, Theo: Hamblett of Draeut.
  - Five Children (Hamblett) :
  - Abbie.
  - Daniel Varnum.

Cyrus.

John P.

Oliver.

- viii. Daniel, b. 10 Feb., 1798; d. 4 May, 1881, unm. "He was the last of a family of nine children, and died in the old ancestral home where he and his brother Samuel, who died in 1879, aged 87, lived with their eldest brother Thomas, who died in 1879."
- ix. Oliver P., b. Mar., 1805; d. unm. 1 Nov., 1839. He was a deeply religious man, a fine performer on the violin, which he played at church, regarding it as consecrated to sacred music, and none other would he play thereon.

Thomas Varnum lived and died on the ancestral acres which descended from his grandfather Thomas; and lies buried beside his wife in the Woodbine Cemetery, on Varnum Avenue, near his home in Dracut, now Pawtucketville, Lowell. He was a farmer. He was one of the 81 Minnute Men, who, under Capt. Stephen Russell, "marched on ye 19th Apr., 1775 against the Ministerial Troops." In the same company was his cousin Joseph Bradley Varnum. He left no will. His wife was appointed administratrix 21 Sept., 1819. His estate was appraised by Parker Varnum, James Varnum and Thomas Hovey, 4th Oct., 1810, at \$5527.90.

7. THOMAS<sup>6</sup> VARNUM (*Thomas<sup>5</sup>, Thomas<sup>4</sup>, Thomas<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), b 29 Apr., 1788; d. 13 Apr., 1857; m. 6 June, 1822, Mary, dau. of Abel and Mary (Barrett) Brown of Concord, Mass., born 30 Apr., 1803; died 4 Oct., 1850.

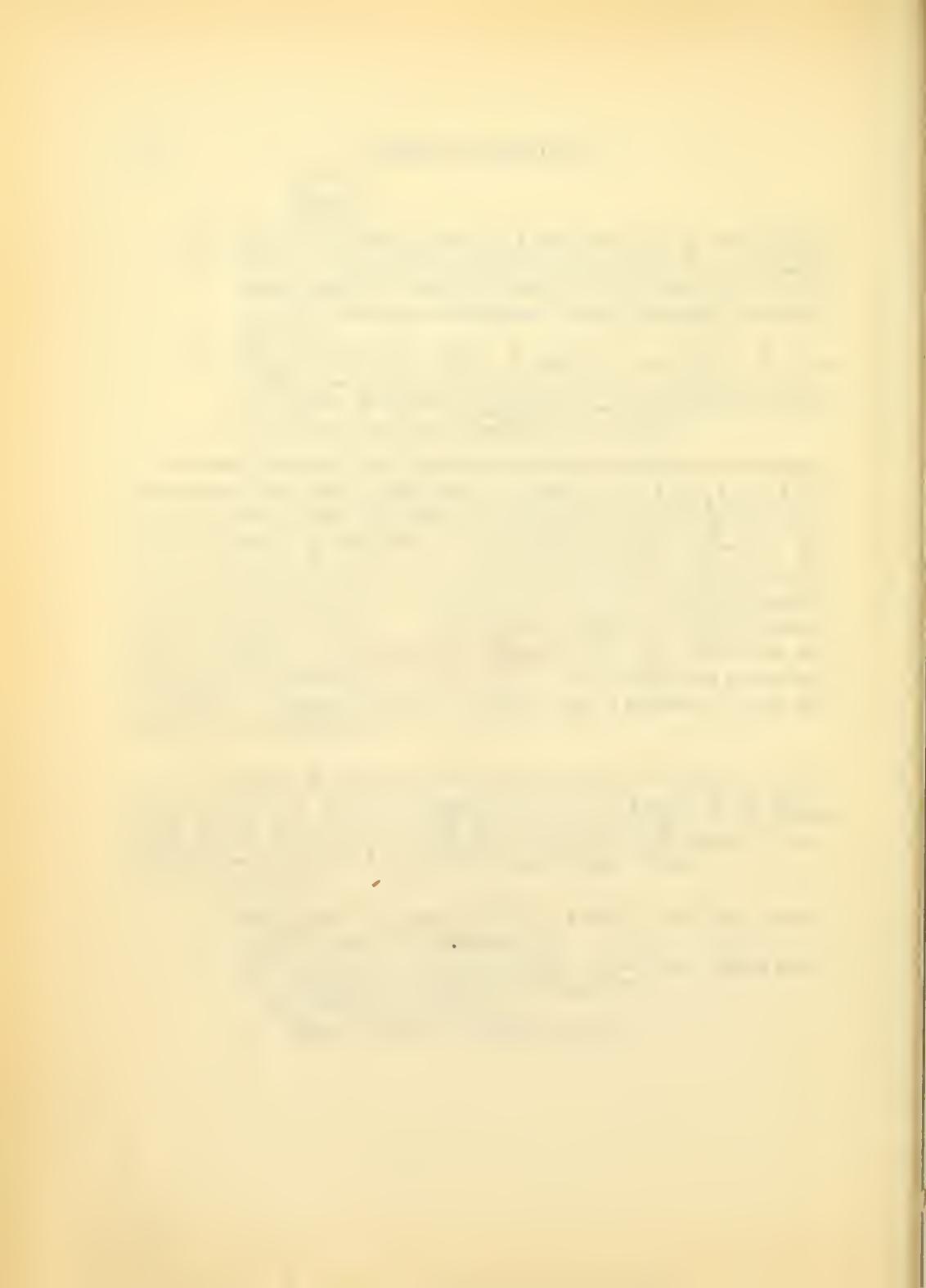
#### Five Children:

- i. Mary Ann,<sup>7</sup> b. 5 Apr., 1823; d. 3 Sept., 1862; m. 9 May, 1846, Horatio W. Marshall.
- ii. Sarah Atkinson, b. 11 Oct., 1826; m. 25 Dec., 1850, Jonathan Bowers, of Dracut, b. 2 Mar., 1825.

#### Four Children (Bowers):

Minnie Brown, b. 11 Feb., 1854.







13







DEACON JEREMIAH VARNUM<sup>6</sup>

- Kittie A., b. 2 Feb., 1857.  
 Jonathan, Jr., b. 23 Sept., 1859.  
 George S., b. 22 Feb., 1861.  
 iii. Thomas Barrett, b. 10 Mar., 1825; d. in infancy.  
 iv. James Brown, b. 17 Feb., 1832; d. in infancy.  
 9. v. Thomas, m. (1) Sarah M. Pierce, (2) Helen A. Allen.

Thomas Varnum, like those of his name, lived and died on the ancestral acres originally purchased by Samuel Varnum at the Pawtucket upper falls, Dracutt. With him lived and passed away his brothers Samuel, Daniel and Oliver. He was a farmer.

S. JEREMIAH<sup>6</sup> (*Thomas*,<sup>5</sup> *Thomas*,<sup>4</sup> *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), b. 10 Mar., 1794; d. 18 April, 1876; m. 5 Mar., 1822, Mehitable, dau. of Timothy Ford and Mehitable Rowell his wife, of Hudson, N. H., who died 15 Apr., 1890.

Children:

- i. Mehitable Maria,<sup>7</sup> b. 5 June, 1823; d. 5 Apr., 1844.
- ii. Prudence Ford, b. 20 Sept., 1824; d. 30 June, 1833.
- iii. Jane Coburn, b. 23 May, 1826; d. 15 Jan., 1882; m. Rufus B. Whitney.  
One child: Fred A., d. 3 Sept., 1866.
- 10. iv. Atkinson Clayton, b. 27 Jan., 1828; m. Mary Jane Abbott.
- v. Ednah Hamblett, b. 25 Feb., 1831; d. unm. 5 Nov., 1866.
- vi. Maria Prudence, b. 30 July, 1834; m. 23 Nov., 1856, John J. Coburn, b. 1823; d. 1885.
- vii. Czarina Coburn, b. 13 Dec., 1838; d. 27 July, 1859.

Jeremiah Varnum was a farmer in Dracutt. He was chosen Elder of the West Church of Dracutt (now the Pawtucket Congregational of Lowell), 15 Aug., 1831, and served as an Elder until Apr., 1859. He was a pronounced Anti-slavery advocate, and in 1834 contributed money with other Dracutt men in aid of the cause.

9. THOMAS<sup>7</sup> (*Thomas,<sup>6</sup> Thomas,<sup>5</sup> Thomas,<sup>4</sup> Thomas,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*). A farmer, and lives on the ancestral acres which have come down to him unbroken from 1695. m. (1) 24 Dee., 1857, Sarah M., dau. of Cyrus Pierce and Martha Beals, his wife, of Winchendon, Mass., b. 20 June, 1837; d. 14 Mar., 1891; no issue; m. (2) 18 Nov., 1896, Helen A., dau. of Alvin B. Allen and Sarah Elizabeth Varnum (8th in line descent from George Varnum), his wife, of Blue Hills, Maine.

Children:

- i. Mary Elizabeth,<sup>8</sup> b. 28 Apr., 1898.
- ii. Helen, b. 27 Mar., 1900.
- iii. Thomas, b. 10 July, 1901.

10. ATKINSON CLAYTON VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Jeremiah,<sup>6</sup> Thomas,<sup>5</sup> Thomas,<sup>4</sup> Thomas,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), b. 27 Jan., 1828; d. 4 May, 1897; m. 23 Aug., 1865, Mary Jane, dau. of Hugh A. and Minerva (Cragin) Abbott, of Greenfield, N. H.

Children:

- i. Mary Grace,<sup>8</sup> b. 18 Jan., 1875; d. 17 Jan., 1879.
- ii. Harold Abbott.
- iii. Arthur Clayton.

ATKINSON CLAYTON VARNUM was born in Dracut, Mass., January 27, 1828. His paternal ancestors were all born in Dracut. His father, Jeremiah Varnum, was an industrious, prosperous farmer, an active, useful citizen, and respected by all who knew him, especially for his strict moral and religious principles. He was a lineal descendant of Samuel Varnum who came from Drawentt, England, about 1635, and settled first in Ipswich, Mass., and subsequently removed to that part of Chelmsford afterwards called Middlesex Village, now a part of Lowell, finally bought land on the opposite side of the Merrimack River and settled upon it and called the place Drawentt from his native town across the sea, he being the first settler.

MAJ. ATKINSON C. VARNUM<sup>7</sup>







This land descended through the several generations, and the share that came to Samuel's great, great-grandson, Jeremiah Varnum, formed a part of the farm upon which he passed his life, and a part of which still remains in the family. Jeremiah Varnum was a son of Thomas, the third in descent of that name from Samuel. Thomas, the grandfather of Atkinson C., was a minute-man at the beginning of the Revolution, and marched from Dracut to Concord and Lexington in Capt. Stephen Russell's Company in 1775.

Jeremiah Varnum married Mehitable Ford, daughter of Timothy Ford of Hudson, N. H., March 5th, 1822, and seven children were the result of the marriage,—one son and six daughters.

Atkinson C., the only son, and the subject of this sketch, was in early life trained to the laborious but healthful duties pertaining to general farming and fruit raising. He was educated in the public schools of Dracut, Pembroke, N. H., Academy, Brown University, and Harvard Law School. While studying he taught winter schools (as many other students did) as a supplement to needed funds.

In 1856 he entered the law office of the Hons. Daniel S. and William A. Richardson in Lowell, where he remained until the autumn of 1859, when he was admitted to the Bar on motion of one of his masters, Hon. Daniel S. Richardson. He then formed a copartnership with Hon. John A. Knowles, then a practising lawyer in Lowell, and President of the Appleton Bank. This partnership was continued—with an interruption during a part of the war of the Rebellion—some ten years.

He was a member of the Legislature from the 25th District, which included the towns of Dracut, Chelmsford and Tyngsboro, in 1863 and 1864. During the Civil War he served the Government as one of its disbursing officers, being appointed by President Lincoln, Paymaster in the Army with the rank of

Major. He remained in this position several months after the close of the war, paying troops that were gradually relieved and discharged from outposts where tardy submission to Federal authority made military service a prolonged necessity.

Upon entering the army he was stationed at Washington for a considerable time, and had occasional opportunities of conversing upon official business and otherwise with President Lincoln, of whom he was a great admirer, not only on account of his profound wisdom and honesty as a statesman, but for his gentle and unassuming manner, and patience with those who came before him. Mr. Varnum often remarked that only upon one occasion did he ever see the President in a state of mind even suggesting severity. It was at a time when the war was at its height, and its cloud hung heaviest over the country. This particular day was one of the times when he allowed himself to be seen and consulted by everybody—first by officials, cabinet officers, members of Congress, and afterwards by citizens, whether of high or low degree; but those who wished to speak to him were supposed to have business of importance, and they were all obliged to fall into line and await their "turn." Mr. Varnum said, "My business, which pertained to military affairs, seemed to me important, and I thought I could not wait for a more favorable day, and so I fell into line with a great crowd of promiscuous people, and waited my turn. As I drew near and could hear the conversation between the President and the various individuals who approached him, I thought his demeanor was so different from what I had seen it before, that I felt sorry that I was in the line, and thought of retiring, fearing he might put the very pertinent enquiry—why I could not have taken some other occasion. But finding that those who preceded me were mostly office seekers, I concluded to run the gauntlet and go through, as I did not wish for an office or favor of any kind. Of course, in order ever to be rid of

such a surging crowd he had to make short work with most of them, though he patiently heard their requests. At last my turn came, and when I stated my business his countenance softened and changed; and in a kindly, friendly tone and manner he said: "If you will come right around in here with me and take a seat till I get rid of this audience, I will look carefully into the case with you," or words to that effect. I did so, and at his leisure he gave me all the time I could ask; and treated me as though I was fully his equal. The porter at the door assumed far more importance than did the great President of the United States."

Mr. Varnum, towards the close of the war, was assigned for duty to the Department of Virginia and North Carolina, with headquarters at Fortress Monroe. While there a little incident occurred which perhaps may be mentioned.

After the collapse of the Confederate Government, it will be remembered that Jefferson Davis, their great chieftain, tried to escape from the country. He was captured and brought back and imprisoned in Mr. Varnum's office—Casemate No. 2, Fort Monroe—and it was here that the shackles were placed upon his ankles. Of course Major Varnum moved out (as did the proverbial rabbit when the houseless skunk persisted in taking up his abode in his burrow); but he saw him every day as soon as he was permitted to take his daily walk, and loaned him books to read, after the Government allowed him the privilege of receiving reading matter. The shackles did not remain upon him long, however; for after the great strain upon the prisoner incident to blighted hopes, and his ignominious downfall, a reaction took place and he fell seriously ill, and his plain soldier's rations had to be exchanged for suitable diet, and more tender care was accorded to the notorious prisoner.

After his duties in the army ceased, Mr. Varnum resumed the practice of law in Lowell. His health was such, however,

for several years before his death, as to forbid his taking an active part in the trial of cases in the courts; but he was never idle for lack of clients or business. Naturally of a conciliatory disposition, his practice invariably was to exhaust all reasonable and honorable means of settlement and reconciliation before advising his clients to seek satisfaction in suits at law.

After his withdrawal as an advocate in the trial of causes in the courts, Major Varnum was largely engaged in the management of trust estates, guardianships, executor's and administrator's trusts and office practice generally, while he had his full share of the better class of business of a busy city and its surrounding towns, where he was well and favorably known.

Being a resident of Dracut—up to the time that Pawtucketville was annexed to Lowell—he was frequently elected to the offices of selectman, assessor and overseer of the poor, and as one of the selectmen he was one to negotiate a loan for Dracut's share of the expense of building the iron bridge at Pawtucket Falls; Lowell and Dracut building the bridge together, each paying one-half the expense.

In 1879, Mr. Varnum was elected President of the Middlesex North Agricultural Society, and served continuously in that office, with the exception of two years' intermission, up to the time of his death.

In 1879 he was appointed on the State Board of Agriculture, which position he occupied at his decease. He was one of the executive committee of the board and chairman of the "Committee on the State College and Education."

Major Varnum was a member of the City Council two years —1881 and 1882. But he never aspired to public office. The methods by which political honors are often obtained, were always distasteful to him, and he held himself aloof from political bargainings and intrigues. He was ever a staunch Republican, and seldom, if ever, omitted his duty at the polls.

He joined the Pawtucket Congregational Church, September 5, 1852—then called West Dracut Congregational Church—while that territory was yet Dracut, and he was always a valuable and interested member of that institution. He was somewhat conservative in his religious views, but tolerant and charitable towards those who held to a more liberal faith.

He wrote the history of Dracut for Lewis & Co.'s History of Middlesex County; the History of Pawtucket Society; a history of the Pawtucket meeting-house and a report of the Centennial celebration of the same, June 15, 1892, which has been published as a souvenir; and he also wrote numerous personal sketches of prominent Dracut men and others of the Revolution, many interesting reminiscences and valuable papers which have saved from oblivion important facts of a local character, one or more of which has appeared among the Old Residents' Historical Association's contributions, of which organization he was a member.

On the 23d day of August, 1865, while an officer in the Government service, he came North on leave of absence granted by the Secretary of War, and was united in marriage to Miss Mary J. Abbott, a teacher in Clinton, Mass., but a native of Greenfield, N. H., and daughter of H. A. Abbott of that place.

Maj. Varnum's position entitled him to a house and servants and proper conveniences for comfortable living; and when he returned to the army he had the company of his wife, who remained with him there until he retired from office.

They have had born to them three children—one daughter, Mary Grace, who died at an early age, and two sons, Harold Abbott and Arthur Clayton Varnum.

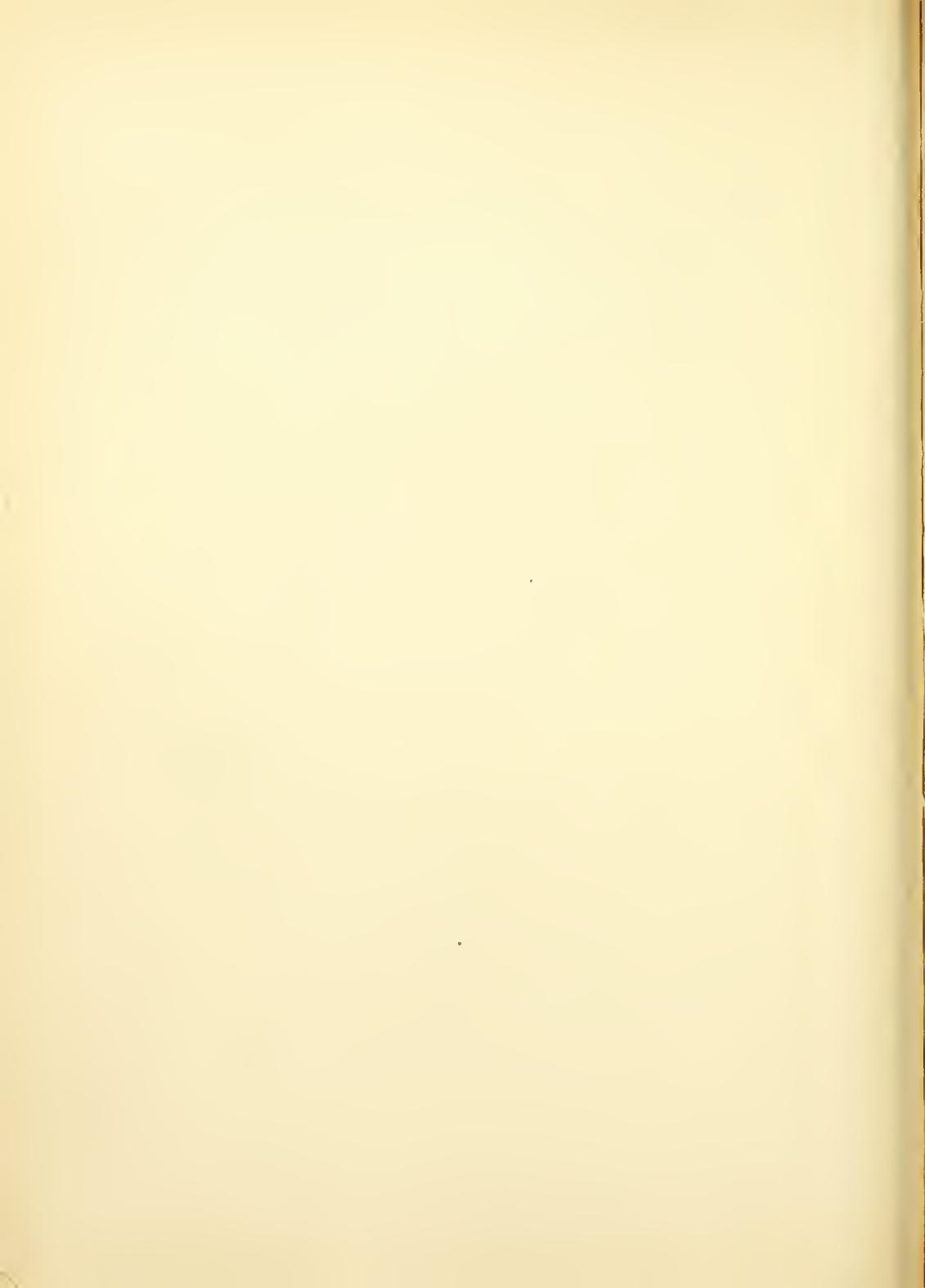
Mr. Varnum was careful and painstaking in the practice of his profession, as well as in his literary work, and he did well and thoroughly whatever his hands found to do. He was an

industrious, useful citizen, and earned the confidence and esteem of his neighbors and of the public at large in all the region in which he was born and for so long resided.

To escape the rigor of our New England climate, he spent the last two winters of his life in Florida; returning to his home he died there, May 4, 1897.

*Z. E. Stone.*

JOHN VARNUM.

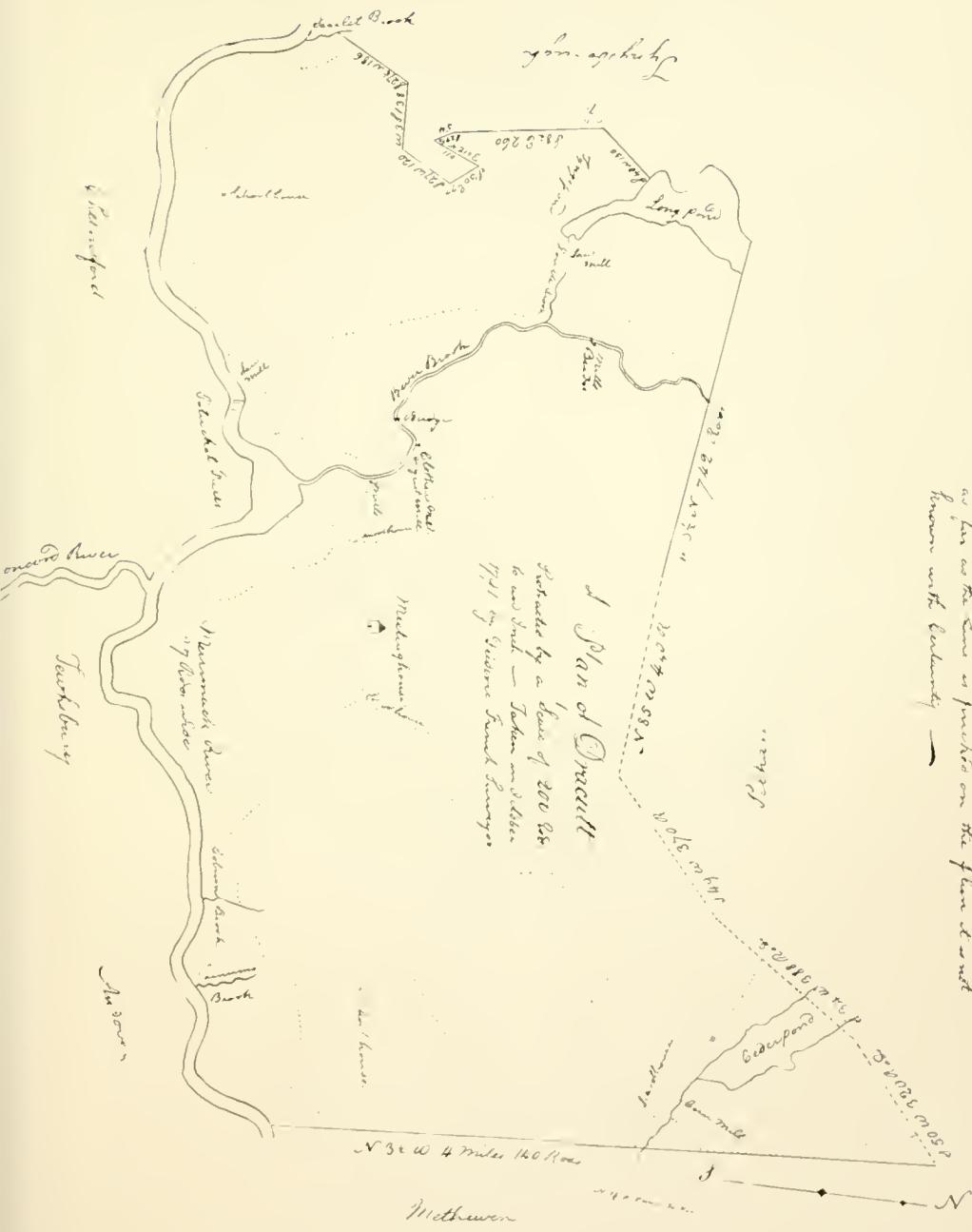


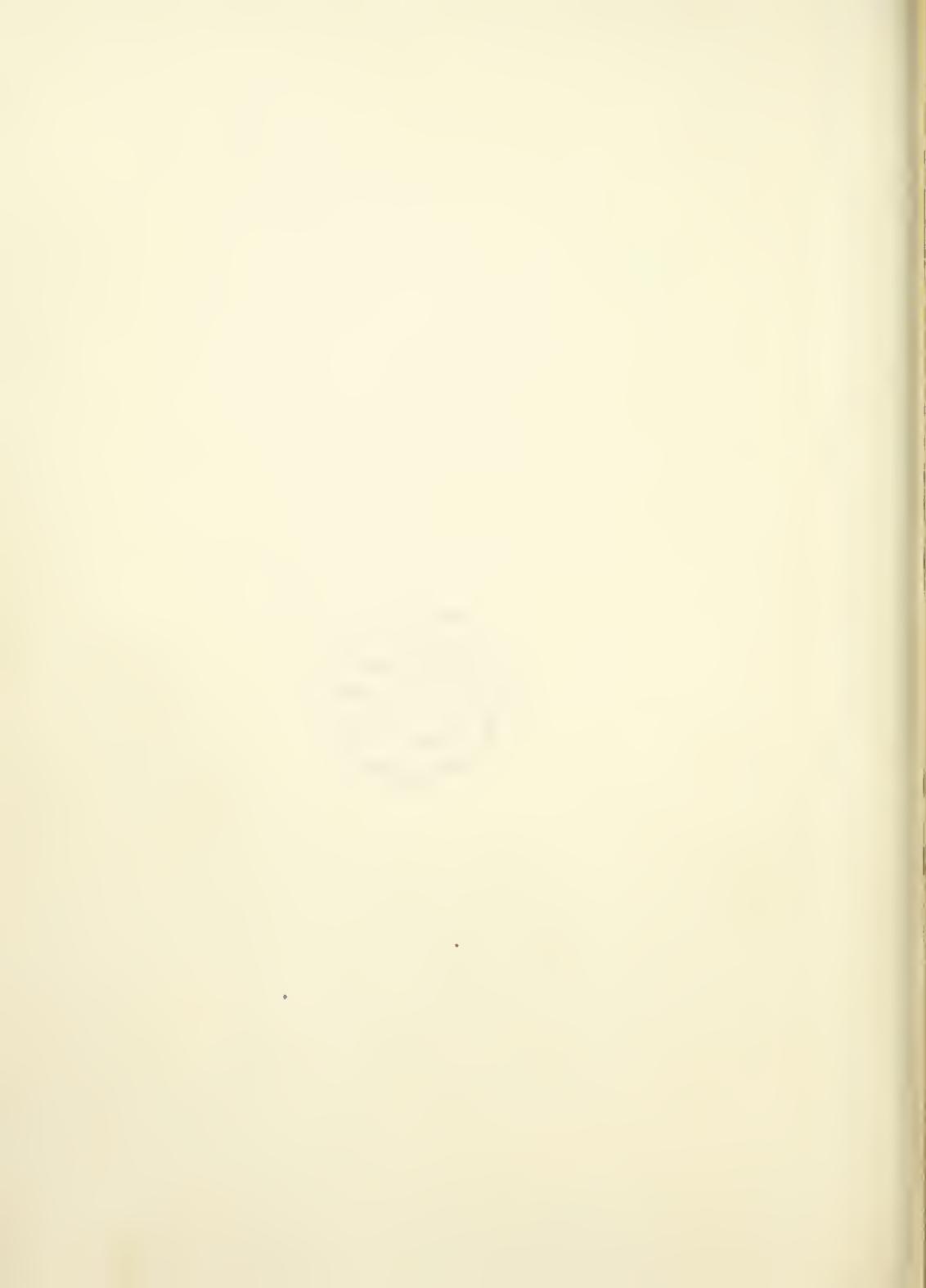
DRACUTT, 1791

*From an original plan made for the State of Massachusetts  
by Frederick French, Surveyor*



Nob Dracut on the North is bounded by the line between Massachusetts & New Hampshire and as far as the line is pitched on the floor it is set forever with certainty —





## FAMILY OF JOHN.

---

4. JOHN VARNUM<sup>3</sup> (*Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 25 Oct., 1669, died 23 Feb., 1715. "John Varnum of Draeutt and Dorothy Prescott of Groton, ware Lawfully mared in Nov., in the 13 day in the year 1700."

Thus in the script of John Varnum himself, the first town clerk, is the fact duly set forth.

Dorothy, born 16 Dec. 1681, was the daughter of Jonas and Mary (Loker) Prescott. The history of Groton, by Caleb Butler, tells an interesting story of the courtship of the parents of Dorothy. There can be found no date of her decease. She outlived her husband and in Oct., 1722, was represented by her agent in fixing the boundary line between her farm and that of Col. Joseph Varnum, her husband's brother.

### Five Children:

- i. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> b. 26 Dec., 1791; d. 6 May, 1815.
- ii. Sarah, b. 22 Apr., 1703; d. 26 Nov., 1742; m. (int.) 15 Aug., 1722, Robert Blood of Concord.
11. iii. John, b. 7 Feb. 1704-5; m. Phebe Parker.
- iv. Martha, b. 6 July, 1707; d. in infancy.
12. v. Jonas, b. 10 May, 1710; m. Lydia Boyden.
13. vi. Abraham, b. May 10, 1710; m. (1) Abigail Hardy; (2) Rachel \_\_\_\_\_; (3) Rebecca Shead.
14. vii. James, b. 4 Sept., 1712; m. Abigail Dearborn.
- viii. Dorothy, b. 21 Aug., 1715.

JOHN VARNUM was the first white child born in Merrimack

river valley. In the account of the Varnum family written by his grandson Parker Varnum (*q. v.*) it is stated that the Indian squaws assisted the mother at his birth, and that there was great rejoicing over the advent of the little "white pappoose." He was the first Town Clerk of Dracutt, and held that office from 1702 to 1713.

On 6 Feb., 1709, on petition of John Varnum, of Dracutt, in behalf of himself and others that the Reserved lands be at the disposal of the Freeholders and Proprietors of the Town to be allotted as they shall see fit and among such as shall come to settle. A committee was appointed to inquire into the Quantity of the Reserved lands and make report what number of Inhabitants it may be capable of entertaining to make a strong town.\*

The Records at East Cambridge contain the following quaint conveyance made to him when he was 24 years of age.

Chelmsford, 7 Nov., 1693. "Anno regni Regis Gulielmo et Maraie Anglo Quinto." "John Kidder Joyner in the County of Middlesex in their Majestie's Province and Dominion of New England and America. For and in Consideration of six bushells of good Merchantable Indian Corn, well and truly paid by John Varnum, of Chelmsford, husbandman, conveys a Tract of Land lyeing on ye North side of Merrimack River at a place called by ye name of Pautuccott falls, by estimation five hundred acres, purchased sometime since, by said Kidder and some others of ye Inhabitants of Chelmsford aforesaid."

John Varnum early had a mill at the foot of Pawtucket Falls, where grain was readily turned into meal and flour.†

He and his wife were buried in the little "Clay Pit" burial ground, called by Maj. A. C. Varnum the "Colonial," near the spot where stood the first church of Dracut, now between Varnum Avenue and the Boulevard. He died intestate. An inventory of his property, made the "8th day of March annoque

\* Court Records, Mass. State Archives, Vol. 9, Page 6.

† Gordon. "Early Grants of lands in the Middlesex, north of the Merrimack."

domi, 1714/15" was filed at East Cambridge by Thomas Varnum, Joseph Colburn and Samuel Colburn, "all Sufficient fre-holders in ye town of Draweutt." There is this endorsement on the papers: "John, eldest son, to pay his sister Sarah, Jonas and James to pay Abraham and Dorothy."

The inventory is here given in detail as showing the proprietorship in land by an early settler in New England, and the value placed thereon:

Imprimis. A house and barn with ye lands whereon they stand and homestead . . . . .	220£-0-0
Item 3 Parcels of Land, one of which Adjoineth partly on ye East Side of the sd Homestead, the 2d Lyeth in a Field formerly calld "Amos' field, betwixt the land of Thomas and Joseph Varnum, Bounded by the Merrimack river Southerly, the 3rd Lyeth near the Homestead being Parker's Land betwixt ye Lands of Thomas and Joseph Varnum. . . . .	52-0-0
A farme Lying at Petucket falls adjoining to ye River, as also the 3rd part of 36 acres of Land lying among sd Varnumis. . . . .	120-0-0
A parcel of meadow Land lying near the Homestead betwixt lands of sd Thomas and Joseph. . . . .	25-0-0.
The 3rd part of farme called "Collieott" farme purchased by said Thomas, John and Joseph.* . . . .	30-0-0
The 7th part of a Tract of Land granted by ye Gen'l. Court to 14 men at . . . . .	28-0-0
Also the Privilege of a stream by Beaver Brook for ye Building of Mills. . . . .	5-0-0
A piecee of Meadow with some upland lying at a place known by ye name of Flaggie Meadow, Southward of ye meadow of said Joseph Varnum, and on all other points by ye Lands and meadow of Thomas Varnum, . . . . .	30-0-0
A small piecee of undivided meadow lying at ye New meadow, bounded Southerly by Joseph Varnum, . . . . .	2-10-0
A piece of meadow lying at a place called Dubble Brook, . . . . .	5-0-0
<hr/>	
	517£ 10

\* This, according to the plat in possession of the Compiler, made by Jona: Danforth, 3 m., 1669, is described at 7 miles from the Merrimack, now in the State of N. H.

## Personal Estate :

## Imprimis :

The sword, staff, and apparil, of ye Deceased at His Books 1£ Firearms 3£	10- 6-0 4- 0-0
3 Bedds, Bedding, and Belongings thereto	12- 5-0
Table Lining and other Lining	2- 0-0
4 Tables and 1 dozen chairs	2- 2-0
4 Chests, Box and Looking glass—	2- 8-0
Brass Kittles & other brass	1-10-0
Pewter 1£ Rhum 3£ 7s	4- 7-0
One pair Oxen 10£ & 6 Cows & Hoffers and a Bull 23£ 15s	33-15-0
One Horse & 4 Mairs & 1 colt	16-10-0
8 Swine, a Cart & things thereunto Belonging	1-10-0
Also 2 Pair Horse Traises, Chain, Plow, Sithes, 2 hons, 31 Axes & Span-shackels, Pin Staple & ring, & one Syckle all at . . . . .	1-15-0
Credits or Debts owing to ye Dec'd	12-10-0
A Piece of Broadcloth & Cotton	7- 0-0
	<hr/>
	111£ 18s 0d

11. JOHN VARNUM<sup>4</sup> (*John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 7 Feb., 1704-5; died 26 July, 1785; married 15 July, 1730, Phebe, daughter of Joseph Parker of Andover, Mass., born 1713, died 31 Jan., 1785-6.

## Twelve children:

- i. Phebe, b. 30 July, 1731; d. 1804; m. (int.) 30 Jan., 1752, Benjamin, son of Samuel and Deborah (Kimball) Poor of Andover, Mass., b. 5 Mar., 1728, d. 1823 at Andover, Me.

Seven children (Poor) :

Phebe, b. 24 June, 1754; d. 13 Apr., 1819, at Andover, Me.

Patty, b. 23 Dec., 1758; d. 20 Sept., 1762.

Benjamin, b. 15 Sept., 1760; m. Joanna Batchelder.

Very little known of him. He settled at "Poor's Mills," Belfast, Me., and died there.

Patty, b. 24 Feb., 1765; d. 10 Dec., 1844, at Belfast, Me.; m. Nathan Swan.

Samuel, b. 30 May, 1767; d. 4 Feb., 1820, at Andover, Me.; m. Ann Moody Merrill.

James, b. 13 Dec., 1769; m. Naney Johnson. He settled at "Head of the Tide," Belfast, and probably died there. Very little is known of him.

Dorothy, b. 2 Feb., 1772; m. Jonathan Stevens.

Benjamin Poor's family lived in Andover, Mass., up to 1795, when they removed to East Andover, York Co., Me.

ii. Lydia, b. 12 Oct., 1732; m. 1 Aug., 1754, Jacob Tyler of Andover, Mass. She was his second wife.

iii. Susannah, b. 4 Sept., 1734; d. 27 Nov., 1811; m. (int.) 15 Feb., 1757, Ebenezer, son of Samuel and Deborah (Kimball) Poor of Andover, Mass., b. 16 Jan., 1732, d. 21 Aug., 1809, at Andover, Me.

Twelve children (Poor):

Ebenezer, b. 4 Jan., 1758; d. 31 July, 1762.

Betsey, b. 2 Dec., 1789; d. 14 Oct., 1797, at Andover, Me.; m. 1 Dec., 1785, Nathan Adams.

Susan, b. 1761; d. 1762.

Lydia, b. 4 April, 1762; d. Aug., 1762.

Susannah, b. 29 Nov., 1763; d. 1844 at Bangor, Me.; m. 23 Jan., 1794, Luke Wilder.

Ebenezer, b. 28 Oct., 1765; d. 15 Jan., 1837, at Andover, Me.; m. 8 Sept., 1794, (1) Betsey Stevens, (2) Lucy Littlefield Wasson.

Sylvanus, b. 7 Mar., 1768; d. 1 Nov., 1848, at Andover, Me.; m. 18 Feb., 1803, Mary Merrill.

William, b. 3 Aug., 1770; d. 4 July, 1776.

Dolly, b. 12 Oct., 1772; d. Sept. 29, 1820, at Hebron; m. 10 July, 1808, Christopher Allen.

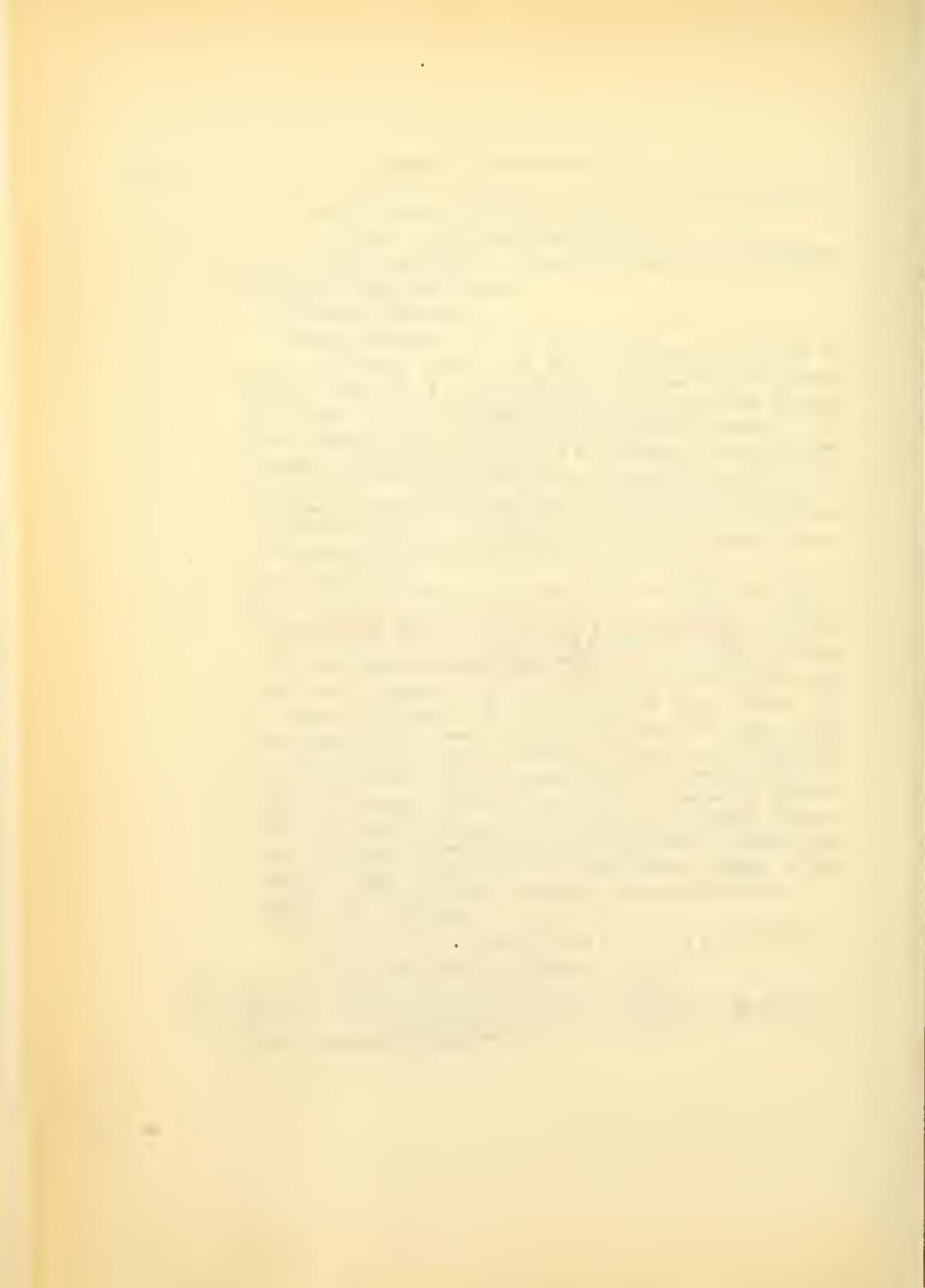
Persis, b. 22 Oct., 1774; d. 18 Jan., 1850, at Williamsburg, Me.; m. 11 Feb., 1805, Moses Greenleaf.

William, b. 5 Sept., 1776; d. at Bangor, Me., 17 Sept., 1829; m. 26 Mar., 1807, Sarah Farrington.

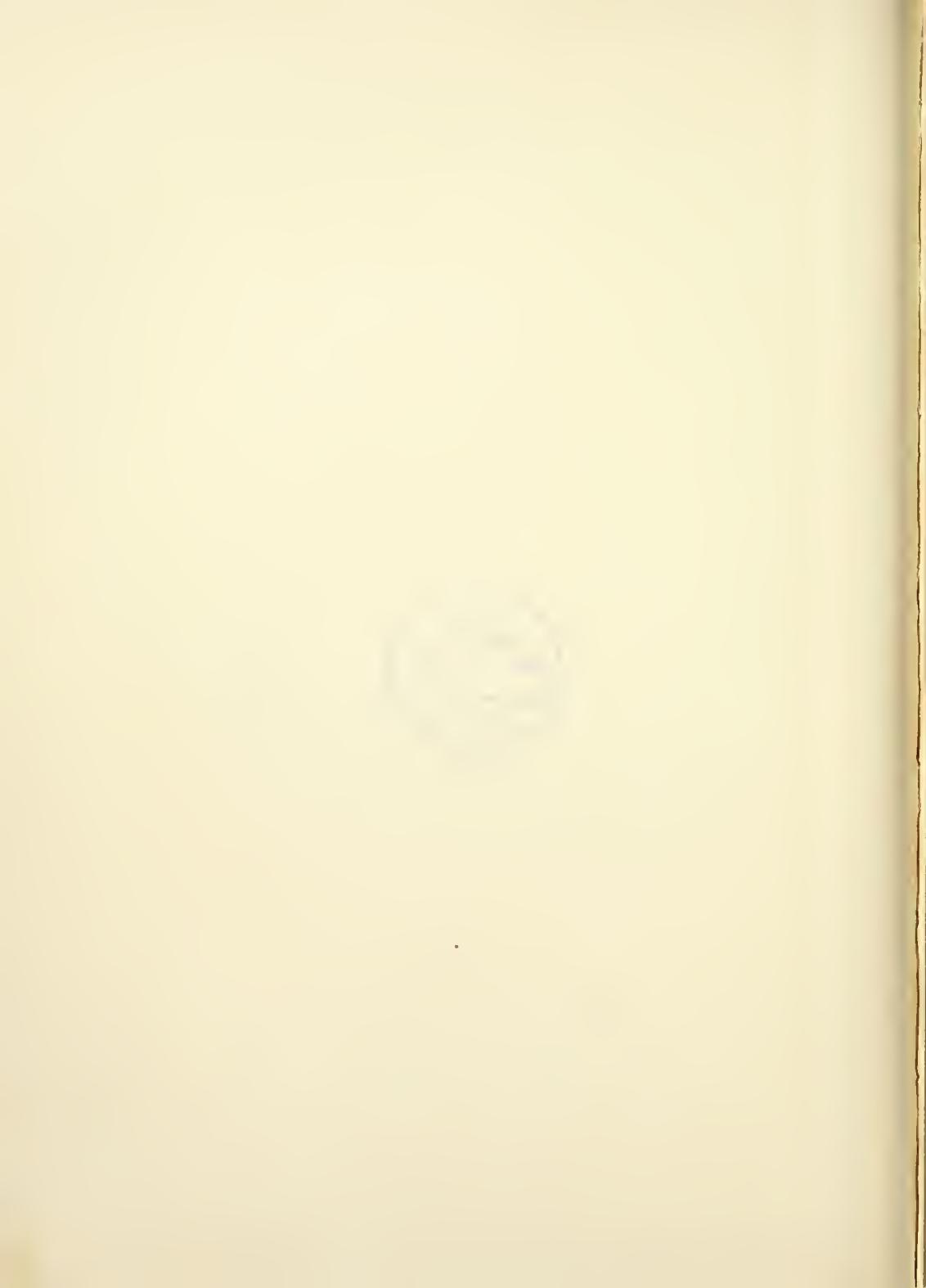
- Phebe Varnum, b. 19 Nov., 1779; d. at Bangor, Me.,  
24 Apr., 1847; m. Jacob McGaw.
- iv. Hannah, b. 27 June, 1736; m. (int.) 30 Apr., 1750, Benjamin Stevens of Andover, Mass.  
One child (Stevens):  
John Varnum.
- v. John, b. 10 Feb., 1736-7; d. 23 Oct., 1760, of a fever at Crown Point, N. Y. Lt. John Varnum was a soldier under the Crown. In the Massachusetts State Archives, Crown Point Muster Rolls (Vol. VIII, pp. 254-5), there is "A Muster Roll of the Company in his Majesty's service, under command of William Barrons, Esq., Capt., of Concord." In it appears the name of John Varnum, 2d Lieut., entered service 20 Feb., 1760. In this Co. there were 14 Draeutt men who served as privates, among them Jonathan Varnum, cousin to the said John.
- vi. Dolly, b. 8 Oct., 1739; d. 2 Jan., 1765; m. 26 Nov., 1763, Capt. Peter Coburn of Dracutt, b. 5 Nov., 1737, d. 3 May, 1813. Capt. Coburn commanded a Draeutt company of Minute-men at the battle of Bunker Hill. In this company there were four Varnums: James and Jonas, his wife's brothers; her cousin, Ebenezer, 2d Lieut., and her Uncle John. In this company, also, was their only son, Peter, Jr., who served as a drummer boy. Capt. Coburn, it is said, was the last man who spoke to Gen. Warren before he fell. In referring to this fact, he asserted: "If the General had run instead of deliberately and coolly walking away, after the command, 'Every man for himself,' he would not have been killed." The clothes worn by Capt. Coburn at said battle showed marks of the conflict, and were proudly displayed by his descendants.  
One child (Coburn):  
Peter, Jr., b. 18 Dec., 1764; d. 12 Feb., 1832; m. Elizabeth Poor of Andover.
- vii. Sarah, b. 19 Apr., 1741; d. 26 Nov., 1741.
- viii. Sarah, b. 23 July, 1742; d. 18 Dec., 1824; m. 4 May, 1766, John Nutting of Pepperell?

POWDER-HORN OF LIEUT. JOHN VARNUM

*Crown Point Expedition, 1759* 60







- ix. Doreas, b. 4 Mar., 1743-4; d. 2 Dec., 1832.
- 15. x. Parker, b. 17 Mar., 1745-6; m. (1) Dorcas Brown, (2) Abiah Osgood.
- 16. xi. James, b. 8 Sept., 1747; m. (1) Prudence Hildreth, (2) Eleanor Bridges, (3) Martha McAdams.
- xiii. Peter, b. 23 July, 1750; d. 1754.
- 17. xiii. Jonas, b. 11 July, 1752; m. Polly Parker.

11. JOHN VARNUM was born and lived in Dracutt on the farm of his father. He became the most prominent man of his day in North Eastern Massachusetts. Of his brothers, Jonas went to West Groton, now Pepperell, James went to Chester, N. H., while Abraham remained in Dracutt.

In 1725, when he was twenty-one years of age, he joined the company commanded by the celebrated Capt. John Lovewell, which went to Pigwackett, now Fryeburg, Me., on snow shoes to hunt for Indians. They surprised and killed a party consisting of nine Indians and a boy. These they scalped in order to get the bounty then offered by the Bay State Colony for such evidences of slaughter. For this prowess he, with the command, received the thanks of the General Court, and an award as the law provided.\* A very full account of this expedition is given in "Book of the Indians," Book III, chap. IX, and a list of the members which made up the command, among which is that of John Varnum aforesaid.

Bailey's Historical Sketches of Andover, p. 74, rather romantically alludes to John Varnum, the soldier, as follows: "the movement of military companies or of soldiers going to join companies to march against the Indian enemy was also a considerable feature of the travelling of the Colonial period, and there was no small stir and flutter in the domestic inns, where the young officers with cutlass and halberd and headpiece, musket

\* The News-Letter of Jan. 7, 1725, says: "The Lieutenant Gov & Council were pleased to give them (Capt. Lovewell's Co.) fifty pounds over & above the one hundred and fifty allowed by law."

According to present reckoning the pound was then worth about \$1.30.—[NASON.]

and pike, and the various paraphernalia of military outfit, arrived or tarried for entertainment, and told the tale of their own or their comrades' prowess. One such stopping at the inn of Joseph Parker was, tradition says, "sumptuously entertained," and a soldier John Varnum of Dracutt afterwards took to himself Phebe, the innkeeper's daughter, for a wife."

He served as Town Clerk of Dracutt for many years; from 1726 to 1729 and from 1735 to 1742, and the records of the town are admirably kept. In 1741 he headed a Committee on behalf of the town, which presented a protest against the decree of the King (George II.) ordering the running a new boundary line between New Hampshire and Massachusetts. This cut off a large portion of Dracutt, and threw into the former State much land belonging to him and his family. He labored earnestly and assiduously, in connection with Committees from the other towns affected, against the consummation of the unjust and arbitrary act of the King, and it was proposed to send an agent to England to lay their grievance before the King's Council; but the Colonial Governor resisted all importunities, and with his Council issued an order against interference.\* In 1767 the town complimented him by voting in meeting "to clear L't John Varnum and family from working on the highways and the town ways." He was a Justice of the Peace as early as 1767, and was commissioned Justice of the Peace and the Quorum 20th Mar., 1776, which office he held by reappointment up to his decease. He held appointment as a member of a "Commission to sell forfeited Estates" from 1782 to 1785. He was also a member of a Committee under "Act for taking up and restraining persons dangerous to the Commonwealth,"

\* Court Records State Archives, vol. 64, p. 91. Dracutt, as originally laid out, had the goodly proportions of a Township. It ran seven miles east down the Merrimack, and six miles north up to New Hampshire. Its first dismemberment was at some period after 1702, when an area opposite Tyng's Island was set off to Dunstable. On the 5th July, 1746, the land cut off by the new boundary line was incorporated into Pelham. Subsequent dismembers, on 28 February, 1851, 18 May, 1874, and 1 April, 1879, by annexations to Lowell, have left but a skeleton of a town.

passed 14 Feb., 1781, for Middlesex Co. In his diary quoted later on, will be found many instances, of his passing judgment on tories brought before him under this act. Before him as Justice came many cases for adjudication, and his rare good sense was a marked characteristic of his decisions, and prevented appeals to higher courts.

His diaries or journals covering the important and stirring years of 1777 to 1782, are full of entries showing his sentiments on the questions of that day, and they prove him to have been a man of very vigorous and advanced ideas. At a time when negro servitude in Massachusetts was held to be legal, it not having been abrogated by statute, he upheld against owners of slaves, the freedom of the black man, and his words of scorn and denunciation show his rare sense of justice and right, and mark him as a humanitarian in the broadest significance of the term.\*

Extracts from the journals referred to, are now for the first time published, and seem providentially to have been preserved to illustrate his life and character, and make his personality real to his descendants. They consist of three books in which was kept a record of daily events or domestic business and general affairs. They were found in an old window-settle, which required the services of a carpenter to open, in the house which was his abode. To this fact may possibly be attributed their preservation, and consequently the source at this late day of very much valuable and interesting information in this history.

\* Moore, "History of Slavery in Massachusetts," p. 180, says: "It is not amiss to remember, that in the first, last and only direct and formal attempt to abolish slavery in Massachusetts (June, 1777) the popular branch of the Legislature of that State laid the bill for that purpose on the table, with a direction that 'application be made to Congress on the subject thereof,' and adds, p. 163, its overthrow was accomplished by 'judicial construction without the aid of legislation.' Gov. John A. Andrew used to assert that slavery was not made illegal in Massachusetts by a statute, but by a judicial interpretation of the Bill of Rights."

1777.

*Revolutionary War.*

31 Jan'y. Parker returned from Boston about 9 at night. Brought this weeks newspaper which gave an account that since Christmas we have killed and taken more than 2000 British and Hessian Murderers. That we are driving and taking more or less of them every day. That Gen. Putnam had taken 96 wagon loads with Tory goods, That provisions was scanty with the Britains. That ye Hessians was Recalled by reason of a French Invasion of their Country. That more than one thousand of our unfortunate Captives in their hands had Languished and Died in the City of New York with hunger and hard usage since ye reduction of Fort Washington. That a war between Great Britain, France and Spain was supposed inevitable.

*Social.*

5 Feb'y. Hezekiah Colburn and wife, Jos. Varnum, Jr., and wife, Abiah Hildreth and wife, Polly Parker and Polly Gault, dined with us on a Bread Pudding, a Corned Leg of Pork, a Brisket &c., a Rost shoulder of Pork, a Line of Mutton &c., Rost Turkey, tarts and Cheese &c. Jacob Tyler, Jr., and his sister Lydia, and Mr. Henry Ingalls Jr. from Andover here on a visit in the afternoon. In the evening there came in a number of young folks on son Jonas' invitation, so as make the number 32. Had a pleasant evening. The said Company stayed and spent of a cold supper, stayed late.

*Enlistments.*

11 Feb. Capt. Russell Called his company together to Inlist men. Inlisted none and adjourned to Monday next.

10 Mar. Monday, Town meeting & Training to raise soldiers poor Success.

31 March. In the afternoon attending on a Town meeting appointed to raise men for the Army for three years. Voted to add to their bounty one hundred dollars, Each man to be paid by the town. Chose Committee to adjust past services In the wars. The Committee was Capt. Peter Coburn, Capt. Stephen Russell, Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum, Lt. Ephraim Coburn, Dea. Thos. Hovey, Mr. William Hildreth, and Mr. Jona: Coburn. Said committee are authorised by vote to give security on

sd towns behalf to each man that shall Inlist into sd service for three years 30£ lawful money, over & above what ye Bounty of ye State is. On which a number Immediately inlisted.

8 May. William Hildreth, Hinesman Richardson, Joshua Wood & Josiah Bosell went to Concord & Passed muster. Hildreth & Wood went to Cambridge. Richardson returned home. Asa Coburn set out for Cambridge the same day. Brought ye rear. Dracutt has turned out its full quota for the 3 years & for the 3 Months.

#### *Tory Trial.*

26 May. I went to Aaron Coburns to meet Chelmsford Committee, to receive a Tory they had in Tow, and to hear their complaint vs. him. Their complaint was that he was a vagrant, Lying, Idle, Deceitful, Dangerous person who had called himself by different names, made false pretenses and evasive answers and had sworn and curst profainly. Rec'd. and drew their complaint made out process, Examined the man, found him guilty. He begged leave to inlist, and that he might receive the Bounty and pay the fines and Costs. His request was granted, and he inlisted.

#### *British Prisoner.*

23 June. The body of the Highlander that was Drownd Last fall, was found lodged on the Fishing point. The Selectmen notified thereof, on which they sent word to the Highlanders, his brethren in ye Captives at Chelmsford. They attended his funeral & buried him themselves. Behaved decently. Asked liberty to bury him in ye Graveyard, which was granted. They invited Mr Davis to pray at the funeral. Offered to pay him for his services.

#### *May Training.*

29 May. In the forenoon attended on training &c. No Rhum flip nor Cyder to be had at ye Tavern, the first training of that kind ever heard of in Dracutt.

#### *War News.*

We have great and surprising news from part of Washington's Army. If true he is an Infidel or Tory that hath not a Thankful heart.

*War Scare.*

3 Aug. Sunday had news of ye alarm and surprise at Imagining the British fleet appeared at Boston. The surprise was so great that they sent into ye Country as far as Westford for teams to remove stores &c. The teams sent for on Saturday returned Sunday.

*Battle of Bennington.*

24 Aug. Had tidings of a Battle near Bennington which was gretly in our favor. Killed & wounded about 1000 of ye Enemy and took 1000 stand of Arms & Much baggage &c. Lost about 100, and as many wounded.

*Draft.*

25 Sept. Orders eame to town for 1-2 of ye able bodied offieers & soldiers Immediately to march for Tyeconderoga.

29 Sept. Capt Jos Bradley Varnum was drawn out with 40 men to march to ye Westward.

*A Personal Supplication.*

9 Oct. No news sinice Thursday last from our Army. A day of Great expectation, and we trust universal supplication to ye Devine Being for devine proteetion and the Salvation of this Continent, with fear and trembling for the token of Devine displeasure while ye horrors and carnage of a Civil war is raging In the midst of us. But thankfully considering that the smiles and protection of Heaven hath hitherto invited us by faith and reformation, to supplicate that Mercy may prevail against judgment so that we may be a Reformed and spared people and Sing of God's Salvation.

*War.*

19 Oct. We had great and good News sinice Thursdays paper viz that Washingtons Army has drove Howes & had environed Burgoynes.

*Burgoyne's Defeat.*

25 Oct. All rejoicing at ye great and glorious news of Burgoynes defeat and his Army resigning to our Army. Praising ye God of Armys for ye Conquest.

*Tories.*

21 Nov. Drawing warrents vs Tories: one Mr. Whitney of Townsend, and Mr. Timothy Prescott of Westford, here after warrants; gave one vs Isaac and William Walliee, Reuben Tucke, Joshua Smith and Seth Johnson, all of Townsend; One against Ira Chase, of Groton, on complaint of Jonathan Severance of sd Groton, and one against Mr. Willard Hall, the former minister of Westford, on the complaint of ye town by a vote agreeable to the Tory act returned by the Town Clerk.

*Victory.*

Had news that Genl Washington had Ingagement with How—had killed & taken his Army & had taken him prisoner.

*Tory Trial.*

26 Nov. In the afternoon set up a special Court of Sessions for the tryal of Torys. Impannelled a Jury, tried Jos Chasc. The Jury brought him in guilty, committed him to ye Board of War.

27 Nov. Opened ye Court of Sessions, heard Sunday pleas to quash the proceedings of said Court on the tryal of Wallace and Holden which was all overruled, and when we came to impanel the jury, found there was no jury drawn for that tryal. The constable had not shown the Clerk of ye session that there was any such tryal. We therefore had no jury and dismissed the Respondents, and adjourned the Court without day.

*Thanksgiving for Victory.*

18 Dee. A general Thanksgiving throughout ye Continent by order of Congress for the success in taking Burgoynes Army, and of supplication for further success and protection.

1778

*Social.*

15 Jan. About 2 of ye Clock the company viz: Hezekiah Coburn and wife, Parker Varnum and wife, Roger Ray and Hannah Brown, Henry Coburn and Samuel Richardson, Samuel Coburn and Rhoda, Jonas Varnum and Polly Parker, John Parkhurst, Isaac Parker, Abijah Hill and Bradstreet Coburn set off in three double slays to go to Billerica, went as far as Capt. Miners. Took a drink of Flip and toddy and returned through

the town. Got back here about Sun setting. The Company set off for Joseph Varnum's to sup there with fife and fiddle and returned home at about 2 A. M.

*Dracutt Soldiers.*

11 Feb. This day there was a town meeting to see what Draeut will do towards returning the Continental Soldiers that enlisted for Draeut for 3 years, the times being Extravagant & the cloathing difficult to procure & Extravagantly dear. Granted 600 dollars to provide each man, a pare of shirts, a pare of shoes & a pare of stockings.

*Burgoyne.*

11 Feb. There is a suspicion of Burgoynes Infidelity, so that neither he nor his Army are to be suffered to Imbark till that be cleared up.

*Dracutt Census.*

Found in ye Day book of ye 28 Jany last, that the return of the male inhabitants of the Town of Dracutt there was 225, 3 of which were of ye Boston Donationers, one of Charlestown one Idiot, one distraught man that had been so for a number of years, one who had lost the use of his limbs, & although incapable of helping himself for sundry years past & without hopes of recovery & 4 Negroes.

*Rebels.*

Find in ye Papers that Howes orders are not to call the Americans Rebbels in the future.

*Dracutt Soldiers.*

16 Feb. Capt Russell called his Company together to Inlist 5 men for the service of ye State for 3 months, for a guard at Boston. Jabish Coburn, Nehemiah Flint, Amos Bradley Jr, Ephm Wright & Benj: Bowers drafted to go. Nehemiah Flint hired Wm Abbott to do his turn. Gave him 30 \$.

24 March. In ye afternoon, there was a training to raise 12 men to go on the Guards for 3 months.

*Sunday Family Incident.*

12 April. Fair warm & pleasant. Self & Wife, Parker & wife, Jonas, Isaac, Persis Hill & Sal Farmer, all went to meeting, without our great

Coats for ye 1st time this year. My wife & Dorkis rode in ye shay with Jonas horse. The horse took fright Took my wife & Dorkis out of ye shay at Cobler farme. Carried my wife on a pillion from thence. Dorkis walked on foot. The horse brought the shay home well.

*Hired Man.*

13 April. Settled a bargain with Wm Young for 6 months labor, beginning this day, for which I am to give him a wool home-made coat, waistcoat & breeches, two shirts, 2 pare of Trowsers, 2 pare of stockings, a pare of shoes, a hat & 10\$ for which sd Wm promised to labor for me for 6 mos from this day.

I gave Parker a 30\$ bill to buy cloth for Wm. Young. He went to Mr. Poores, Bought 8 yds at  $4\frac{1}{4}$  \$ per yd of all wool cloth.

*Peace.*

28 April. Informed that ye Commissioners was come from Briton to treat with Congress for Peace, as they pretend.

*Victory at Monmouth Court House.*

28 June. The famous battle near Monmouth Court House In Ye Jerseys, was fought on the sd 28 June, between the American army under the Command of his Exeelleney Gen'l. Washington, and the British Army under the Command of ye base Sir Henry Clinton (the most savage and Inhuman General), and after an obstinate engagement of about 4 hours, the American Army prevailed, the British gave way and left their Dead in the field. It was a complete Vietory in ye American favor, and Night coming on, they could not pursue any farther, and Lay on their Arms all night to be ready for an Ingagement the next morning. But ye British fled in ye Night privately and the Americans did not know they were going. Many were slain on both sides, and many died in the Battle with ye fatigue and Intense heat.

*Great Storm.*

26 Dee. Very heavy cold storm. All the sea shut up, No business done. One of our Privateers has driven ashore near Plymouth, 100 hands aboard, 80 thereof died with cold. A ship came in near Newbury. Ran aground. The hands all perished. A man with a team of 4 oxen and a horse passing Boston neck, plunged into a snowdrift, and were found dead

on Sunday morning one pare standing on their feet. As many ships east away on these Coasts and as many people perished with the cold as ever hath been known in any one storm since the memory of men. The present week is supposed to be the coldest that is known for more than half a Century.

1779.

*Town Meeting.*

Monday 1 Mar. Annual meeting. Chose Capt Russell, Jona : Coburn Jos Varnum Jr Selectmen, Assessors & Overseers of the Poor. Sd Jos Varnum Town Treasurer. Kendal Parker Jr, & John Coburn Constables. Maj Samuel Varnum, Jona : Varnum, Jona : Coburn, Jesse Adams, & Timo : Barker Jr Surveyors of ways. Ebenezer Coburn Surveyor of weights & Measures Jos Varnum Jr, & Abram Coburn Surveyors of lumber. Capt Hale, Isaac Bradley, Peter Hazeltine, Wm Elliott, & Francis Sawyer, fishwardens to take care of ye Alewives. Voted that should be no Alewives taken in Beaver Brook, or ye Brook called Dubble Brook, or in Dennisons Brook, only on Mondays Tuesdays and Wednesdays & on these days not to take any in sd Beaver Brook within 30 feet of the sluice ways, for sd fish to go thro the same, and not to take any in Dubble Brook and the Town-way that leads from Ezra Coburns to Dr Abbotts & Beaver Brook, and that there shall be none taken in sd Dennison Brook between the Town-way easterly of ye old mill calld Wilsons Mill & the upper side of said mill.

*Slavery.*

4 March. One Stephen Hartwell here to advise relating to a Negro named Jeffery Hartwell. Spent considerable time with him, at his request relating to said Negros freedom. He would have given me a fee. I refused to take one (in a Neagro cause).

*Social.*

Parker had a great entertainment. Mr Brown, & his wife Mrs Rhoda, Elijah Fletcher & wife, Michael Hildreth & wife, Phillip Parker & wife, Bradley Varnum & Wife, Capt Peter Coburn & wife, Doctor Little & wife, Matthew Parker & wife, Jonas Varnum & Polly Parker, Isaac Parker & Abijah Hill and myself & wife, all dined & supped here. Jonas & Polly went to a Danee the same evening at Abijah Fox's. Henry Co-

burn, Thomas Varnum, Bradstreet Coburn, & a large number of young people went to sd Fox's to the Dance there that evening.

*Salmon.*

7 May. Isaac Parker set out in the evening with Parkers horse & my horsecart, with about 150 lbs of salmon for Boston one of them being a Falls Salmon: the others were from the Salmon Eddy.

8 May. Isaac Parker sold his salmon at 8s per lb in Boston. His load came to about 200\$. He returned about 6 in the evg. Brought me 3 qts of best West India Rhum at \$5 and  $\frac{1}{2}$  per qt.

31 May. Kept no Journal regularly by reason of being overcrowded with Business.

4 Dec. Drew Bonds of Surety for parties who paid me what they called as good as 3 hard Dollars 20 to 1.

10 Dec. Thos Varnum had a Dance at his house in the Evg as the same fell by lot there.

1780.

*Cold.*

8 Jan. The severest season from the 20 Nov last till this time, that hath been known for seventy years past.

10 Jan. Town Meeting. A few people came on Snow shoes.

12 Jan. Thos Varnum & our family again broke the way to Capt Hales. Went with shovels, oxen & horses, through fields & pastures.

13 Jan. Extreme blue day. Snow buried. Paths very much filled up we broke yesterday.

28 Jan. The coldest day that has been this winter or perhaps this Century. Parker returned abt evg from Boston. Complained bitterly of ye cold. Ye snow 4 feet deep at York. All obliged to haul their wood 2 miles by hand.

30 Jan. No travelling by horses.

31 Jan. Extremely cold—the coldest day that hath been this winter, & growing colder.

*Trade.*

14 Feb. Isaac Parker set out in ye morning abt 6, with a load of 14 bushels of meal for Newburyport. We sold to Abijah Hill 8 barrills of Cyder, which he is to transport to Boston, and carefully cause the same to

be drawn & sold by ye mug & we to have ye  $\frac{1}{2}$  of what it will fetch there, he to keep a good a/c thereof, & pay us the proportion & we to have the barrills returned at Boston. We gave him 2 bbls of Cyder here in our Cellar with the bbls free to pay the transport of ye eight. We delivered the sd 8 bbls of Cyder in Chelmsford at the foot of Petuckit Falls, & sd Hill hired Bradley Varnum to carry ye same to Boston for which he is promised 220\$.

*Town Meeting.*

6 March. Annual Town Meeting. Chose Dea Bradley moderator. Mr Wm Hildreth town Clerk. Jos Varnum Jr town Treasurer. Chose Capt Russell, Capt Jos Bradley Varnum, Dea Hovey Selectmen. They all refused. Then chose Sam'l Coburn, Bradley & Jos Varnum Jr Selectmen. They also utterly refused to serve. Then Chose Messrs Isaac Bradley, Thos Taylor, James Harvey Constables. Thos Taylor hired Obediah Richardson to serve as Constable in sd Taylors stead. The sd Town accepted him. Divided the Town into 3 Districts by the name of ye upper, the middle and the lower District. The upper extends as far East as the gret Road that leads from Bradleys ferry northward to Edward Coburns. The middle extend from sd Road Easterly to a Town way Easterly of George Burns Dwellinghouse, from thence running Southerly to Maj Sam'l Varnums, including sd Burns & sd Varnums. The Easterly or lower District to extend from ye last mentioned way to ye Easterly line of sd Town. Swore sd Constables and the day being far spent, by vote adjourned to Thursday next, at 9 in the morning to meet at the Meeting House in sd Dracutt.

*Town Meeting.*

9 March. Parker & myself attended on the adjournment of the sd annual Town Meeting. The meeting was full & being opened the people chose Parker Varnum 1st Selectman, Capt Jos Bradley Varnum 2d & Jos Varnum Jr 3rd. The vote being unanimous they all accepted.

*Slavery.*

12 Apr. A Negro wench named Happis came here from Colo: Sam'l Johnson's of Andover to advise relating to her freedom. She being 26 years old, advised she was free, that a land of freedom knows no slavery,

that all attempts to keep up that practice (which hath been too long tolerated) are arbitrary, eruel and wicked and contrary to ye Laws of God and Christianity. And all that are assisting are abettors in robbing their fellow Creatures of their liberty wherein God hath made them free. After all which argnemet being used, Thos. Rugg, of Andover, being present, he being employed by said Johnson to take back said Negro, and hearing all the aforesaid arguements, attempted violently and arbitrarily, without any preept, to seize and take said Negro by force, but was by her repulsed and went off disappointed and ashamed.

*Cyder.*

24 Oct. Cyder very plentiful. We had apples, as was supposed, sufficient to make 200 barrells, but made 155.

1781.

*Values.*

3 March. Daniel Parker here from Haverhill. Spent ye afternoon Supt & lodged. Paid Capt James 200\$ borrowed. Bought James' Military coat & Paid him 800\$ for same.

22 March. Aaron Small brought us 1/2 bushels of beans, asked 67\$ for them.

4 April. Selectmen here, finished the great Rate for the hire of Soldiers. Our part came to about 100 Hard Dollars which at 75 to one comes to 7500 Continental Dollars.

2 May. Parker paid to me 536\$ which he received from Dea Hovey for a barrell of Rhum.

*The Great Seine.*

14 May. The proprietors of the great sean, Part of them, met to tie on and mend the great net. That is self, Capt Peter Coburn, Jonathan Varnum, Eleazer Coburn, Jonas Varnum, Jabish Coburn, Tim : Williams, & Timo : Coburn.

*Town Meeting.*

Met in the afternoon to choose a representative. Chose Capt Joseph Bradley Varnum. He accepted the trust.

*Cornwallis Surrender.*

27 Oct. Maj James Ford here, came from Boston. Brought a hand bill Containing the great and glorious news of the Surrender of Cornwallis & his Army to ye American Army.

*Privateer.*

26 Nov. Mr Isaac Parker came home from sea, has been gone about 6 months, been to Bilboa in a letter of mark. In the voyage going & returned, had hoped to take 8 or 10 prizes. Made myself & wife a fine present of 2 pare of fine spectacles with their cases, & a pare of large glass beakers.

*Values.*

6 Dec. Capt James going off with a drove of fat cattle, sold to the beef agt Capt Jos Bradley Varnum for the army, viz: Capt Jas large speckled ox at 44\$; my fine brindle steers at 44\$; & Parkers farrer cow at 25\$, to be pd by agts certificates

Went by Bradleys ferry, Bad passing there.

*Continental Thanksgiving.*

13 Dec. Continental Thanksgiving throughout the American States. A day set apart by order of Congress to praise God for His mercy & protection ye year past. But in particular for His Divine favor in delivering into our hands the whole British Army under the command of Cornwallis in so miraculous a manner.

JOHN VARNUM died suddenly 26 July, 1785, aged 80 years and 5 months. His widow did not long survive him, dying the following January (3d) in the 73d year of her age. They both lie in the little Woodbine Cemetery on Varnum Avenue.

His Will bearing date 1 Feb., 1783, is filed in the East Cambridge Probate Records. He leaves his wife "all my household goods of every sort and denomination that belong to household furniture. Also my best horse and shayes and horse furnitnre, my best yoke of oxen, 4 cows, six sheep and 40 £ "Lawful silver money," and one third part of his real estate "situate in Dracutt aforesaid and in Pelham."

He gives and bequeathes to his 4 daughters, Phebe, wife of Benj. Poor; Lydia, wife of Mr. Jacob Tyler; Susannah, wife of Ebenezer Poor; and Hannah, wife of Mr. Benj. Stevens, the sum of 200 £ Lawful silver money "within 4 years" after his decease, and adds "whereas silver money is very scarce and hard to collect, and it appears to me Likely to be scarcer and more difficult to collect, my Will, therefore Is that my Executors shall have Liberty to pay the above said Legaey's in Corn or Cattle at the Common markit price, that said Corn and Cattle shall be estimated." He also bequeathes them 4-8 of all his Lands in the town of Stoddard, N. H., and having, in other ways, given to each of them, this is to be in full, of their portions.\*

He gives to his son Parker the whole of the homestead farm with his dwelling house and all buildings; the Back wood land including the Great Bush Pasture and the whole of Angelica Swamp, consisting of about 150 acres. To his son James, he gives "about 160 acres adjoining on the great Road adjoining Land that I sometime since by Deed Granted to sd James towards his portion of my Estate that leads from my Dwelling house to Petucket Falls.

To his son Jonas, "all Tracts of Lands and meddow called my old meddow farm, situate in Pelham, N. H., also the Westerly third part of Land thereto adjoining called my Line pasture, containing, by estimation, about 200 acres, also a Slip of land adjoining Southerly of about 200 acres, and a Wood lot on Long Hill in Dracut, of about 20 acres, also all my Right in the Great Spruce Swamp in Dracut, supposed to be more than ten acres, also 1-3 part of all my Rights in the Lands at the mouth of Beaver Brook called the Great Bunt sean Proprietors Lands with 1-3 Right of a small house standing thereon, called the Proprietor's Fish House, with 1-3 part of my Right in the Great Sean, Called the Great Bunt sean, also 1-3 part of all my Right of the privilege of the Fishery at Petucket Falls, and 1-3 part of all my wharfings stagings and privilege of building same or setting of Salmon pots or any other fishing at said Falls, also 1-3 part of Right of digging or making landing at the head of said Petucket Falls or of building mills, or making dams and laying lumber at and of passing and repassing from the same for ye improvement thereof, also 1-8 part of my Lands in Stoddard, N. H., and 1-3 part of

\* 11 Sept., 1778. Gave my daughters a deed of my Eastern lands at Blue Hill bay, Supposed to be about 100 acres each. They were thankful &c., &c. J. V's. Journal.

my Pew in Drumm Meeting House, and 1-4 part of my books and wearing apparel and Household tools and finally 10 £ Lavel silver money."

He gives to his late grandson Peter Parker, only child of my late daughter Dr. Mrs. 1-4 part of the Stoddard, N. H., Land, & one Table of iron within 4 years after his decease.

He gives to his grandson John Varnum Stevens, one pole of iron to be delivered in 4 years after his decease.

The remainder of his estate is given to his sons Parker and James who are made "joint and sole executors" to be shared by them equally, "always reserving that my son Parker is to assist my son James in the building a house on James' Land in said Drumm where preparations are now making."

The final clause of this lengthy Will respecting so much landed property, contains the important proviso as to the possibility of the future use of the great water power in Pawtucket Falls fifty years afterwards as subsequently enlarged and improved by the Leslie & Charles Co.: "Whereas I have in the Wm. River all my Rights of Fishing, wharfs, stages, Building of Mills, Damns etc. in ye Pococke Falls, and Near the same, in my said three sons in Equal proportion, and as the same may hereafter be of some Importance to them, I intend that if either of them or their Heirs or any of them shall desire to build thereon, and the others Inclined and Neglect to do so thereon, those that are Desirous may build thereon without Let or hindrance from their Declining Brothers.

The witnesses to this will were:

Elijah Cogges, Thomas Varnum,  
Josiah Hamblin.

12. Jonas VARNUM<sup>1</sup> (Joh. J. Son of George<sup>1</sup>), b. 10 May, 1710; d. 23 Mar. 1785, m. 28 Jan. 1730-1 (1) Mary, dau. of John and Lydia Shepley of Groton, Mass., b. 12 Dec., 1712. No issue. (2) 12 Feb. 1733-4 Lydia, dau. of Jonas and Elizabeth Boyden of Groton, b. 12 Mar., 1710-11, d. 4 Nov., 1794.

Seven Children:

1. Lydia<sup>1</sup> b. 4 Oct., 1735; d. in childbed, 4 Aug., 1736; m. 27 July, 1736, Edmund Parker of Groton.  
One Child Parker:  
Lydia, b. 30 July, 1736.

- i. <sup>1</sup> Jas., Jr., b. 1 Jan., 1736-7; Releas Spaulding.  
 ii. Mary, b. 11 Dec., 1738.  
 iv. Eliza <sup>2</sup>, b. 11 Mar., 1741-2; m. 22 Apr., 1761, Daniel Fiske  
     of Groton.  
 Ten children Fiske:  
     Mary, b. 14 Mar., 1767.  
     Nathan, b. 3 Jan., 1769.  
     Micah, b. 11 June, 1771.  
     Walter, b. 17 June, 1773.  
     Micah, b. 1 Jan., 1775.  
     Daniel, b. 9 Mar., 1777.  
     Betty, b. 17 Feb., 1779.  
     Sarah, b. 1 July, 1781.  
     John, b. 31 Jan., 1783.  
     Varnum, b. 1<sup>st</sup> Sept., 1785.  
 v. Sarah, b. 4 Feb., 1744-5; m. 4 Nov., 1766, Benj. Netting of  
     Groton.  
 vi. Martha, b. 12 July, 1750; m. 3 Dec., 1771, Gilbert Dixon of  
     Groton.  
 vii. Hannah, b. 25 Nov., 1752; m. Atq. Muster.

JONAS VARNUM was one of the first two Varnum brothers, James being the other, to leave his native town to live elsewhere. He settled in West Groton, afterwards Pepperell, on his marriage to Mary Shepley, his first wife, who was then 19 years of age. Here he married Lydia Boyden, his second wife. He was a farmer and his land is still in the hands of his descendants. He was chosen one of the assessors of Pepperell at its first Town Meeting, 17 Jan., 1742. He died intestate, and his son, Capt. Jonas Varnum, Jr., was appointed administrator of his estate, 18 May, 1785.

13. ABRAHAM VARNUM<sup>4</sup> (*John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>3</sup>, George<sup>2</sup>*), b. 10 May, 1710; d. 1760; m. (1) "Oct. ye 9, 1736, Abraham Varnum of Draucutt entered with me his Intention of marriadge to

Abigail Hardy of Boxford." John Varnum, T. C. She died 2 Feb. 1737-8.

One Child:

i. Abigail, <sup>b.</sup> b. 3 July, 1737; m. Robert Blood Jr. of Dunstable.

He married (2) Rachel ———; died 1748.

Seven Children:

i. Elizabeth, b. 26 April, 1741; m. Cyrus Baldwin of Chelmsford.

19. ii. Jonathan, b. 31 Oct., 1742; m. Anna East.

20. iii. Asa, b. 14 Dee., 1743; m. Abigail East.

iv. Abraham, b. 6 Apr., 1745; d. in infancy.

21. v. William, b. 19 Oct., 1746; m. Sarah Colburn.

vi. Abiah, b. 19 Oct., 1746; d. 30 Sept., 1750.

vii. Benjamin, b. 29 Mar., 1747-8; d. in early youth.

He married (3) "May ye 20, 1748, Abraham Varnum of Draucutt entered with me his Intention of Marriadge to Rebeeca Shead of Dracutt." Josiah Richardson, T. C. She was living in 1760.

Two Children:

i. Lucy, b. 31 July, 1751; m. 6 Dec., 1770, Jonas Colburn of Draeutt.

ii. Sarah, b. 14 April, 1756; m. (int.) 10 Dee., 1794, William Doble of Draeutt.

ABRAHAM VARNUM, husbandman, lived and at the age of fifty years died, on lands which had been set off to him on the division of his father's estate, who died without will. His son William went first to Thornton, N. H., and afterwards to Peacham, Vt., and his descendants are to be found among the Varnums of Peacham, and the West. His will dated "22 Dec. in the year of his Majesty's reign annoque Domini 1758," is filed at the Probate records at East Cambridge. In it he leaves his wife Rebeeca "one full third part of my estate during her natural life"; to his daughter "Abigail wife of Robert

Blood of Dunstable, 13£ 2s. Lawful silver money, in full of what I have already given her"; to his daughters Lucy and Sarah " 13£ 6s. 8d. in full for their portions"; to his four sons Jonathan, Asa, William and Benjamin "all the remainder of my estate apportioning to my eldest son Jonathan a dubble share, or as much as any two of his brethren, and that the other three shall have equal."

He makes his brother John sole executor. The witnesses to this will were Samuel, Amos and Thomas Coburn, and John Varnum.

An Inventory of his estate made Aug. ye 2d 1766 showed 406£-0-6.

Dracutt Mar ye 16 1761, On petition of Jona: Varnum a minor about 18 years old, Asa Varnum about 17, William in his 15th year, sons of Abraham Varnum late of Dracutt, Mr. Jonathan Parham was made guardian.

(East Cambridge Probate Records.)

By the non-mention of Benjamin, 7th child, it would appear that he died shortly after his father.

14. JAMES VARNUM<sup>4</sup> (*John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), b. 4 Sept. 1712; d. 1756; m. 26 Oct. 1742, Abigail, dau. of Dea. Ebenezer Dearborn of Chester, N. H. She was born 17 Jan., 1721, and outlived her husband, administrating on his estate. She afterwards married John Robie of Chester.

#### Seven Children:

- i. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> b. 6 Oct., 1743; d. 4 Jan., 1802; m. (1), 1762, Ezekiel, son of Capt. John Lane, who was b. 4 July, 1739. He fell at the Battle of Bennington, Aug. 16, 1777; m. (2) Peter Hills.
- 22. ii. James, b. 14 Feb., 1744-5; m. Anna Robie.
- 23. iii. John, b. 23 Sept., 1746; m. Elizabeth Patten.
- iv. Peter, b. 12 Dec. 1748; m. and left descendants.
- v. Josiah, b. 1750.

- vi. Mary, b. 1752; m. Peter Moores, and went to Maine.
- vii. Sarah, b. 29 Jan., 1754; d. 4 Sept., 1713; m. Moses, son of Winthrop Sargent.

JAMES VARNUM was born in Draenett and early went to Chester, N. H., near which place there are now living (1906) some of his descendants. "In 1741 at a Town meeting held the last Thursday in March, John Telford and James Varnum were chosen to take the invoicee of the heads and estates of the whole town. They made report to the Secretary of State. which document is in the excellent handwriting of Mr. Varnum. He bought of Elizabeth, widow of Sampson Underhill, house lot number 28 on the "Ten Rod way." The Meeting House sat on the said way. In a diagram of the old Meeting House as seated in 1754, when the ground or "second tier" pews were sold, there were the following allotments:

A, Minister's Pew. B, Deacon's seat. C, James Varnum's.\*

In 1749 James Varnum was an ensign in a Chester Company. In the same year he became one of the selectmen of the town. He died at the early age of forty-four years.

15. PARKER VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 17 Feb., 1746-7, died 18 Dec. 1824, m. (1) Dorcas Brown, daughter of Timothy and Dorcas (Osgood) Brown of Tewksbury, Mass., born 31 Mar. 1794, died 29 April, 1800.

\* Chase Hist. of Chester, pp. 40, 73.

Weeden "Social & Economic Hist. of N. E." says, p. 18: "The Meeting House was at all times the center of social life. Pews were well established by 1700, though they were generally assigned by a committee or by a vote of the whole congregation to particular persons. This seating of the congregation was the most significant of all of our customs. The rules for the designation and discrimination of seats, were formed after the minute consideration of age, rank, office, estate lists, and of relative amounts furnished towards building the house or towards the minister's salary."

Chaucer, in his "Parson," says "God hath ordained that some folk should be more high in estate and in degree, and some folk more low, and that every one should be served in his estate and in his degree. Were it not for this the estate of the holy Church might not have been, nor common profit kept, nor rest on earth."

## Fifteen Children:

- i. John,<sup>6</sup> b. 12 Jan., 1773; d. 10 Feb., 1776.
- ii. Polly, b. 30 Sept., 1774; d. 17 Aug., 1798. She was affianced to Rev. Caleb Bradley of Dracutt, a congregational minister, who erected a tombstone to her memory, now standing in Woodbine cemetery. He afterwards settled in Portland, Me., where he became a noted preacher.
- iii. Dorcas, b. 28 Sept., 1776; d. 10 Mar., 1787.
- iv. John, b. 25 June, 1778; m. (1) Mary Saltonstall; (2) Mrs. Mary P. Varnum.
- v. Dolly, b. 12 Mar., 1789; d. 21 May, 1796.
- vi. Clarissa, b. 27 Jan., 1782; d. 5 Sept., 1862; m. 2 Aug., 1804, Caleb, son of Caleb and Rebekah (Frost) Butler of Pelham, N. H., b. 13 Sept., 1776, d. 7 Oct., 1854. "He was widely known and respected for his sterling integrity, moral independence, courage, simplicity and modesty. His familiarity with the highways of Middlesex Co., upon the construction and improvement of which he was an authority, caused him to be selected by the Governor in 1826 as chairman of the first Board of Highway Commissioners of the County." As the Hon. Abbott Lawrence once said of him, "A sweet aroma hangs about his name, in his love of truth and justice, and in his integrity of character in all the relations of life." (Ancient Middlesex, Gould.)

## Eight Children (Butler):

- Henrietta, b. 28 May, 1805; d. 22 Nov. 1864; m. (1) Nath'l Littlefield; (2) Timo: Atkinson.
- Charles Varnum, b. 2 Dec., 1806; d. 16 Feb., 1831.
- George, b. 14 Feb., 1808; d. 12 June, 1835.
- Susan, b. 19 Sept., 1809; 24 Sept., 1826.
- Rebekah, b. 28 May, 1811; d. 6 Sept., 1844; m. Peter Anderson.
- William, b. 21 Aug., 1812; d. 24 Oct., 1839.
- Clarissa, b. 11 July, 1814; d. unm. 22 Dec., 1875.
- Frances, b. 12 Oct., 1822; d. 26 Dec., 1892; m. Francis A. Brooks.

- vii. Sarah Bowdoin, b. 16 Jan., 1784; d. 15 Sept., 1822, buried in Mayhew, Miss.; m. 24 Dec., 1816, in New Orleans, La., to Rev. Cyrus Kingsbury, missionary to the Choctaws. A niece (Mrs. Sarah B. Eaton) says of her: "Soon after marriage they went to the Mississippi as missionaries to the Indians. To this wild life, she was in a measure fitted, as from early youth she was a skilful horsewoman, and could catch and mount a horse from natural skill or training."

To this quality she added those efficient accomplishments which make a New England maiden a noted housewife. She used to cut and make the garments of the family when a member of her father's household, and they were all well-made and well-fitting."

Two Children (Kingsbury):

Cyrus, b. 2 Jan., 1820.

John Parker, b. 25 Sept., 1821; m. H. Maria Hotchkiss.

- viii. Phebe Parker, b. 15 Dec., 1785; d. 30 July, 1849; m. 8 Dec., 1807, William Farwell, son of James and Sarah (Farwell) Brazer of Groton, b. 8 Dec., 1781; d. 17 Nov., 1835.

Nine Children (Brazer):

Mary Saltonstall, b. 17 Oct., 1818; d. 8 Oct., 1829.

Sarah Farwell, b. 5 Feb., 1810; d. 17 Apr., 1897; m. 27 Nov., 1845, W. P. Eaton.

James, b. 29 Apr., 1811; d. 1 Sept., 1901; m. Mary Lyman.

Ellen, b. 20 Mar., 1813; d. unm. 3 Sept., 1876.

Elizabeth Varnum, b. 8 July, 1815; d. unm. 14 Dec., 1859.

William Phillips, b. 25 Aug., 1820; m. 24 Oct., 1854, Mary Fletcher.

Henrietta, b. 15 Nov., 1823; d. 4 Sept., 1824.

John, b. 4 Sept., 1825.

Charles Edward, b. 19 Aug., 1827; d. unm. 18 Jan., 1864.

- ix. Dorcas, b. 15 June, 1788; d. 18 Sept., 1865; m. 15 Mar., 1810, Oliver, son of Josiah and Mary (Corey) Stearns of Lunenburg, who graduated from Harvard College in 1808.

He became a lawyer and settled in Amesbury, Mass., which town he represented in the State Legislature in 1819. He was b. 4 Mar., 1786; d. 7 June, 1826.

Eight Children (Stearns) :

Dorcas Ann, b. 2 Aug., 1811; d. 21 June, 1859; m. 15 Sept., 1832, Freeman Huggins of Saco, Me.  
 Charles Oliver, b. 8 Nov., 1813; m. 10 Sept., 1833, Adeline Eastman of Salisbury.  
 Susan Maria Corey, b. 29 Dec., 1815; m. 6 July, 1845, Joseph Chandler of Winthrop, Me.  
 George Parker, b. 29 Sept., 1817; d. unm. 20 Apr., 1845.  
 Luther, b. 17 Aug., 1820; m. Mary Alvord.  
 William Henry, b. 22 Mar., 1822; d. July, 1901; m. 7 Dec., 1847, Sarah A. Durant of Northampton.  
 Laurens, b. 7 Jan., 1825; d. unm. 21 May, 1846.  
 Mary Elizabeth, m. 19 Apr., 1849, Wm. H. Hull of Lowell; b. Cambridge, Vt., 11 Jan., 1824; d. in Lowell, 19 May, 3 Feb., 1903.

25. x. Parker, Jr., b. 1790; m. Martha McCoy.  
 xi. Susan, b. 7 May, 1792; d. 20 Feb., 1833; m. 27 Apr., 1827, Benj. Sherburn, son of Willard L. and Susan (Sherburn) Coburn of Dracutt, b. 1802, d. 13 Mar., 1863.

One Child (Coburn) :

- Benj.: Varnum, b. 31 Dec., 1828; d. 20 July, 1833.  
 xii. James, b. 19 May, 1794; d. unm. 18 Nov., 1870.  
 xiii. Charles, b. 20 Jan., 1796; d. 1 Feb., 1796.  
 xiv. Charles, b. 1797; d. 1 Jan., 1798.  
 xv. Lueretia, b. 1799; d. unm. 21 Feb., 1852.

He married (2) 24 Nov., 1801, Abiah, daughter of Timothy and Phebe (Frye) Osgood of Andover, born 13 Dec., 1747, died 17 Sept., 1825.

Abiah (Osgood) Varnum outlived her husband one year, leaving no issue. She was buried by his side in the "Woodbine" cemetery, on Varnum Ave. Her will is filed at the Probate Records, East Cambridge, and is of much interest as

giving a remarkable inventory of wearing apparel, the wardrobe of one of ye olden-time dames of Dracutt.

It is dated 19 May, 1825, and bequeathes "to Susan and Lueretia, daughters of my late husband, my household furniture." The inventory referred to is as follows:

One chaise \$24; two Bridge (Pawtucket) Shares \$360; One damask silk gown & skirt \$7,50; One silk purlease \$3,50; one woolen do \$4; One gingham gown \$1,50; one striped silk do \$1,50; one purple silk do \$6; one black silk do with skirt \$1,50; one erape gown \$6; one bombast do \$1; two flannel petticoats \$1; One satin mantle \$4; two dimity petticoats \$1; one black silk shawl \$2; one cotton do \$1,50; one muslin do 50c; one bandanna handkerchief 75c; four pocket handkerchiefs \$1; three aprons \$1; four chimmees \$2; six pairs shoes \$3; three pairs do \$1,50; one bonnet and veil \$2,50; six silver spoons \$6; two large silver do \$4; 6 dozen plates \$2.

### SQUIRE PARKER VARNUM.<sup>5</sup>

*By Maj: Atkinson C. Varnum.<sup>7</sup>*

"Parker Varnum was an extensive farmer for his day, having been the owner of several hundred acres of land which he cultivated with a practical knowledge of good husbandry. He was a man of broad mind, progressive in his ideas, and liberal in his support of all private and public enterprises. He was a Justice of the Peace, and a sort of Trial Justice, and Arbitrator for many miles around Dracut. It was said of him that more cases which came before him were settled by mutual consent, than were tried; and the name of "Peacemaker" was universally applied to him. He had a wonderfully happy faculty of restoring good feeling between parties at variance, so that in most cases they went home reconciled and satisfied. On his tombstone, in the "Woodbine Cemetery," near the land he lived upon, is this just sentiment: "Blessed are the Peacemakers."



SQUIRE PARKER VARNUM<sup>5</sup>







With his brothers James and Jonas he was a member of Capt. Peter Coburn's Company of Minute-men, of which he was sergeant, and his cousin Ebenezer Varnum 2d Lieutenant, which responded to the Lexington alarm (Alarm Rolls, State Archives, vol. xii.) in 1775. He was a Minute-man of the Revolution\* and with the Dracutt Company under the command of Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum (his cousin) marched in Oct., 1777, to reinforce the Northern army. He was present at the surrender of Burgoyne at Saratoga, and his company acted as guard in convoying the British and Hessian prisoners to Boston. His father, John Varnum, in his journal refers to a suspicion of treachery in the paroling of said prisoners not to serve again during the war, which suspicion led the Continental Congress to detain said prisoners and they were finally marched 700 miles to Maryland and Virginia, where they were kept for five years.

He was a Justice of the Peace from 1787 to the year of his death in 1824. He represented his native town from 1788 to 1792 at the General Court, which at that date held its sessions in the Old State House, succeeding Joseph Bradley Varnum, who became State Senator.

When the citizens in the westerly part of the town, including about half the township, withdrew from the original church and established what is now known as the "Pawtucket Church and Society," in 1797, Mr. Varnum's name stood at the head of the petition, and his was the first name among the Incorporators. He was elected one of its Deacons in Nov., 1819. In the beginning the Church drew heavily on its Society to pay for a

\* In November, 1774, the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts authorized the enrolment of 12,000 men in the province, who should be prepared to take the field at a minute's warning. Prior to this there had been local organizations of the kind all over the province. It needed but the authority of law to accomplish a general enrolment. Fathers and sons, encouraged by mothers, wives and sisters, received lessons in the art of war, and were made ready for immediate action, when called upon. This army was, from the conditions of its enlistment, called Minute-men. (Harper's Encyclopedia of American History.)

place of worship, and to supply the pulpit. It was not until 1821 that a settled minister could be afforded. During all this time the house of Squire Parker Varnum was open for the entertainment of ministers free of expense, who were employed as stated supply.

He was one of the earliest projectors, and one of the incorporators, of the "Middlesex Merrimack River Bridge" commonly known as the "Pawtucket bridge" as it spanned the Pawtucket falls of that river. It was built in 1792, and was the earliest bridge across the Merrimack.

Mr. Varnum was clerk to the Bridge Corporation up to 1805, when he succeeded Col. Loammi Baldwin as President, which office he held at the time of his decease. The building of this structure was a great undertaking for that day, and those who were engaged in it were men of sterling merit. It was the means of opening travel from Vermont and New Hampshire through Dracut and Chelmsford to Boston. Thousands of teams loaded with pork, butter, cheese, and all kinds of country produce, passed over the bridge for many years, and even after the steam railroads cheapened methods of transportation. The Pawtucket Bridge was especially a Varnum enterprise. To the two sons of Lt. John Varnum, Parker and James, may be given the credit of its inception and its successful construction. Both labored with their hands in the building of the same, and both, with Jonathan Varnum, their cousin, were large stockholders. Among their assets, after their decease, were the original shares of this successful company.

It was the custom in ye olden time, when any enterprise of physical labor was being carried out, to liberally supply spirits. On several occasions a few mugs of flip and toddy are charged in the expenses of the Co., and at one meeting of the Directors, a vote was passed that any person absent at the next meeting, should pay a fine equal to furnishing two mugs of flip to each Director."





No. 44

This Certifies, That Caleb Butter

is the Proprietor of Share Number forty two  
in the Middlesex MERRIMACK-RIVER BRIDGE, which Share is  
transferable by making an assignment on the back of this Certificate, and  
causing the same to be registered in a Book, kept by the Clerk for that Purpose.

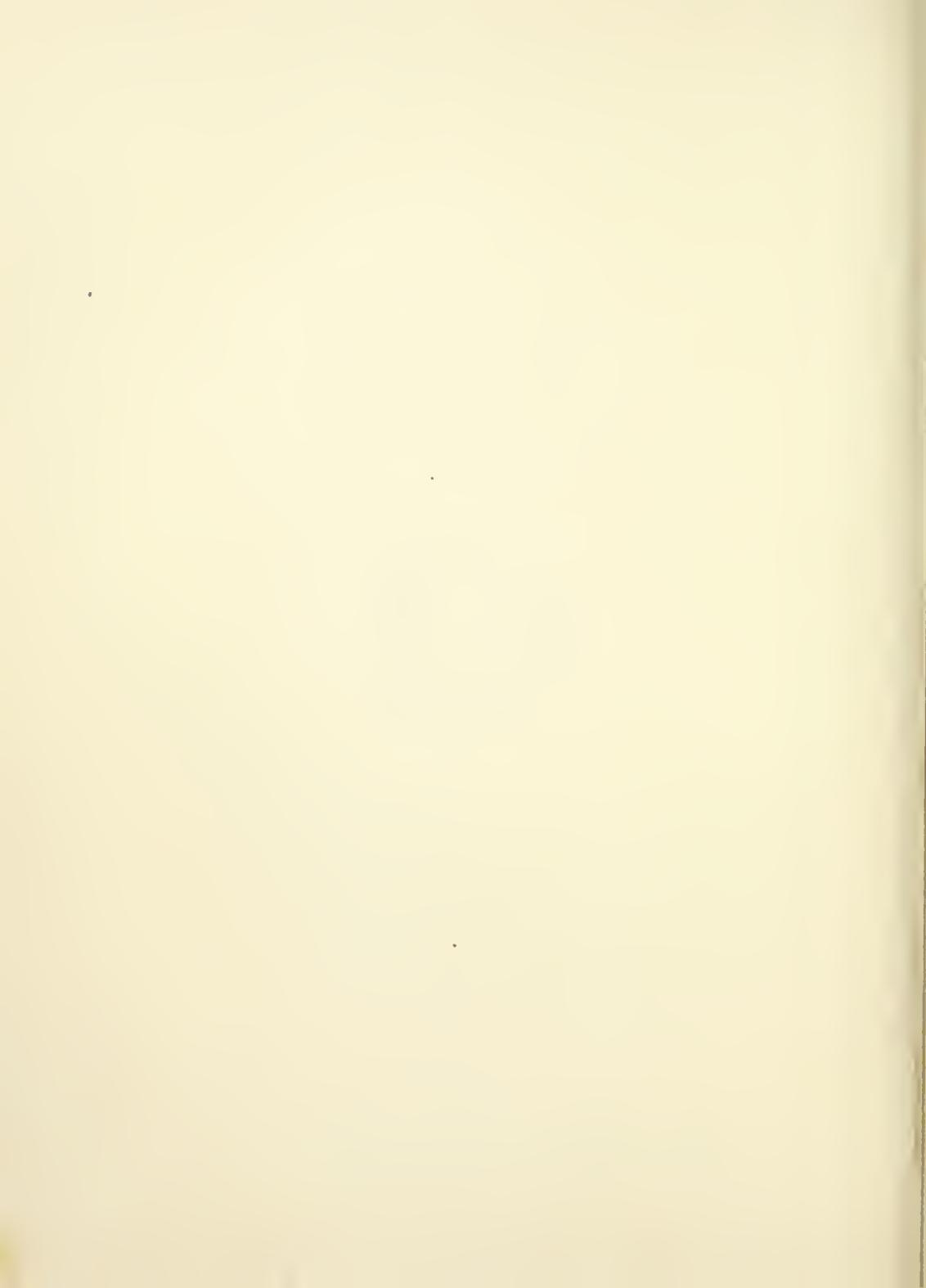
In Testimony WHEREOF, the Seal of the Corporation is hereunto affixed, the fourth  
Day of October in the Year of our LORD, 1822

Attest,

Charles Wm. Brigham President.

Caleb Butter Proprietors' Clerk.

J. W. Wm. Brewster Treasurer.



One of his grandchildren—Mrs. Sarah Brazer Eaton—relates the following anecdotes of him: "My mother and aunts have often told me the story of his pity for a poor slave girl who had fled from her tyrannical master, and sought concealment at his house. He took her to his granary, and inverting an empty hogshead placed her beneath it, strewing the top with grain. Her master looked diligently for her, passing his hand through the grain in several casks. The girl, Phyllis, until her death, remained in the family of her benefactor, refusing any compensation.

"During the winters before the bridge was built by him, it was customary to cross the river above the falls, on the ice. Sometimes this was so thin as to be dangerous. Grandfather, aroused by enteries, would take his farm hands with appliances for rescue, and thus saved undoubtedly many from a watery grave.

"One of my aunts, when a child, was playing outside the house, near the front door, when one day she was accosted by a traveller on horseback, who inquired: 'Is this a public house?' 'Yes,' she innocently answered. He, alighting, ordered one of my uncles to grain his horse, and went into the house for dinner. Grandfather suggested his dining with the family, which he did, ordering his food in a peremptory manner. Dinner over, he asked for his bill, and when told there was no charge, was greatly embarrassed. 'Why, that little girl told me that this was a public house,' he exclaimed."

To Squire Parker Varnum is due the credit of writing in 1818, when he was 71 years of age, the first account of the Varnum family, a singularly correct history, given in detail at the beginning of this volume.

Extracts from John Varnum's journal:

"1 Nov 1777. Parker pressed out 10 barrels of Cyder. Expect 3 more so as to make 110 barrels."

" 10 Mar 1778, made proposals to my sons Parker & James that they should have my lands to the halves, they keeping the fences in good repair, and the bushes cut in the pasture (except the pasture which I undertake to manage myself) and they to carry on the same according to the rules of good husbandry, and to pay one half the rates, which they promise to perform."

" 14 April 1778, I gave Parker \$30. bill to buy cloth. He went to Mr. Poores (Andover) Bought 8 Yards at \$4 per yard of all wool cloth."

" 3 Sept 1780, Parker at Newburyport. Sold the great sow, 400 lbs for \$1392, which in lawful money is 417£ 12s. He carried half a hog of 100 lbs of his own, and sold it for \$4 per lb. His poultry at \$3 per lb, Indian meal at \$35 per bushel, Bought green baize for a gown at \$50 per yard."

16. JAMES VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*John,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 8 Sept., 1747; died 2 Dec., 1832; married (1) Prudence, daughter of Major William and Tabitha (Colburn) Hildreth, of Dracut, born 6 Nov., 1753, died 18 Oct., 1775.

One child:

i. Prudence,<sup>6</sup> b. 10 Sept., 1775; d. 3 Apr., 1860; m. 26 Nov., 1801, Benj. Gale of Concord, N. H., b. 5 June, 1769.

Eight children (Gale):

James Varnum, b. 18 Aug., 1804; d. in infancy.

James Varnum, b. 2 Nov., 1806; m. Caroline Gibson.

Ruth, b. 23 Sept., 1808; d. 3 Oct., 1809.

Ruth Carter, b. 23 Aug., 1810; m. John Gibson.

Eleanor Varnum, b. 16 Sept., 1812; m. Elisha Morrill.

John Varnum, b. 5 Apr., 1814; m. Phillis M. Marshall.

Benj. Franklin, b. 13 Apr., 1814; m. Julia E. Morse.

Levi Bartlett, b. 17 May, 1821; m. Anna F. Eaton.

He was married (2), 12 Feb., 1793, to Eleanor, daughter of James and Naomi (Frye) Bridges of Andover, by Rev. Solomon Aiken of Dracut, born 8 Oct., 1758, died 22 Feb., 1801.

Two children:

i. Eleanor, b. 6 Mar., 1795; d. 5 July, 1796.









ii. Eleanor, b. 16 Sept., 1796; d. 4 Apr., 1825; m. 21 Sept., 1821, Samuel A., son of Gen. Simon and Molly (Varnum) Coburn of Dracut.

Two children (Coburn):

Eleanor Bridges, b. 20 Feb., 1822; d. 1836.

Mary Jane, b. 24 Nov., 1824; d. 1857; m. James Mitehell.

He married (3) (int.) 27 Mar., 1802, Martha, widow of Hugh MeAdams of Greenfield, N. H., born 1756, died 21 Dec., 1839. Buried at Greenfield. No issue.

"COL. JAMES VARNUM spent the early part of his life in his father's family in the business of farming. By his own exertions,—for at that time there was very little opportunity to acquire an education,—he succeeded in getting a tolerably good common-school education, which added to his untiring perseverance enabled him to support with dignity and usefulness all the stations of life he was called upon to fulfil.

On April 19, 1775, in the 28th year of his age, when the Lexington alarm was given, he marched with many Dracut Minutemen, who were actively alive to the issues of that day. He was a sergeant in Capt. Peter Coburn's company at the battle of Bunker Hill, and in that engagement had the top of his hat shot off, and got two bullets through his jacket. He joined the Continental Army, and was made a lieutenant, his commission having been signed by John Hancock, and continued in active service until April, 1780, when he received an honorable discharge. He was made captain April 19, 1776; paymaster in 1778, in Col. Michael Jackson's 7th Massachusetts regiment.

He was in many important engagements in the Revolutionary War,—at Bunker Hill, White Plains, Saratoga, at Monmouth, and at Trenton. It was near the latter place where he was engaged in one of the most daring and dangerous expeditions

achieved during the war. A captain with 30 men was detailed to remove the planks and stringers of a bridge and throw them into the river, to prevent the British Army, then rapidly approaching the town, from crossing at that point. One officer was reluctant to perform the deed, saying that it was impossible to do it without being killed, as the British were then in sight on a hill beyond. Capt. Varnum volunteered his services, provided he could have his fine company of men, 64 in number. The officer who was sent with the order observed to him that '30 men are enough to be killed. I have this from Gen. Washington's own lips.' Under these unpropitious and dangerous circumstances, Capt. Varnum set out, knowing that his men would stand or fall with him. They were so expeditious in destroying the bridge, that as the cavalry of the enemy appeared on the opposite bank, they threw off the last stringer. They made their way back under a shower of balls with the loss of but one man, who fell into the river and was drowned.\*

On leaving the army, Col. Varnum returned to his native town and to his farm life. He was called upon to assist in putting down the domestic insurrection known as 'Shay's Rebellion,' commanding a company of State militia."—Obituary notice, 8 Dec., *Lowell Daily Journal*.

In private life Col. Varnum was an affectionate and indulgent parent, a kind husband, a valuable citizen.

He married three wives, and was wont to remark facetiously that "first I married for love, second for beauty, and third for wealth," and was successful in all his matrimonial ventures. He and his brother Jonas, as survivors of the battle of Bunker Hill, attended on invitation of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts at the laying of the corner stone of the monument in

\* Rev. Edward Everett Hale, in his "Memories of a Hundred Years," page 49, refers to this event most interestingly, and says that it used to be mentioned by Jared Sparks in his lectures on the Revolutionary War. A correspondent of his at Princeton, N. J., says that the bridge referred to was at said place.

1825, when Daniel Webster made his thrilling reference to the patriots who had survived and were present.

His father, John Varnum, says of him in his journal:

" 23 Feb 1777.

My son James returned home from ye Army at ye Jerseys abt 8 in the evening, Hearty & well & in high spirits. Was all Greatly Rejoiced. Confirmed ye News of sundry Smart Engagements, he was in & witness to."

" 14 Apr. Training at Maj: Samuel Varnums. Capt James attended to tri to enlist men for ye wars, without success."

" 16 Apr. Training at Maj: Joseph Varnums. Capt James attended, Inlisted two."

" 5 May, Capt James men here on their journey to Concord to pass muster. Ten of them passed; two refused."

" 26 May, Capt James went to Dunstable on Invitation to raise men, enlisted none."

" 28 May 1778, My son Capt James this morning set out for Cambridge to Draw Guns & Acoutrements & Clothing. Dracutt has turned out its full Quota for the three years and three months."

" 31 May do, Capt James returned from Cambridge. Brought home his 2nd Capt Commission from the Congress, Dated ye 1st January last signed by John Hancock President."

" 18 Oct do, Reed a letter from my son James, dated at ye Camp near Stillwater Oct 7. Gave Intelligenee that Burgoyne Was retreating and was Greatly harrassed. My son with a part of our Army has had a Smart Ingagement with part of Burgoynes Army on ye 6th, Drove ye Enemy from their lines, killed and took great numbers. 200 taken, killed uncertain, took 8 field pieces a great number of tents, waggons baggage, &c."

" 31 May 1779. My son James sometimes here, sometimes in Boston waiting for money for the Regiment to which he belongs. He could not receive the money. He was chosen Paymaster for Colo: Michael Jacksons Regiment."

" 22 June do. Capt James set out for the Army at West Point. Carried Considerable sums of Continental Bills for his Regiment. I gave him my Great sorril horse and while he was here lent him \$60. which I gave him when he went away."

" 17 Apr 1780. My son the Capt returned from the Army Brave and well. In high spirits with design to tarry at home. Left all friends well. All generally rejoiced at his safe return."

" 3 May 1781. Paid Capt James \$200 I borrowed. Bought Capt James military Coat. Paid him \$800. for the same."

The will of Col: Varnum is filed at East Cambridge, having been made 7 Nov., 1825, seven years before his decease. In it he gives to "my beloved wife Martha, my horse & chaise and all my household furniture for her own disposal; also the use, improvement and income of one third part of my real and personal estate for and during her natural life," and divides his estate, real and personal, so that 6/8ths of it shall, after his daughter Prudence Gale shall have enjoyed the use of it during her life, pass to her children: James Varnum, Ruth Coburn, Eleanor Varnum, John Varnum, Benj: Franklin, and Levi B. Gale. The remaining 2/8ths he devises to his two grandchildren: Eleanor Bridges Coburn and Mary Jane Coburn, children of his late daughter Eleanor.

An inventory of his estate, made Jan. 15, 1833, shows him to have died possessed of—

Realty . . . . .	\$12,194.00
Personalty . . . . .	8,967.99
<hr/>	
	\$21,161.99

His first wife, Prudence Hildreth, was buried in the Hildreth Burial Ground, Dracutt. His body was placed in the vault of Mr. Phineas Whiting in the little cemetery near the Pawtucket Church.

17. JONAS VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*John,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 11 July, 1752; died 15 Apr., 1834; married 21 Feb., 1782, Polly, daughter of William and Mehitable Parker of Dracutt, and granddaughter of Rev. Thos. Parker, the first minister of Dracutt, born 25 June, 1757, died 29 Nov., 1831.

**Five children:**

26. i. Jonas, Jr.,<sup>6</sup> b. 13 Apr., 1785; m. (1) Hannah Fox, (2) Eliza MeQuesten.
27. ii. William Parker, b. 27 Feb., 1787; m. Mary Park.
- iii. Bryant, b. 15 May, 1794; d. 23 July, 1794.
- iv. Nathaniel, b. 14 July, 1795; d. unm. 12 Apr., 1883. He lived on the paternal acres in Dracutt, occupying the house built by his father for his bride in 1781. He was a farmer and contractor. Much of the foundation work of the Lowell mills was laid by him. He was buried in the "Oakland" Cemetery, Pawtucketville.
- v. Polly, b. 29 Nov., 1783; d. unm. 30 Sept., 1862. She made her home with her brother, and was buried by his side in the same cemetery.

JONAS VARNUM was a farmer, and lived on land bequeathed him by his father. He was a loyal and patriotic man; a private in Capt. Peter Coburn's Co. at the battle of Bunker Hill, with his brother James, who became a captain in the Continental army. In "Coat Rolls," Massachusetts State Archives, vol. 57, there is an order for a bounty coat for Jonas Varnum, Capt. Coburn's Co., dated Cambridge, 27 Sept., 1775. His name appears also in "Muster Rolls," vol. xii, p. 25, and vol. xv, p. 10, for pay for Sept. and Oct., 1775; in "Enlistment Rolls," vol. xiv, p. 60, for 3 months 13 days service, 26 April, 1775, and in receipt for advance pay 22 June, 1775, "Coat Rolls," vol. xxxv, p. 40. It also appears as sergeant in Capt. Zach. Wright's Co., Col. Brook's regiment, at White Plains, 31 Oct., 1776, "Muster Rolls," vol. xxiv, p. 139. He was one of the Minute-men of the Revolution, and served 42 days as sergeant in Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum's Co., which was drawn in Sept., 1777, to march to reinforce the northern army, in which company was his brother Parker. This was a part of the movement which led to the surrender of Burgoyne on the 17

Oct., 1777. The town of Dracutt, on 2 April, 1777, "Voted 16 shillings to Jonas Varnum for 3 bayonets for his family as Minute-men."

He was 2d Lieutenant 11th Co., 6th Middlesex regt., Joseph Bradley Varnum, Captain, "Militia Rolls," vol. xxviii, pp. 15, 42. In 1825, he and his brother James, as survivors of the battle, attended on invitation of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts the ceremony of the laying of the corner stone of the Bunker Hill monument.

His father, John Varnum, says in his journal: "18 April 1781, Ingaged in assisting Jonas in Raising his House. Raised the same without damage. Got done in good season. Returned about sunsetting Supped & Spent a pleasant evening. The people was as follows: Capt Wilson, Capt Peter Coburn, Capt Russell, Capt Asa Richardson, Lt Ebenezer Varnum, Lts Michal & William Hildreth, Messrs. Jonathan & Tom Varnum, Hezekiah Coburn, Dr Abbott, Ezra Coburn, Moses Richardson, Matthew Parker, Tim: Williams & Jona: Perham."

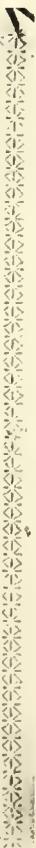
As to his marriage, he says: "Wednesday 21 Feb 1782. My son Jonas was this day married to Miss Polly Parker by me at my House abt 2 oe afternoon. Company present Messrs Samuel Coburn & his sons Hezekiah & Sammel, & their wives, Bradstreet & Nathaniel Coburn, Matthew Parker & wife & his sons Thomas & Matthew, Capt Peter Coburn, Jabesh Coburn & wife, Abijah Hill, Jonas Shattuck, & our own family. After dinner Jonas & Polly went home to their own House."

This house still stands, an excellent example of an eighteenth century mansion, and is occupied by one of the descendants of Jonas, as it was by his son and daughter during their lives. It is located in Dracutt, on the Mammoth Road, about three miles from Pawtucket bridge.

Jonas Varnum made application for pension 12 Sept., 1832. He was buried in the "Woodbine Cemetery," Pawtucketville.







THE

## BUNKER HILL

## MONUMENT ASSOCIATION

REQUEST THAT

*Jonas Tarran (Surveor)*  
would honour the Association with *his* presence at the  
ceremonies of laying the CORNER STONE; at the delivery of  
the ADDRESS; and at the DINNER on the

17TH JUNE, 1825.

WILLIAM SULLIVAN,  
SETH KNOWLES, { *Executive*  
SAMUEL D. HARRIS, { *Committee*  
THEODORE LYMAN, Jun., } *of B. H.*  
M. A.

The Procession moves from the State House, Boston, at 10 o'clock, A. M.

*Concert will be exhibited at the table.*



18. JONAS VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Jonas*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 9 Jan., 1737; died 7 Apr., 1817; married 29 Dee., 1761, Rebecca, daughter of Lt. John and Rachel Spaulding of Chelmsford, born 12 Feb., 1740, died 11 Feb., 1806.

Three children:

- 28. i. John,<sup>6</sup> b. 26 Oct., 1763; m. Eunice Gilson.
- ii. Rebekah, b. 26 Jan., 1768; d. 27 Mar., 1776.
- 29. iii. Jonas Spaulding, b. 1 Mar., 1774; m. Naney Shipley.

JONAS VARNUM was one of the leaders in opposition to the Stamp Act, and one of the foremost in the destruction of tea in his native town (Pepperell). Tradition says there was a heap of tea as "large as a tumble of hay on the Common." One Mr. Shattuck brought a pound of tea, and had it burned, the only tea he had ever bought in his life.

Jonas was captain of militia in Pepperell, and a farmer by occupation.

19. JONATHAN VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Abraham*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 31 Oct., 1742; died 17 Oct., 1801; married (int. 24 Nov., 1764) Anna, daughter of Joseph East, formerly of Boston, born 1740, died 24 March, 1795.

Eight children:

- i. Rachel, b. 4 Dec., 1765; m. (int.) 11 Dee., 1788, Thomas McDole of Goffstown, N. H.
- ii. Anna, b. 23 Apr., 1767; m. —— Abbott of Glover, Vt.
- iii. Dolly, b. 23 May, 1769; m. Abraham Varnum, her cousin, of Peacham, Vt.
- 30. iv. Jonathan, b. 31 Dec., 1771; m. Dolly Stevens.
- v. Mercy, b. 30 May, 1774; m. Robert McDole of Dracut.
- 31. vi. Asa, b. 19 Dec., 1778; m. Anna Moore.
- vii. Betsey, b. 20 July, 1780.
- viii. Diodamia, b. 20 July, 1780; m. 10 Nov., 1805, Benj. Gooding of Newport, Vt.

He married (2) int. 7 May, 1796, Hannah Stevens of Andover; died 20 Oct., 1818, aged 83 years.

JONATHAN VARNUM was a farmer in Draentt. In March, 1760, then 18 years of age, he enlisted in Capt. William Barron's Co. of Concord to go to Crown Point, N. Y., to fight against the French and Indians. He served until Dec. 8 following, at which date he was mustered out of service. In this company there were 14 Dracutt men, of which four were Colburns. (Crown Point Muster Rolls, vol. 8, pp. 254, 255. Mass. State Archives.) Buried in Woodbine Cemetery (Pawtucketville), Lowell.

20. ASA VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Abraham<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 14 Dec., 1743; died at Peacham, Vt., 1788; married 31 Dec., 1772, by Rev. Nathan Davis of Dracutt, to Abigail, daughter of Joseph East, sister to Anna East, whom his brother Jonathan took to wife.

One child:

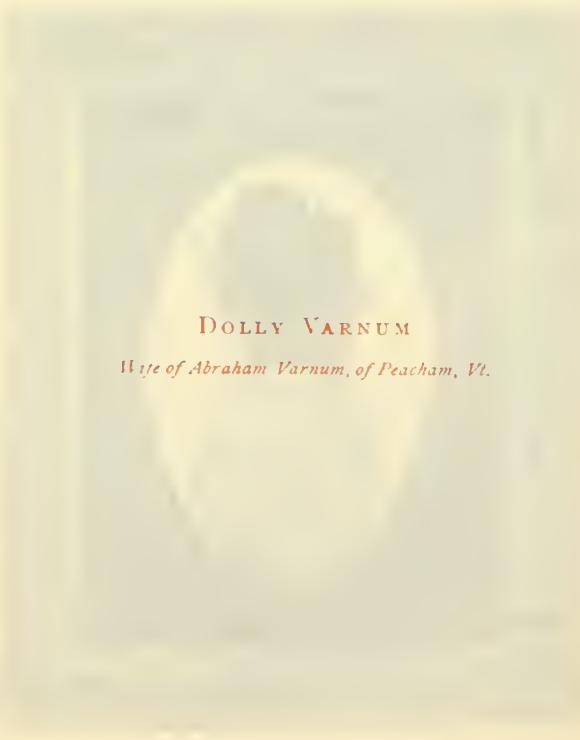
Abigail,<sup>6</sup> b. 19 Sept., 1773.

ASA VARNUM is first mentioned in his brother William's day book, 12 June, 1773. Afterwards, Dec., 1776, his brother speaks of him as "my brother Asa lately deceased." As William did not go to Thornton, N. H., until 1779, Asa probably died in Dracutt. Nothing is known as to his wife and daughter.

21. WILLIAM VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Abraham<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 19 Oct., 1746; died Jan., 1814; married (int.) 2 April, 1768, to Sarah, daughter of Lt. Abraham Colburn, son of Ezra, who married Hannah, daughter of Samuel and Sarah (Langton) Varnum. She died 15 April, 1802.

Ten children:

- i. Sarah, b. 23 Nov., 1768; m. 11 Feb., 1785, Archibald McDermid.
32. ii. Abraham, b. 23 Aug., 1770; m. Dolly Varnum, his cousin.



DOLLY VARNUM

*Wife of Abraham Varnum, of Peacham, Vt.*







iii. Dolly, b. 8 Feb., 1772; d. 8 Oct., 1850; m. 28 Dec., 1786,  
John McLellan of Thornton, N. H., b. in Scotland 1742, d.  
17 Mar., 1817.

Thirteen children (McLellan), b. in Thornton :

Elizabeth, b. 14 Apr., 1787; d. unm. 27 Oct., 1827.

Dorothy, b. 22 May, 1788; d. 29 May, 1815; m. A.  
McDermitt.

Moses, b. 19 Aug., 1789; d. May, 1815; m. ——  
Colby.

Aaron, b. 31 May, 1791; d. 28 Aug., 1878; m. Mary  
Merrill.

Daniel, b. 15 Mar., 1795; d. 23 Jan., 1863; m. Prudenee, }  
dau. of Abraham Varnum.<sup>6</sup>

Rebecca, b. 9 Sept., 1798; d. Dec., 1839; m. John Hoyt.

John, b. 26 July, 1800; d. unm. 8 Apr., 1837.

William, b. 14 Feb., 1803; d. 20 Dec., 1869; m. Clarissa  
Elliott.

Sarah, b. 11 Feb., 1805; d. 4 July, 1839; m. Moses  
Bartlett.

Hannah, b. 18 Nov., 1806; d. 1 July, 1839; m. Nathaniel  
Spencer.

Duncan, b. 2 Feb., 1809; d. 26 Aug., 1843; m. Sarah  
Butler.

Joseph, b. 12 Feb., 1811; d. 23 July, 1881; m. Phidelia  
Reed.

Benjamin, b. 18 Oct., 1813; d. 29 July, 1893; m. Emeline  
Palmer.

iv. Betsey, b. 4 Jan., 1774; m. Ebenezer Patterson.

v. Ruth, b. 3 Oct., 1775; m. Ezekiel Aiken.

vi. Abigail, b. 3 May, 1777; m. Nathaniel Wilson.

vii. Mercy, b. 13 Nov., 1778; d. June, 1847; m. Stephen Good-  
enough of Peacham, Vt.

Four children (Goodenough) :

Peter, lived in New York.

Asa, lived in Danville, Vt.

Phineas, b. 22 Dec., 1805.

Jane, m. —— Wilson.

33. viii. John, b. 16 May, 1781; m. Mary Morse.
34. ix. Phinehas, b. 19 June, 1783; m. Locada Blanchard.
- x. Rachel, b. 31 Jan., 1786; d. at Osceola, Ill., 15 Jan., 1861; m. David Dana. Left children.

WILLIAM VARNUM was born in Dracutt, as were all of his children, up to and including Mercy. From entries in his day book, he removed, 7 Feb., 1779, to Thornton, N. H., named after Matthew Thornton, a man of great prominence in New Hampshire, who afterwards immortalized himself by signing the Declaration of Independence. He was then 36 years old. Here he lived ten years and acquired much landed property. His was among the largest "minister's tax" in the town. He was Road Surveyor and laid out some of the town highways. He was known here in 1782 as Captain, and this title is inscribed on his tombstone in Peacham. It is not of record that he performed military service, although undoubtedly he did, as his relatives of the same generation were all in the war of the Revolution as Minute-men in the Continental army. In his day book he enters "Came to Peacham, Vt., 19 Mar., 1790." He became a prominent man there, active and influential in town affairs, holding the various offices an acceptable citizen is called upon to fill. He was one of 12 original members of the Congregational Society in Peacham, 14 April, 1794. Six days later (20 April) his wife Sarah and their daughter-in-law Dolly Varnum became members also. Of his Varnum descendants, two have their names inscribed on the monument erected to the men of Peacham who fought in the war for the Union.

22. JAMES VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*James,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 14 Feb., 1744/5; lived in Chester, N. H.; died 27 Nov., 1827, at Stanstead, C. E.; married Annie, daughter of John Robie, his step-father. She died in 1807.

One child:

35. Josiah,<sup>6</sup> b. 5 Mar., 1781; m. Lucy Rowe.

James Varnum with his brother John were Revolutionary soldiers. He appears on the Revolutionary muster rolls of the State of New Hampshire, and is credited to Candia. He was a subscriber to a resolution of 14 Mar., 1776, "to cause all persons who are disaffected to the cause of America to be disarmed." He also subscribed to a pledge, That "We will, to the utmost of our power, at the risk of our lives and fortunes, oppose with arms the hostile proceedings of the British fleets and armies against the American colonies."

23. JOHN VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*James<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 23 Sept., 1746, in Candia, N. H.; died 8 June, 1803; married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Patton of Raymond, N. H.

Four children:

- i. Polly, m. Samuel Emerson.
- ii. Peter, b. 8 May, 1791; d. unm. 17 Jan., 1860.
- iii. John, Jr., d. unm. 14 Nov., 1807.
- iv. Martha, d. 1857; m. Alexander McClure. She was his second wife. He was b. 11 Oct., 1773; d. 8 Feb., 1850.

Four children (McClure):

Moses Varnum, d. in California.

Alexander, d. 1858.

Frederic, d. 2 Feb., 1866.

Martha.

JOHN VARNUM lived in Candia, N. H. In the Revolutionary War Rolls, State of New Hampshire (vol. i, p. 76), he is enrolled as having enlisted as a private in Capt. Hezekiah Hutchins' Co., Colonel James Reed's regiment: "John Varnum, husbandman, Candia, aged 28," and as having served from May 6 to Aug. 1, 1775, and drawn pay for 3 mos. 3 days amounting to £4 10s. 6d. He was with his regiment at the battle of Bunker Hill, April 19, 1775, and was there wounded. Moore, in History of Candia (p. 70), states, that he was paid

for losses at said battle £5 1s., being for 1 blanket, 1 gun, 1 shirt, 1 coat, and 1 pack. The soldiers at that time furnished their own accoutrements, and were allowed for them. Lt. Ebenezer Varnum, his relative, was paid for loss in same battle. Lt. Ebenezer, James, Jonas, John of Dracut, and John of Candia, all in the same battle, were fifth in descent from George Varnum. It is further stated that he was with Gen. Nathaniel Stark's New Hampshire militia, at the battle of Bennington, where he was again wounded. He is enrolled among the Wilton, N. H., soldiers in 1776 (N. H. Rolls, vol. i, p. 303). He also appears of record in "Levies raised by the State of New Hampshire whose term of service were not specified, 1780" (N. H. Rolls, vol. 16, p. 102).

24. JOHN VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Parker*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 23 June, 1778; died 23 July, 1836; married (1) 9 Oct., 1806, Mary Cooke, daughter of Dr. Nathaniel and Anna (White) Saltonstall. He was a distinguished physician of Haverhill, and a loyal member of the patriot cause in a family which contained many royalists. She was born 20 Sept., 1781; died 7 Aug., 1817.

Three children:

- i. Nathaniel Saltonstall, b. 19 July, 1812. He entered the U. S. army as a private, and received promotion. He died in the construction of the railroad across the isthmus of Panama.
- ii. John Jay, b. 5 Dec., 1814.
36. iii. Richard Saltonstall, b. 12 Apr., 1817; m. (1) Sarah Potter, (2) Harriet Chanplin.

He was married (2) 23 May, 1826, to Mary Pease Varnum, widow of James M. Varnum of Washington, D. C., while he was a member of Congress from Massachusetts. No issue.

JOHN VARNUM was graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1798. Among his classmates were William Ellery

Channing, D. D., Stephen Longfellow, D. D., Joseph Storey, LL.D., Joseph Tuckerman, D.D. He received from his alma mater the degree of A. M. in 1807. After his graduation, he entered the office of Judge Henry Smith of Exeter, N. H., as a law student, as was the custom in the days before law schools were a part of the curriculum of a college. In 1802, he removed to Haverhill, and commenced the practice of his profession. He was highly successful. Liberal to a fault, warm-hearted and generous, gentlemanly in his methods of conducting his cases, he had the reputation of being a very fair and impartial lawyer.

He was of the Federal school of polities. In 1818, he was elected to the State Senate of Massachusetts. In 1826, he was chosen to represent his district in the National House of Representatives. He served two terms, having been re-elected in 1828, when he defeated Caleb Cushing. This was one of the most famous congressional contests of the time. During this period he was associated with Isaac R. Howe of Haverhill in publishing a newspaper. He was very popular in Washington, and also at home, and would have been readily re-elected by his constituents of "Essex, North District," as it was called, but that he felt called upon to decline, because some obligation rested upon him, in consequence of a promise not to stand again as a candidate.

A letter of his, written to his brother-in-law, Caleb Butler of Groton, in 1826, while he was a representative in Washington, is interesting as showing the political sentiment of that day:—

"The long list of resolutions for amending the Constitution must indicate to strangers that it is imperfect, and that the people are dissatisfied with it. The speeches on the amendments also indicate that the power is safe in the hands of the people, but that the Executive and Legislative Departments are so exceedingly corrupt that nothing must be entrusted to them; that members of Congress, when the election of President devolves

upon them, may all be bought at a low price, and that the most unfit and unprincipled man will certainly be elected to power. I have no faith in such doctrine. The parties,—one headed by Calhoun, the other by Clay,—begin to develop themselves. Although Calhoun has no intention of fighting under the banner of Jackson, yet both parties are united to run down the Administration. I presume no treaty has been formed between them offensive and defensive, but chance and accident or intrigue must decide who shall be appointed dictator. The time may come when we shall be compelled to resort to a dictator, but I am opposed to it at present."

In a private letter written by him, Mr. Varnum describes interestingly social events at the National Capitol at that period. "Last Monday I called to congratulate the President on the favorable auspices of the New Year." This was the New Year reception, then as now, the most ceremonious occasion of the season, when his Excellency receives foreign ministers in full regalia, officers of the army and navy in their chapeaus and gold-braided uniforms, and officials of the Government and members of Congress in plain clothes. He says: "Among others present were twenty Indian chiefs in paint and feathers. Great numbers of citizens were present with hundreds of ladies, in splendid dresses, and plumes of red and green and white of at least three feet in length, all on the same bonnet. As it is very ungenteel for any man to be seen with his wife, two gentlemen who happened to be in this mortifying situation strung their wives on my arms. I was obliged to escort them about for two mortal hours. Five large rooms were opened on the occasion, one of which, at the east end, has never been furnished. The members were much mortified that strangers and foreigners should see this naked room, and the very next day a resolution was presented to furnish it. The southern members said that it was 'a d—d Yankee trick in Mrs. Adams, but it was a good one, and they would vote for it.'"

After Mr. Varnum's retirement from Congressional life and

politics, he removed from Haverhill to Dracutt to take possession of a farm formerly occupied and owned by his brother, and opened an office in Lowell for the resumption of his law practice. As with all who have tasted a Congressional career, he did not find it easy to adapt himself to a new condition of things, and in a few years thereafter he removed with his sons to Michigan, then a very promising field, to start once more in life. In 1836, at Niles, he passed away. In his person he was a tall, fine-looking man with a distinguished presence. He had great conversational powers, and was a favorite with every one who knew him.

25. PARKER VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Parker*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 19 May, 1790; died 20 Aug., 1859; married 1 Nov., 1826, Martha, daughter of Charles and Jane T. McCoy of Peterborough, N. H., born 4 Dec., 1793, died 11 Aug., 1858.

Two children:

37. i. John Parker,<sup>7</sup> b. 17 Jan., 1828; m. Ervilla Dutton.
38. ii. Charles Henry, b. 8 June, 1837; m. Mary Jane Davis.

PARKER VARNUM removed from Draent in 1838 to Peterborough, N. H., the native place of his wife, and settled near the farm owned by James Miller.

26. JONAS VARNUM, JR.<sup>6</sup> (*Jonas*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 13 April, 1785; died 15 Nov., 1864; married (1) 28 Dec., 1813, Hannah, daughter of Joel and Hannah (Hildreth) Fox of Dracutt, born 16 Oct., 1792, died 2 Dec., 1833. No issue. Married (2) 2 Aug., 1835, Eliza, daughter of David and Margaret (Fisher) McQuesten of Londonderry, N. H., born 13 Aug., 1799, died 7 Apr., 1877.

Four children:

- i. Hannah.<sup>7</sup>
39. ii. Edward Payson, m. Martha J. Storer.

- iii. Jonas Parker, m. 18 June, 1895, Louise Livingston, dau. of John M. and Sarah (Hopkins) Bradford of Geneva, N. Y.
- iv. William Bently, b. 17 Aug., 1843; d. 7 Oct., 1865.

JONAS VARNUM was a farmer in Draentt, and formerly lived on the Mammoth road, about two miles from Pawtucket bridge. About 1861, he rented his Dracutt farm and bought a small place in Derry, N. H., where he educated his children and where he died. He lies buried in the Oakland Cemetery, Dracutt.

27. WILLIAM PARKER VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Jonas,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 27 Feb., 1787; died 10 Jan., 1864; married 4 June, 1844, Mary, daughter of Robert and Sarah Park of Windham, N. H., born 29 Jan., 1813, died 6 April, 1833.

Two children:

- 40. i. William Parker,<sup>7</sup> b. 27 Sept., 1846; m. Martha B. Kilburn.
- ii. Mary Anne, b. 7 Nov., 1848; d. 6 Feb., 1906; m. 8 Aug., 1871, Joseph Giles Eaton, son of W. P. and Sarah (Brazer) Eaton. Rear Admiral U. S. N.; retired 30 June, 1905. Original appointment to U. S. Naval Academy from Massachusetts, 24 Sept., 1863. Sea service, 19 yrs. 10 mos. Shore duty, 18 yrs. 2 mos.

One child (Eaton):

Isabel Varnum, b. 8 July, 1874; d. in Pittsburg, Pa., 17 June, 1888.

WILLIAM PARKER VARNUM was born on the farm in Dracutt which had been a part of the original possessions of his great grandfather. He sold his interest in the patrimonial acres to his brother Nathaniel, and bought a home near Pawtucket bridge. He and his brother Nathaniel were extensive quarrymen in granite, and furnished the foundations for the early mills and bridges of Lowell. Mr. Varnum was the first

to deliver split stone for the Merimack mills. He together with his wife, who outlived him nineteen years, are buried in the Oakland Cemetery, Dracut.

28. JOHN VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Jonas,<sup>5</sup> Jonas,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 26 Oct., 1763; died 27 Sept., 1832; married Eunice Gilson of Pepperell, born 1767, died 29 May, 1824.

Four children:

- 41. i. John, Jr.,<sup>7</sup> b. 5 Dec., 1787; m. Abby Getchell.
- ii. Eunice, b. 1 May, 1790; m. 6 June, 1806, Abner Sheple.
- iii. Jane, b. 28 Oct., 1797; m. — Ames.
- iv. William, b. 1802; d. 9 Aug., 1820. He cut his arm while mowing, which resulted fatally.

29. JONAS SPAULDING VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Jonas,<sup>5</sup> Jonas,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 1 Mar., 1774; died 21 Oct., 1830; married 1 Mar., 1800, Anne Shipley, daughter of Jonathan and Abigail (Blood) Shipley of Pepperell, born 19 Sept., 1779, died 28 Dec., 1839.

Three children:

- i. Ann, b. 1 Feb. 1801; d. 25 Mar., 1886; m. 6 Apr., 1823, Fred F. Parker, son of Samuel and Submit Parker, b. 4 Jan., 1801, d. 25 May, 1841.

Three children (Parker):

Henry Alfred.  
Charles Frederick.  
Henrietta Elizabeth.

- ii. Jonas, b. 29 Sept., 1804; d. unm. 21 Sept., 1832.
- 42. iii. Joseph Bradley, b. 4 Dec., 1815; m. Betsey B. Tucker.

JONAS SPAULDING VARNUM was a farmer on the paternal acres at Pepperell.

30. JONATHAN VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 31 Dec., 1771; died 1 Sept., 1843;

married 29 Nov., 1799, Dolly Stevens of Andover, born 6 April, 1777, died 7 Feb., 1831.

Eleven children:

- i. Hannah, b. 8 Oct., 1800; m. Benj. Skelton.
- ii. Adeline, b. 13 Apr., 1802; d. 7 Dec., 1805.
- iii. Charlotte, b. 19 Apr., 1803; m. 12 Nov., 1830, John P. Cutter.

One child (Cutter):

John Varnum, b. 20 Oct., 1831; d. 1833.

- 43. iv. Cyrus, b. 19 Apr., 1805; m. Emma W. Osgood.
- v. Asa, b. 15 Dec., 1806; d. 1807.
- vi. Asa, b. 1 June, 1808; d. 1881; m. Lucy Ricord.
- vii. Martha Adoline, b. 14 Apr., 1810; d. 25 Aug., 1847; m. 3 Oct., 1844, George, son of Jabesh and Lydia (Stearn) Stevens of Dracutt.
- viii. Augusta, b. 4 Dec., 1811; d. 14 June, 1867; m. April, 1847, Thomas D. Underwood of Dracutt, b. 26 Oct., 1802, d. 15 Aug., 1881.

Two children (Underwood):

Thomas Jefferson, m. 10 June, 1855, Arabella Coburn Porter.

Abby Ann, m. 5 June, 1884, Edward Sawyer Howe.

- ix. Charles, b. 5 Sept., 1813; d. 15 Aug., 1861; m. Abigail Griffin.
- x. Louisa, b. 22 Mar., 1816; d. 2 Apr., 1849; m. Ephraim S. Peabody of Dracutt.

One child (Peabody):

Anna L., d. 5 Oct., 1849.

- xi. George Stevens, b. 9 Oct., 1817; d. 18 Oct., 1850, on the Isthmus of Panama.

JONATHAN VARNUM was a Draeutt farmer. He was fatally injured by falling from a tree in his orchard when he was 72 years of age. He and his wife and daughter Louisa are buried in the little cemetery near Pawtucket bridge.

31. ASA VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 19 Dec., 1778; died about 1850; married Anna Moore of Lynchburg, Va.

Three children:

- i. Mary Ann,<sup>7</sup> b. 8 Mar., 1811; m. ——— Bell of Georgia.  
Seven children (Bell):  
Joseph, m. Emily Kinney.  
Walter, m. Eliza Adair.  
Mary, m. Dr. Lawrence.  
Sarah, m. Zach. Smith.  
James, m. Anna Wimperly.  
George, d. unm.  
Asa Varnum, d. unm.
- ii. William Moore, m. Susan Saxon. No issue.
- iii. George Washington, d. unm. A doctor in Florida.

ASA VARNUM, born in Draeutt, settled in Lynchburg, Va., about 1813; at least, at that time he was there and associated in business with George W., a son of Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum, at that date a senator in Congress from Massachusetts. He afterwards removed to near Athens, Ga., where he became a prominent citizen and a man of means. Here he died. His son William was living in 1865. There are now no known male descendants of his name living.

32. ABRAHAM VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 23 Aug., 1770; died 4 Feb., 1837; married 13 Jan., 1791, his cousin Dolly, daughter of Jonathan and Anna (East) Varnum of Draeutt, by the Rev. Solomon Aiken, born 23 May, 1769, died 26 Feb., 1856.

Eight children:

- i. Infant,<sup>7</sup> unnamed, b. 28 Dec., 1791; d. 31 Dec., 1791.
- 44. ii. William, b. 26 Jan., 1793; m. Mehitable Chandler.
- iii. Jonathan, b. 31 Oct., 1795; d. 3 Feb., 1797.

iv. Prudence, b. 16 Apr., 1797; d. 15 Jan., 1880; m. Daniel McLellan of Peacham, Vt.

Two children (McLellan) :

Julia, d. at 6 years.

Louis, d. 1865.

v. Hannah, b. 13 Apr., 1799; d. 6 Oct., 1840.

vi. Julia, b. 13 Aug., 1802; d. 31 May, 1806; m. —— McDormitt.

vii. Pascal, b. 3 Sept., 1804; d. 21 Feb., 1829.

45. viii. Asa, b. 3 May, 1806; d. 25 Dec., 1861; m. Laura P. Wyman.

ABRAHAM VARNUM was born in Dracutt, and as a member of his father's flock went to Thornton, N. H., shortly after the Revolutionary War. He removed with his father to Peacham, Vt., where his children were born. He was a farmer. Dolly seems originally to have gone to Thornton in some capacity in William Varnum's family. He makes this entry in his day book: "Dolly Varnum began hir time hear 1789, Feb. 26." She was then 20 years old. She outlived her husband nineteen years.

33. JOHN VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*William<sup>5</sup>, Abraham<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), farmer, of Peacham, Vt., born 16 May, 1781; died 1 June, 1856; married Mary, daughter of Moody and Mary (Foster) Morse of Peacham, Vt., died 8 March, 1857.

Six children:

46. i. John, Jr., b. 26 Dec., 1806; m. Fatima Robbins.

47. ii. Franklin, b. 15 Oct., 1809; m. Betsey Harvey.

iii. Mary S., b. 26 Mar., 1812; d. 6 Apr., 1890; m. (1) 13 Apr., 1830, Josiah Dana.

Four children (Dana) : .

Elijah Varnum, b. 6 July, 1831.

Mary E., b. 28 Sept., 1834.

Frank, b. 29 Mar., 1837.

Julia A., b. 11 July, 1840.

She m. (2) 2 Dec., 1847, Seneca Ladd.

Two children (Ladd):

Charles D., b. 3 Sept., 1848.

Harvey E., b. 29 Sept., 1855.

iv. Orrin, b. 15 Oct., 1814; d. unm. 2 May, 1845.

v. Almira, b. 24 Apr., 1816; d. 26 Apr., 1894; m. 24 Oct., 1844, James McLachlin.

Four children (McLachlin).

vi. Charles, b. 5 July, 1823; d. 1 Dec., 1883; m. (1) Betsey Clark, (2) Sarah Brown.

34. PHINEAS VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*William<sup>5</sup>, Abraham<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), farmer, of Peacham, Vt., born 9 June, 1783; died 11 Mar., 1863; married 7 Apr., 1811, Locada Blanchard of Peacham, Vt., born 24 Oct., 1792, died 20 Apr., 1855.

Eleven children:

48. i. Simon Blanchard, b. 6 May, 1812; m. Mary Cahill.

ii. Margaret, b. 1 Aug., 1814; d. 23 Aug., 1817.

iii. Sophronia, b. 3 July, 1816; m. 21 Mar., 1839, James Clark of Marathon, Ia.

Three children (Clark):

Sophronia, b. 13 Mar., 1841; d. 5 Mar., 1842.

Mary Locada.

Thomas George.

49. iv. William, b. 13 Jan., 1818; m. Elizabeth A. Kimball.

50. v. Jacob Guy, b. 14 Mar., 1820; m. Jemima Gilfillan.

vi. George, b. 16 Mar., 1822; d. 25 Jan., 1876; m. 16 June, 1846, Harriet Brown.

vii. Phineas, b. 21 Sept., 1824; d. 26 Mar., 1825.

51. viii. Mark, b. 19 June, 1826; m. Mary Gilfillan.

52. ix. Harvey Blanchard, b. 28 Apr., 1828; m. Carrie E. Bickford.

53. x. Benjamin Franklin, b. 7 Apr., 1832; m. (1) Marietta E. Gilfillan, (2) Clara M. Lawrence.

xi. Margaret Sarah, b. 10 Feb., 1835; d. 16 May, 1906; m. 13 Dec., 1859, Duncan C. Harvey of Peacham, Vt.

Five children (Harvey) :

Lou Ella.  
George B. McClellan.  
Nellie May.  
Etta Elvira.  
Charles D.

35. JOSIAH VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*James,<sup>5</sup> James,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), farmer, of Candia, N. H., born 5 Mar., 1781; died 23 Dec., 1826; married 27 May, 1802, Lucy Rowe of Candia, N. H., born 15 Feb., 1784, died 16 May, 1857.

Twelve children:

- i. Lydia,<sup>7</sup> b. 9 Aug., 1802; d. 5 Apr., 1857; m. 3 Oct., 1830, Luther Stearns of Lexington, Mass.  
Four children (Stearns), who died young.
- 54. ii. Moses, b. 23 May, 1804; m. Climenia Anderson.
- iii. Dolly, b. 10 Apr., 1806; d. unm. 21 May, 1861.
- iv. Anne, b. 26 May, 1808; d. 26 Dec., 1883; m. Daniel Stearns of Lincoln, Mass.
- v. Jonathan, b. 23 July, 1811; d. unm. 30 Mar., 1847.
- vi. Polly, b. 11 July, 1813; m. Ichabod Dean of Lowell, Mass.
- vii. Lyman, b. 16 Sept., 1815; d. 25 Aug., 1818.
- viii. James, b. 1 Nov., 1817; m. Susan Bickford of Sheffield, Vt.
- ix. Lyman, b. 7 Sept., 1820; d. 8 Dec., 1840.
- x. Susan, b. 7 Mar., 1822; m. Isaac Sawyer of Lowell, Mass.
- 55. xi. George Washington, b. 3 June, 1824; m. Lucy P. Cram.
- xii. Betsey Jane, b. 24 Nov., 1825; d. unm. 5 June, 1881.

36. RICHARD SALTONSTALL VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*John,<sup>6</sup> Parker,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 12 April, 1817; died 26 Dec., 1880; married (1) 18 Feb., 1844, Sarah Potter of Jonesville, Mich., born 19 April, 1825, died 7 Sept., 1845. No issue. Married (2) 29 Jan., 1854, Harriet Champlin of Jonesville, Mich., born 24 March, 1832, died 23 Oct., 1904.

Three children:

56. i. Grosvenor Chanplin,<sup>6</sup> m. Ida M. Benner.  
ii. Freeland Gardner, m. Sarabel G. Kelsey.  
57. iii. Edward Chanplin, m. Mary A. Carr.

RICHARD SALTONSTALL VARNUM was born in Haverhill, Mass., and was educated at Phillips Exeter Academy, N. H., where he was a student in 1833. At an early age he settled in Niles, Mich., where he became a druggist. Afterwards he moved to Jonesville, in the same State, where he married his two wives. His sons continue their father's business there under the name of R. S. Varnum's Sons.

37. JOHN PARKER VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Parker*,<sup>6</sup> *Parker*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 17 Jan., 1828; died 13 July, 1871; married 6 Aug., 1855, Ervilla Dutton of Francestown, N. H., born 13 Jan., 1829.

Two children:

- i. Frederick F.,<sup>8</sup> b. 19 Apr., 1857.  
ii. George A., b. 25 Oct., 1858.

JOHN PARKER VARNUM was born in Draentt, and went to Peterborough, N. H., in 1838 with his father's family, he being then 10 years old. In early manhood he purchased and lived on land of Capt. Robert Swan.

38. CHARLES HENRY VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Parker, Jr.*,<sup>6</sup> *Parker*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), farmer, Peterborough, N. H., born 8 June, 1837; married 23 Sept., 1858, Mary Jane Davis of Hancock, N. H.

One child:

- i. Charles Edwin,<sup>8</sup> b. 25 July, 1861.

39. EDWARD PAYSON VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Jonas, Jr.*,<sup>6</sup> *Jonas*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *John*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), married 27 Oct., 1864, Martha Jane,

daughter of Capt. Woodbury and Sarah (Dustin) Storer of Derry, N. H.

One child:

58. i. William Bentley,<sup>8</sup> m. Harriet F. VanR. Crosby.

EDWARD PAYSON VARNUM lives in Waltham, and is a harness maker.

40. WILLIAM PARKER VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*William Parker,<sup>6</sup> Jonas,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 27 Sept., 1846; died 26 Aug., 1896; married 10 March, 1869, Martha Butler, daughter of William and Louise Kilbourn of Boscawen, N. H.

Two children:

- i. Mary Louise,<sup>9</sup> b. 23 Oct., 1869; d. 26 Aug., 1900.
- ii. Joseph Parker, m. 25 Oct., 1905, Jennie Maria, dau. of Darius S. and Maria B. (Morgan) Fox of New London, N. H.

WILLIAM PARKER VARNUM was born in that part of Dracutt now annexed to Lowell. Upon his marriage to Martha Butler Kilburn of Boscawen, N. H., he brought his bride to the old house built by Jonas Varnum, the Revolutionary soldier, in 1781. Nathaniel Varnum, son of Jonas, was then living in the house which is located on the "Shatswell-Varnum" purchase. This house was bequeathed to William Parker Varnum. Mr. Varnum was for several years a member of the School Board of the town of Dracutt, and at the time of his decease Chairman of the Board of Selectmen. He was a man of excellent education, of wide reading, and of the highest integrity. His personal influence was great, and his personal attributes endeared him to his neighbors not alone in his native town, but also to many in the contiguous city of Lowell. His untimely early death was a loss in which the community suffered with his immediate family.

He was buried in the Oakland cemetery, Dracutt.

41. JOHN VARNUM, JR.,<sup>7</sup> (*John,<sup>6</sup> Jonas,<sup>5</sup> Jonas,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 5 Dec., 1787; died 6 Oct., 1822; married Abby, daughter of Capt. Getchell of Marblehead, died 7 Nov., 1823, aged 27.

One child:

- i. William,<sup>8</sup> b. 27 Aug., 1819; d. 28 Feb., 1902; m. 31 Oct., 1878, Henrietta A., dau. of Waite and Almira H. (Peek) Lowrey of Brooklyn, N. Y. No issue.

JOHN VARNUM was born in Pepperell, and attended school at Groton Academy in the year 1804. He afterwards studied medicine in his native town under the tuition of Dr. John Walton. He was married as early as 1818. He settled and continued the practice of his profession at Lyons, N. Y., up to the time of his decease, at the early age of 35. A monument is erected to his memory and that of his wife at Lyons.

42. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Jonas Spaulding,<sup>6</sup> Jonas, Jr.,<sup>5</sup> Jonas,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 4 Dec., 1815; died 11 Feb., 1901; married 16 June, 1842, Betsey B. Tucker of Pepperell, born 7 Sept., 1819, died 13 March, 1896.

Three children:

- i. William Francis,<sup>9</sup> m. 15 June, 1871, Mary B. Alden of Atkinson, N. H.
- ii. Charles James, b. 28 Dec., 1847; d. 21 July, 1848.
- iii. Harriet Ann, m. 5 June, 1901, Nathaniel Lakin of Pepperell.

JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM was a farmer, and resided on the paternal acres of the fourth generation in Pepperell.

43. CYRUS VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Jonathan,<sup>6</sup> Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), farmer, of Blue Hill, Me., born 19 April, 1805; died 25 Nov., 1848; married 25 Sept., 1836, Emma W. Osgood, of Blue Hill, Me., born 9 Aug., 1808, died 21 June, 1881.

## Five children:

59. i. Frank Benjamin,<sup>8</sup> m. Mattie A. Pierson.  
 ii. Harriet Louisa.  
 iii. Sarah Elizabeth, b. 17 May, 1842; d. 16 Jan., 1900; m. Alvin B., son of Daniel and Nancy (Cole) Allen of North Sedgwick, Me.

## Four children (Allen):

- Addie Fletcher.  
 Sarah Helen, m. Thomas, seventh in descent from George Varnum.  
 iv. John Gage, b. 25 Nov., 1843.  
 v. Cyrus David, b. 15 Sept., 1847.

44. WILLIAM VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Abraham<sup>6</sup> William<sup>5</sup> Abraham<sup>4</sup> John<sup>3</sup> Samuel<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 26 Jan., 1793, at Peacham, Vt.; he became a lawyer, and was admitted to practice at Danville, Vt.; died 2 June, 1841, at Lake Mills, Wis.; married 22 Jan., 1837, Mehitable, daughter of Samuel and Mehitable Chandler of Pomfret, Vt., born 10 Feb., 1810.

## Four children:

60. i. Hiram Chandler,<sup>8</sup> b. 11 Mar., 1838; m. Agnes Armstrong.  
 ii. Julia, b. 16 Oct., 1839; d. 4 Aug., 1841.  
 iii. Franklin, b. 27 July, 1841; d. 27 July, 1841.  
 iv. Benjamin Franklin, b. 20 Aug., 1842; m. Kate Pickell. He is a civil engineer. In 1861, when 18 years of age, he enlisted in an Iowa regiment, and served three years. He was in the famous Army of the Cumberland, and with Sherman from Atlanta to the sea.

45. ASA VARNUM,<sup>7</sup> (*Abraham<sup>6</sup> William<sup>5</sup> Abraham<sup>4</sup> John<sup>3</sup> Samuel<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 3 May, 1806, at Peacham, Vt.; died 25 Dec., 1861; married 1 March, 1832, Laura Prescott Wyman of Lowell, daughter of John Wyman of Ashby and Eunice Prescott Hildrith, his wife, of Concord, born 1807, died Dec., 1860.

## Four children:

61. i. Franklin Wyman Hildrith,<sup>8</sup> m. Julia Craytey.  
 ii. John Abram, b. 1834; d. in infancy.  
 iii. Sidney, b. 1836; d. in infancy.  
 iv. John, b. 1841; d. 1843.

ASA VARNUM was born in Peacham, Vt. After his marriage he went to New York city, where he entered into mercantile pursuits. He became a merchant in Brooklyn, N. Y., in his later years. He was a man of great stature, being over six feet in height. He is described as a man of proud disposition, very dignified in manner—of strong domestic tastes, devotedly attached to his wife and the one son who was spared him out of a family of four children. He survived his wife but one year, dying of rheumatism of the heart.

46. JOHN VARNUM, JR.<sup>7</sup> (*John,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John;  
 Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 26 Dec., 1806, at Peacham, Vt., where he was a farmer; died 5 Aug., 1880; married 26 April, 1832, Fatima, daughter of Jonas and Mary (Chappel) Robbins, born 8 July, 1811, died 8 Oct., 1878.

## Twelve children:

- i. Electa Isadore,<sup>9</sup> b. 29 Apr., 1833; d. 19 July, 1867; m. 1 Jan., 1862, Fowler S. Ford.

Two children (Ford):

- Elmer S., b. 25 Jan., 1863.  
 Jonas Varnum, d. 28 June, 1867.

62. ii. John, Jr., b. 11 Jan., 1835; m. Frances M. Hand.

- iii. Mary Eliza, b. 28 July, 1836; d. 21 Mar., 1841.

63. iv. Leonard Robbins, b. 19 July, 1838; m. (1) Lucy I. Colston, (2) Harriet S. Gates.

- v. Hannah Sylvia, b. 25 Dec., 1840; d. 22 Apr., 1878; m. Hiram A. Sanborn.

- vi. Jonas Galusha, b. 6 June, 1843; d. 17 July, 1863.

- vii. Charles Payne, b. 6 June, 1843; d. 23 Jan., 1865.

Both these twin brothers enlisted in Co. G, 15th Vermont Volunteers, 16 Sept., 1862, for nine months' service in the war for the Union. They were mustered out at the end of this term, in 1863. The former was incapacitated for further service; the latter re-enlisted in the cavalry service, 11 Aug., 1864. He was taken prisoner 7 Oct., 1864, and died in Libby Prison 23 Jan., 1865.

Their names are inscribed on the Soldiers' Monument at Peacham, Vt.

- viii. George Alonzo, b. 9 Apr., 1846; d. 18 Nov., 1862.
- ix. Georgiana, b. 9 Apr., 1846; d. 15 Nov., 1862.
- x. Eugene Murray, b. 19 Oct., 1848; d. 25 Oct., 1862.
- xi. Mary Martha, b. 28 Aug., 1850; d. 29 Oct., 1862.
- xii. Flora Fatima, b. 28 Aug., 1850; d. 9 Oct., 1850.

**47. FRANKLIN VARNUM<sup>7</sup>** (*John,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 15 Oct., 1809; died 8 Sept., 1880; married 12 June, 1845, Betsey, daughter of Nathaniel and Clarissa (Porter) Harvey of Peacham, Vt., born 2 June, 1819, died 8 April, 1899.

Nine children:

- i. Clara E.,<sup>8</sup> b. 26 May, 1848; d. 28 Dec., 1855.
- ii. Martha A., b. 21 June, 1850; d. 28 Nov., 1855.
- iii. Mary E., b. 2 July, 1852; d. 28 Nov., 1855.
- iv. Laura, b. 6 Sept., 1854; m. 26 Apr., 1893, Charles F. McLachlin.
- v. Julia, b. 8 Feb., 1857; m. 30 Jan., 1878, William W. Somers.
- vi. Bessie, b. 2 Feb., 1859.
- vii. Sarah, b. 24 July, 1861; d. 5 Mar., 1879.
- viii. Esther, b. 6 Nov., 1863; d. 1 Jan., 1865.
- ix. Alice, b. 23 Oct., 1866; d. 2 Mar., 1879.

FRANKLIN VARNUM was a successful farmer in his native town, and in his chosen pursuit accumulated a handsome property. He was a man of superior judgment and of great probity.

of character. Of his remarkable family of nine children, all daughters, three died in 1855, and two in early youth.

48. SIMON BLANCHARD VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 6 May, 1812; died 16 Nov., 1867; married 31 July, 1836, Mary Cahill.

Two children:

- i. Jane Mary,<sup>8</sup> b. 6 May, 1837; m. 23 Jan., 1862, Mark Bovee of Greenmount, Ia.
- ii. Simon Blanchard, b. 6 Aug., 1843.

49. WILLIAM VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 15 Jan., 1818; died 10 July, 1869; married 2 Dec., 1845, Elizabeth A., daughter of Isaac and Elizabeth (Fellows) Kimball of Peacham, Vt., born 15 Feb., 1823, died 24 Sept., 1893.

Five children, all born in Peacham:

- 64. i. Clark,<sup>8</sup> b. 24 Sept., 1846; m. (1) Ella Shipley, (2) Irene Galloway, (3) E. Belle Tuttle.
- ii. Isaac Kimball, b. 26 Nov., 1848.
- iii. Phineas George, b. 22 Oct., 1850.
- iv. Lydia Jane, b. 18 Sept., 1852; d. 25 Jan., 1883; m. 18 May, 1879, H. S. Falkenburg of Harvard, Neb.

One child (Falkenburg):

- v. Lydia, b. 23 Jan., 1883.
- vi. Lizzie Sophronia, b. 4 June, 1864; m. in Brooklyn, Ia., 31 May, 1900, Thomas J. Braden of Beaver Falls, Pa., b. 23 Aug., 1856.

WILLIAM VARNUM became an extensive farmer near Maleom, Iowa, whither he went from Peacham in February, 1865. When, in 1830, the Masons disbanded in Vermont because of the "Morgan trouble," they presented their Bible to the Methodist society of Peacham. Some of the narrow-minded anti-

Masonic members of that society regarded the sacred volume as having somehow become tainted from its association. They, therefore, refused to have it preached from, and young Varnum, then a youth of 12 years, was put through the window of the meeting house to obtain the book, which mysteriously thereafter disappeared. He was a man of strong religious principles, and it may be, this act into which he was led, had an influence for good in his after years. He was a very honorable, upright man, and justly held in high esteem by all who knew him.

50. JACOB GUY VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 14 March, 1820; died 5 Jan., 1884; married 2 March, 1850, Jemima, daughter of William and Isabel (Morrison) Gilfillan of Ryegate, Vt., born 16 July, 1829.

Three children:

- 65. i. Harvey William,<sup>8</sup> m. Abby L. Stanton.
- ii. Henry James, b. 7 Dec., 1854; d. 7 Oct., 1857.
- 66. iii. Byron Guy, m. Estella Dole.

JACOB GUY VARNUM was a farmer in Danville, Vt. He was a good citizen, and was chosen by his fellow townsmen to the various offices of the town. He accumulated a good property, and was respected by all.

51. MARK VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 19 June, 1826; married 1 June, 1857, at Osceola, Ill., Mary, daughter of William and Isabel (Morrison) Gilfillan of Ryegate, Vt., born 1829, died 30 Aug., 1862.

One child:

Frederic Stevens,<sup>8</sup> b. 18 Dec., 1855; m. Maggie A. McCall of Minneapolis, Minn.

52. HARVEY BLANCHARD VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 28 April, 1828; married 17 Dec., 1861, Carrie E. Bickford.

Four children:

- i. Phineas Isaac Keyes,<sup>8</sup> b. 31 Oct., 1863.
- ii. Charles Bickford, b. 20 Sept., 1865.
- iii. Mary Locada, b. 29 Jan., 1871.
- iv. Carrie Emily, b. 28 Aug., 1873.

53. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 7 April, 1832; married (1) Marietta E. Gilfillan. No issue. Married (2) 21 Jan., 1869. Clara M. Lawrence.

Two children:

- i. George Lawrence,<sup>9</sup> b. 6 Feb., 1872.
- ii. Frederic C., b. 16 Aug., 1875.

54. MOSES VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Josiah,<sup>6</sup> James,<sup>5</sup> James,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 23 May, 1804; died 16 May, 1869; married 18 Oct., 1832, Climenia Anderson. He was a farmer at Candia, N. H.

One child:

Webster,<sup>6</sup> b. 10 May, 1839; m. Sarah A. Lang.

55. GEORGE WASHINGTON VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Josiah,<sup>6</sup> James,<sup>5</sup> James,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 23 June, 1824, at Candia, N. H.; died 26 May, 1881, at Lowell, Mass.; married Lucy P. Cram of Candia. He was a painter.

Two children:

- i. Madilla F.,<sup>8</sup> b. 14 Dec., 1858.
- ii. Wilbert Francis, b. 9 Mar., 1862.

56. GROSVENOR CHANPLIN VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Richard Saltonstall,<sup>7</sup> John,<sup>6</sup> Parker,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*). He is of the firm of R. S. Varnum Sons, drugs and books, Jonesville, Mich., succeeding their father in business. Married 25 May, 1881,

Ida M., daughter of Milton and Andora Benner of Jonesville, Mich.

One child:

Harriet Chanplin, m. 14 June, 1905, J. H. Wickman.

57. EDWARD CHANPLIN VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Richard Saltonstall<sup>7</sup>, John<sup>6</sup>, Parker<sup>5</sup>, John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*). He and his two brothers, Grosvenor C. and Freeland G. Varnum, make up the firm of R. S. Varnum Sons, Jonesville, Mich. Married 27 Oct., 1885, Mary A., daughter of Henry T. and Maria Carr of Jonesville, Mich.

Three children:

- i. Fannie M.,<sup>9</sup> b. 19 Apr., 1888; d. 25 Apr., 1905.
- ii. Richard S., b. 28 Oct., 1890.
- iii. Henry C., b. 4 July, 1897.

58. WILLIAM BENTLEY VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Edward Payson<sup>7</sup>, Jonas, Jr.<sup>6</sup>, Jonas<sup>5</sup>, John<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 8 Nov., 1868; resides at Albany, N. Y.; employed at the observatory; married 26 March, 1896, Harriet VanR. Crosby, daughter of Frederick M. and Sarah J. (Atter) Fink of Albany, N. Y.

Three children:

- i. Marianne Jane,<sup>9</sup> b. 22 Nov., 1896.
- ii. William Bentley, b. 6 May, 1899; d. 13 Aug., 1899.
- iii. Edward Chester, b. 13 June, 1901.

59. FRANK BENJAMIN VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Cyrus<sup>7</sup>, Jonathan<sup>6</sup>, Jonathan<sup>5</sup>, Abraham<sup>4</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born at Blue Hill, Me.; a stock raiser at Vinland, Kan.. He went to Kansas in 1856; was an active participant in the early anti-slavery troubles there; was at the battles of Black Fork, Franklin and Topeka when the Legislature was dispersed by Gen. Sumner. He enlisted for the war in 1861, in Co. B, 9th Kansas Volun-



Committee of Vigilance of San Francisco

Franklin W. Varnum.

Enrolled in 25th COMPANY

C. C. Colburn  
Franklin W. Varnum Jr.





teers, and was discharged 15 Dec., 1865; married 14 Sept., 1865, Mattie A. Pierson.

Seven children:

- i. John Gage,<sup>9</sup> b. 18 Feb., 1867; d. 18 Mar., 1867.
- ii. Annie Emma, b. 20 Mar., 1869.
- iii. Hattie Ellen, b. 10 Mar., 1870.
- iv. Martha Belle, b. 9 Feb., 1872.
- v. Frank Louis, b. 10 Aug., 1874.
- vi. Charles Edwin, b. 6 Sept., 1876.
- vii. Sarah Cutter, b. 10 June, 1881.

60. HIRAM CHANDLER VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*William,<sup>7</sup> Abraham,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 11 March, 1838, at Peacham, Vt.; lives at Clements, Kan; a stock raiser; married 27 Dec., 1867, at Danville, Vt., Agnes Armstrong of Glasgow, Scotland, born 16 March, 1838.

Two children:

- i. William Wallace,<sup>9</sup> b. 8 May, 1878.
- ii. Samuel Chandler, b. 23 June, 1882.

61. FRANKLIN WYMAN HILDRETH VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Asa,<sup>7</sup> Abraham,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 26 Nov., 1832; died in 1862; married Julia, daughter of Alphonse and Mary (Keller) Craytey of Paris, France, born 22 Oct., 1837, died 7 Feb., 1902.

Two children:

- i. May.<sup>9</sup>
- ii. Franklin Martenett, b. 9 Sept., 1862; m. Jennie Stevens.

FRANKLIN WYMAN HILDRETH VARNUM went to California in 1854; bought property in San Francisco, and established a bookselling and publishing business. He had previously to that been fairly successful in the gold fields of that State. He was an active member of the Vigilance Committee during

the lawless time of the early days of San Francisco. In 1858, he married Julia Craytey of Brooklyn, N. Y., and settled in Georgetown, S. C., where he became a dry goods merchant, but was obliged to relinquish his business because of the Southern sentiment of disunion and the hostility against Northerners. In 1862, he again departed for California, but left behind his family because of the disturbed state of the country. He never reached his destination, and it was supposed that he was slain on the overland journey by desperadoes or Indians.

62. JOHN VARNUM, JR.<sup>8</sup> (*John,<sup>7</sup> John,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 11 Jan., 1835; died 17 April, 1903; married 16 Oct., 1862, Frances M., daughter of Backus and Elizabeth J. (Peak) Hand.

Five children:

- i. Thaddeus Stevens,<sup>9</sup> b. 23 Jan., 1863; m. Minna Humphrey.
- ii. Jenuette, b. 29 Oct., 1865.
- iii. Jessie, b. 27 Sept., 1869.
- iv. John Hand, b. 18 Jan., 1871.
- v. Ernest E., b. 22 Jan., 1877; d. 14 Jan., 1883.

JOHN VARNUM, JR., was a merchant in Peacham, Vt. On 4 Nov., 1864, he was chosen town clerk, and in Sept., 1874, he was made town treasurer, which office he held until 1889. He represented his native town one year in the State Legislature of Vermont. In 1897, he was attacked with paralysis, from which he was a helpless invalid until his death in 1903.

63. LEONARD ROBBINS VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*John,<sup>7</sup> John,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), married 12 July, 1871, Mrs. Lucy I. Colston, daughter of Nathaniel and Sophia (Powers) Kilburn of Hartford, Vt., born 12 July, 1833, died 9 April, 1895.

One child:

Nellie A.,<sup>9</sup> m. 13 Dec., 1899, Chester C. Edwards.

He married (2) 13 Jan., 1900, Mrs. Harriet S. Gates, daughter of Harry and Lucinda (Preston) Robinson of Strafford, Vt.

64. CLARK VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*William,<sup>7</sup> Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born in Peacham, Vt.; a practising lawyer in Chicago; married (1) 29 Sept., 1870, Ella, daughter of George W. and Malinda M. (Simsabaugh) Shipley of Montezuma, Ia., born 15 Mar., 1851, died 3 Nov., 1890.

Two children, born at Newton, Ia.:

- i. Lulu May,<sup>9</sup> b. 6 May, 1874.
- ii. Blanche, b. 27 Sept., 1876.

He married (2) 9 Aug., 1893, Irene, daughter of John and Laura A. (Scudder) Galloway of New Boston, Ill., born 18 May, 1862, died 28 Oct., 1901.

Two children:

- i. Clark Shipley, b. 31 Mar., 1894.
- ii. Laurent K., b. 31 Oct., 1895.

He married (3) 8 June, 1902, E. Belle, daughter of Samuel R. and Sarah A. (Vorhies) Tuttle of Hamilton, Me.

65. HARVEY WILLIAM VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Jacob Guy,<sup>7</sup> Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*). He is a civil engineer, road master and contractor for railroad work. Resides at Jeffersonville, Vt. Married 6 Jan., 1876, Abby L., daughter of Jeremiah and Betsey M. (Hill) Stanton of Danville, Vt.

One child:

Guy Robert.<sup>9</sup>

66. BYRON GUY VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Jacob Guy,<sup>7</sup> Phineas,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*). He is a farmer,

and lives on the home-farm of his father, Jacob Guy, which has been his since 1851, in Danville, Vt.; married 24 March, 1883, Estella J., daughter of Joel M. and Jane (Nutting) Dole of Danville, Vt.

One child:

Mary Dole.<sup>9</sup>

67. FRANKLIN MARTENETT VARNUM<sup>9</sup> (*Franklin Wyman Hildrith,<sup>8</sup> Asa,<sup>7</sup> Abraham,<sup>6</sup> William,<sup>5</sup> Abraham,<sup>4</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 9 Sept., 1862; died 4 Aug., 1891; married 15 Nov., 1882, Jennie, daughter of Robert and Elizabeth (Brown) Stephens of Ireland.

Four children:

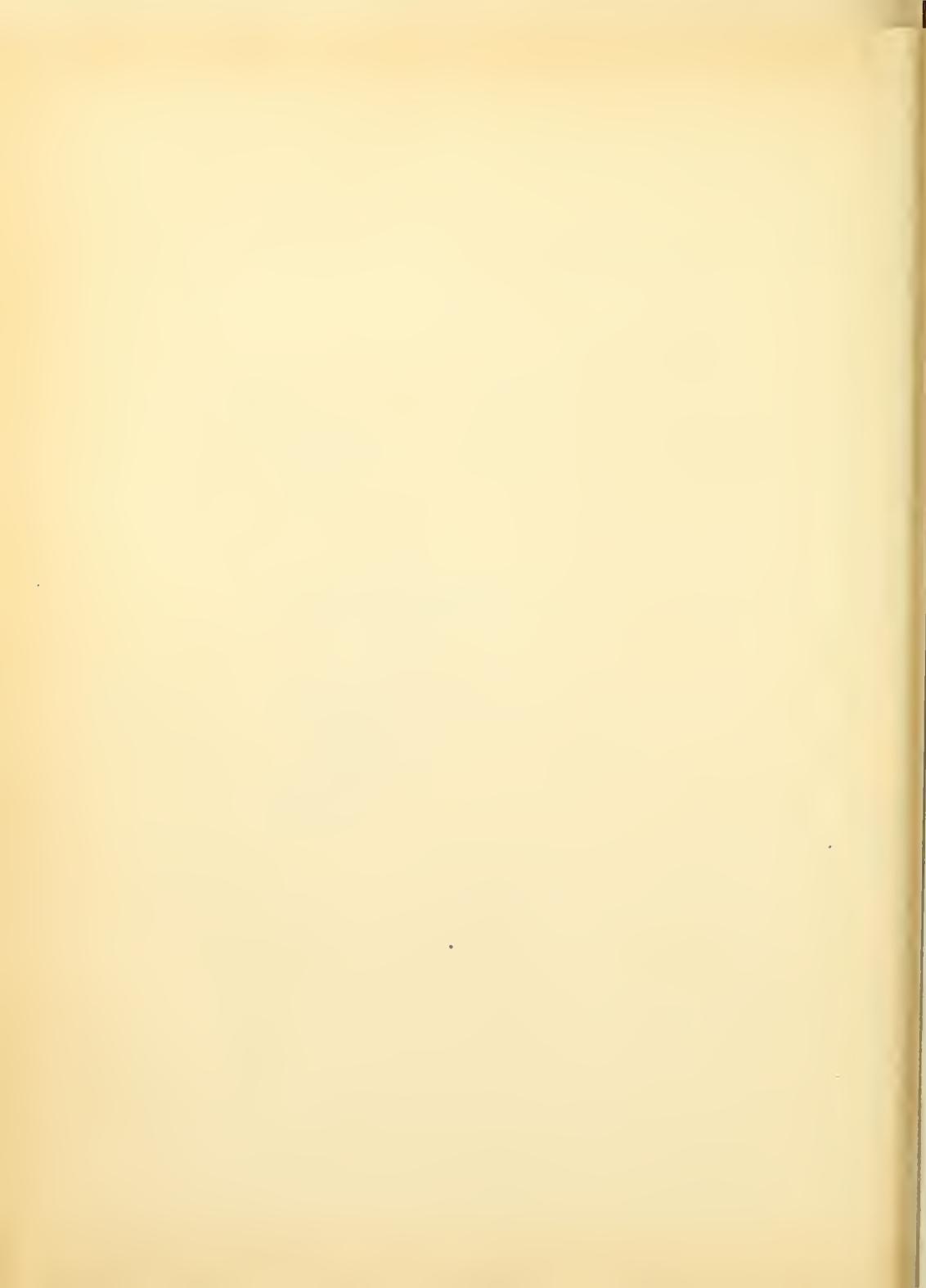
- i. Robert Monroe.<sup>10</sup>
- ii. Burton Wyman.
- iii. Ethel Stephens, m. 1895 Henry Buete of Washington, D. C.
- iv. John Cottrell.

FRANKLIN MARTENETT VARNUM married when 22 years old, and at the early age of 27 was a victim to the ravages of consumption. He had been employed in Brooklyn, N. Y., where he lived, in the wire rope and cable manufacturing business.

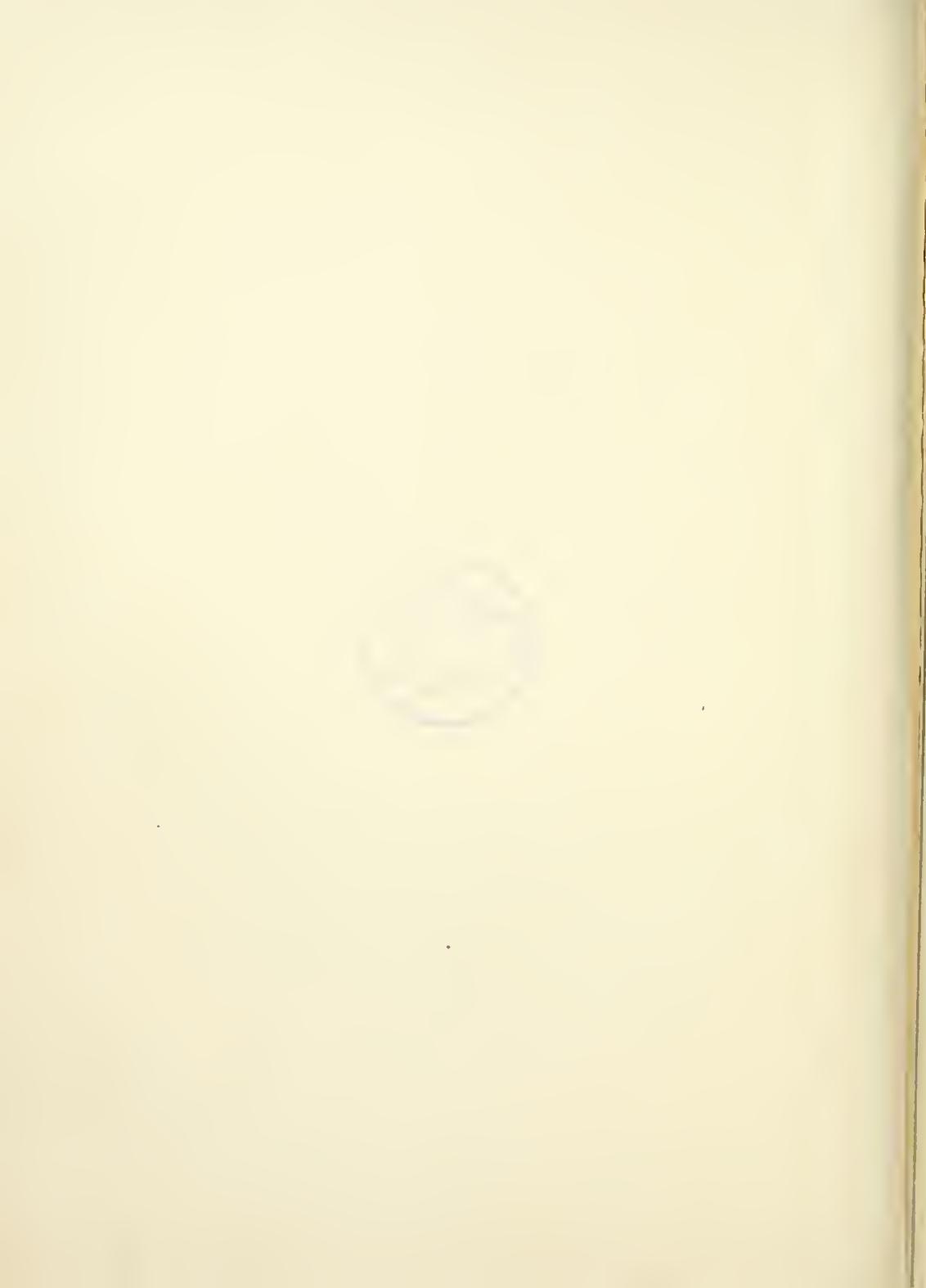
JOSEPH VARNUM.







HERE LYETH BURIED  
THE BODY OF MRS  
RUEH VARNUM  
WIFE OF COLOMEL  
SEP'H VARNUM  
WHO DYED NOV 17  
Y' = 25 1721 IN  
8: YEAR OF HER  
AGE



## FAMILY OF JOSEPH.

---

5. JOSEPH VARNUM<sup>3</sup> (*Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 15 March, 1672; died 23 Dec., 1749.

Among the very first entries in the records of Dracutt, commemorating an event which occurred many years previous, is this announcement, made by John Varnum, brother to Joseph, at that time Town Clerk: "Joseph Varnum & Ruth Jouett of Roully ware lawfully marrid in Octobear ye 3 day in the year 1697."

Ruth was the daughter of Capt. Joseph and Ruth (Wood) Jewett, and was born about 1681. Her tombstone in the little burial-ground, near the "Navy Yard" in Dracutt, adjoining the spot where for many years, up to 1900, stood the old Garrison House, the residence of Col. Joseph Varnum, which sheltered in times of apprehended or actual danger the early settlers of the neighborhood, recites:

Here lyes burried ye body of  
Mrs. Ruth Varnum  
wf of Colonel Joseph Varnum  
who dyed November ye 28, 1728,  
In ye -8 year of her age.

Seven children:

- i. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> b. 14 Dee., 1698; d. 30 Aug., 1731; m. 23 Feb., 1714-5, Samuel Platts of Rowley, b. 30 Jan., 1693-4.
- ii. Ruth, b. 5 Feb., 1702-3; m. 4 Dee., 1719, James, son of Thomas and Mary (Richardson) Colburn of Dracutt, who was born 31 Jan., 1689-90.

Five children (Colburn) :

James, b. 7 Nov., 1720.  
Thomas, b. 16 Aug., 1723.  
Thomas, b. 16 Dec., 1729.  
Ruth, b. 16 July, 1732.  
Sarah, b. 24 Apr., 1737.

100. iii. Joseph, Jr., b. 7 May, 1710; m. (1) Rachel Goodhue, (2) Abiah Mitchell, (3) Mrs. Anna Bowers.  
101. iv. Samuel, b. 21 Feb., 1714-15; m. (1) Mary Prime, (2) Hannah Mitchell.  
v. Deborah, b. 31 Dec., 1718; d. young.  
102. vi. John, b. 8 Sept., 1721; m. Anna Staule.  
vii. Mary, b. 6 July, 1723; m. Abel Platts of Rindge, N. H.

Josiah Richardson, T. C., records: "14 Dec 1743 Joseph Varnum Esq of Draenutt, entered with me his Intention of marriadge to Mrs. Mary Barron of Chelmsford."

She was the daughter of Isaiae and Mary (Adams) Barron. There was no issue to this second marriage, made when he was 71 years of age.

The honor and good faith of the man is shown by the following abstract from his will, made 16 Sept., 1746: "Whereas, before marriadge with my beloved wife Mary Varnum, I Cov-enanted with her that I would acquit all her Estate that she then owned by the Name of Mary Barron, and that I would not take or Reeeive any of her said Estate after marriadge with her, nor Demand any of her Right of Dower, that she might or could or would have either In possession or Reversion, and that she should have her Right of Dower or share in my personal Estate, as the Law Directs. I therefore leave the same to be settled to her according to Law."

No record can be found of the death of Mary Barron Varnum. She was buried by the side of Ruth Jewett Varnum, in the same little burial-ground, the foot-stone to her grave marked M V being the sole memorial of her final resting place.

There is this puzzling entry in the Draeutt town book: "Aug. 14, 1743. Deceased Gean wf of Collonel Joseph Varnum." The record of his intention of marriage to Mary Barron is Dec. 14, 1743, and it seems probable that the mistake arose from confusion of names. There is no evidence among family papers of the marriage of Col. Joseph Varnum to any but Ruth Jewett and Mary Barron, and in his will, made 1746, while he names all his children by Ruth, his first wife, and also makes special reference to Mary Barron, nothing is said of any other marriage. His second marriage was fifteen years after the death of Ruth, and after all his children had taken unto themselves helpmates, and probably gone from the family roof.

COL. JOSEPH VARNUM was the sixth son of Samuel and Sarah (Langton) Varnum, and the second child born to them after their settlement on the banks of the Merrimack. He was probably born on the Chelmsford side of river, as there was a garrison there in which his father was an officer, and the Indians were not friendly, four years after the birth of Joseph attacking the father and his two eldest boys as they were crossing the river in a boat, and slaying the latter. He was probably baptized in infaney, as was the custom in the early days of our God-fearing ancestors, at the Parish Chnrch in Chelmsford. After the King Philip War, about 1676, when peace came to settlers in New England, the family took up their residence in "Draweutt upon Mirrimack," the domain purchased of John Evered als Webb, their dwelling being on the land and adjacent to the house now owned and occupied by Thomas Varnum, a lineal descendant of Thomas, brother to Joseph, about a mile above Pawtucket Bridge. Here with the Cobournes and Richardsons they formed a community, which thrived and prospered, until in 1702 it was strong enough to become a township, by authority of the General Court.

He was chosen the first delegate from Dracutt, to represent his town at the Great and General Court of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. In the town records appears this entry: "Aug. 9, 1721, Made choice of Capt. Joseph Varnum to serve as representative of the Great & General Court," while under the entry in his own script is the following acceptance and agreement to serve: "This aforesaid ye Representative then chosen, doth engage to serve for the town at the Grate & Jenoral Cort the year ensuing upon free cost to the Town.

Witness my hand. JOSEPH VARNUM."\*

He was also chosen as representative in 1722.

His name appears in the records of the members of the General Court in 1721 with the title of Captain, and in 1722 with that of Major.

There is a muster roll in the Massachusetts Archives (vol. 91, p. 57) signed by Joseph Varnum, Sergt. It is a roll of a company on scout to Haverhill 13 $\frac{1}{4}$  weeks, from Jan. 21 to Nov. 29, 1722. The signature is not that of Joseph Varnum, the subject of this sketch, who was at that date Major, and who under that title was chosen in 1722 to represent Dracutt at the General Court. It is that of a younger man. His son Joseph, afterwards a Major on his father's staff, was then twelve years

\* "Anno Regni Regis Georgio Octavo. At a Great & General Court Assembly for his Majestys Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, begun & held at Boston upon Wednesday, the twenty third day of August, 1721, being Convened by his Majestys writ: Benj: Lynde, Add: Davenport, Thomas Fitch and Edmund Quincy, Esqrs., by virtue of a Commission of Dedimus Potestatem from his Excellency the Governor, administered to the several Gentlemen returned from the Respective Towns to serve as their representatives in the Present General Assembly The oaths appointed by Act of Parliament to be taken Instead of the oath of allegiance & Supremacy and Caused them to repeat & subscribe The Test or Declaration and the oath of Abjuration In order to Qualify them to sit and Form their House."

The names of the Representatives for the several Towns are returned into the Secretary's office as follows, viz:

In the County of Middlesex, Dracutt, Captain Joseph Varnum,  
(with 93 others).

Massachusetts Court Rolls, p. 200.

SAMUEL SHUTE, Gov.

old, having been born in 1710. It could, therefore, not have been him.

It is probable that this was another Joseph Varnum, just as there was another John Varnum who lived in Concord, married Elizabeth Coburn May 26, 1724, and died Oct. 19, 1724, in the 29th year of his age, who cannot be identified as belonging to the Dracutt Varnums.

Parker Varnum, in his narrative, says he was Colonel of a troop of horse, and his sons Joseph, born 1710, and Samuel, born 1715, derived their titles as Major from service on the staff of their father. As evidence of his official recognition, there is on file in the State Archives of Massachusetts (vol. 102, leaf 149) a letter dated 21 April, 1741, addressed, among other officers, to Col. Varnum, written under the authority of the then Provincial Governor Jonathan Belcher,\* asking information "whether any officers in your regiment have in any ways encouraged the passing of the bills called the Land Bank or Manufactory Bills."†

He was a great landed proprietor in Dracutt, and the East Cambridge records from 1699 to 1743, contain numerous conveyances of his. One of the earliest acts of the town appears in this entry :

\* It is told of the same Col. Varnum that one hot, sultry day he was at work mowing in one of the fields of his numerous acres. He was clad *comfortably*—his shirt and his broad-rimmed straw hat covering his body. As neighbors were far apart and visitors few, it may be safely assumed that our early ancestors were not always in full regalia.

While thus busily engaged, not dreaming of any visit, at least, of ceremony, word was brought him that the Governor was close at hand on his way to make him a call.

The Colonel took a short cut to his house, not far off, on the double quick, hastily donned his military coat and chapeau, girt on his sword, and came out to receive the Governor in military state. Alas! in his hurry and excitement he had forgotten his knee-breeches and buckled shoes, and stood bare-legged before his Excellency.

† There was, at that date, an issuance of bills or promises to pay by a combination of landed proprietors, based on ownership of real estate,—the progenitor of the farm mortgage debentures of recent days. They were issued under no authority of law, and called for stern repression by the Provincial authorities, and brought much trouble finally to the authors who had to redeem their individual paper.

"Dracutt, Nov. 3, 1712. Samuel Prime,\* after our (order) is presented to yourself that the Selectmen of Dracutt have given, you have full liberty to sell to Joseph Varnum the said tract of land, that is below Mr. Winthrops farm. Some of it is above which is meddow, with all the privileges which belong to said Lott.

JOHN VARNUM,  
EBENEZER GOODHUE, } Selectmen."

This piece of land† must have contained upwards of 1500 acres, according to the plat of it, with the following endorsement thereon:

"Maj. Varnums Prime lot on ye northeast of Merrimack River with all ye divisions which were laid to it. Ye bounds were renewed all around it, and there was present Maj. Varnum, Capt. Hildreth, Ephraim Curtice, Doct John Barritte, Ebenezer Wright, Joseph Arnold, Ebenezer Frost.

Oct. 30, 1722.

SAMUEL DANFORTH, Surveyor."

Another piece of land bounded by Island Pond, in Pelham, N. H., was a part of Dracutt before the dismemberment of the town by the decree of King George the 2nd, in 1741. The plat is endorsed by Samuel Danforth, surveyor:

"Dracutt, Oct., 1729. This land was measured for Collo: Varnum and it contains about 580 acres. The bounds of it were shewed to me by Collo: Varnum who was one of the Committee that laid it out."

The homestead farm of Col. Joseph Varnum is set forth in his own handwriting, and is as follows:

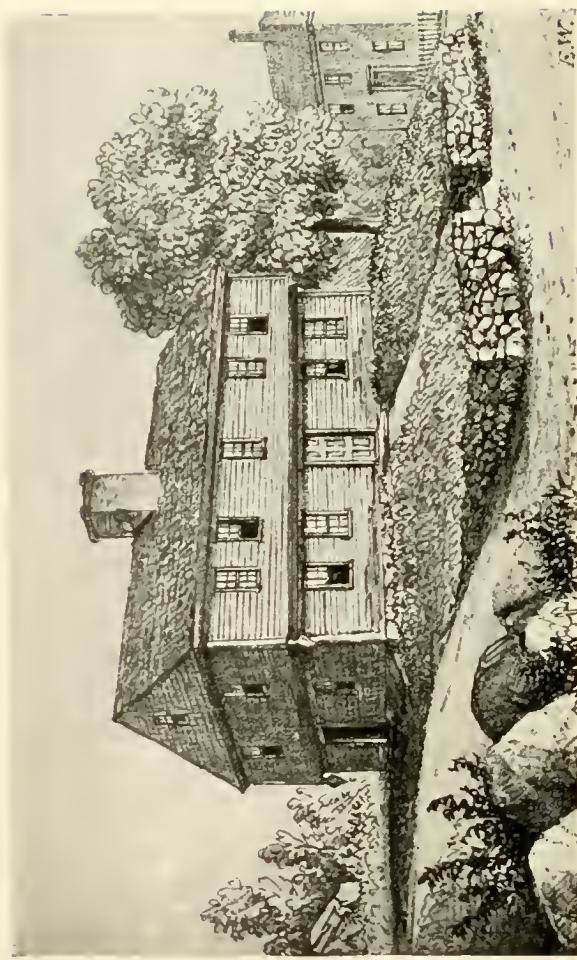
"These are the names of the men that have the Lotts in possession with the consent of the General Courts Committee, and some that have sold to others with the Consent of the Selectmen of the town. \* \* \* \* \* Samuel Prime, His Lot lies below Mr. Winthrops farme lying on ye River.

JOHN VARNUM,  
JOSEPH COLBURN,  
EBENEZER GOODHUE, } Selectmen."

Middlesex Records, Vol. xxvii., page 500.

† This land ran down the river from above Coburn's, now Richardson's brook, thence as far as Varnum's brook, thence north to "Higginson's Corner" (above Mr. Samuel Parker's), thence easterly to "Loon" Hill, and southerly to point of beginning. It was deeded to his son Samuel, and comprises a part of the farm occupied by Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum, his grandson, and is now owned by the compiler of this history.







THE OLD GARRISON HOUSE

*Built by and the residence of Col. Joseph Varnum  
Erected about 1710 Torn down in 1887*

"Draett, Oct. 29, 1722.

"I Joseph Varnum of Draett have renewed ye bounds of my farm that I now live on, bounded Southwestwardly by Merrimack river, and wardly by Beaver brook to a white oak tree marked and lettered which white oak stands 8½ rods from ye mouth of a little brook which is called Angillis brook, whence it runs into Beaver brook & from ye mouth of said brook southwestwardly, and I laid stones to said tree and then I run Northly up Benyer brook about 144 pole, and not finding the bound I made a heap of stones near said brook, then running westerly over a great rock with stones upon it to ye westerly line of ye farme, then I began at Merrimack river at a bunch of Elms with stones at them, which trees stand at ye great fishing falls, which is my west line. So running Northerly up a great hill to a black oak marked with stones at it, then partly down hill to black oak marked with stones at it, then running Northerly to a white oak crossing a swamp with marks and stones at it then running partly N<sup>o</sup>Westerly to a white oak on island with stones and then partly N<sup>o</sup>wardly crossing ye medow to a black oak marked with stones at it, and so running partly Northwest to ye end of ye farme with trees marked and stones at it.

"All these bounds I renewed by ye platt, and ye Covenant witness made between us brethren Thomas John & Joseph Varnum, under hand and seal with the assistance of Ebenezer Wright Joseph Arnold and Samuel Danforth Surveyor."

The aforesaid land was at the Draett "Navy Yrd," now so called, and fell to his son Maj. Joseph Varnum. On this farm was located one of the Garrison Houses of the town, the residence of Col. Joseph Varnum, which stood near to the banks of the Merrimack up to 1900. The town records recite, "Jan. 31, 1710. Voted to have a town stock of ammunition the same to be kept at Capt. Joseph Varnum's."

The "Great Bunt," or fishing place of the river, was in front of the Joseph Varnum farm. The proprietor shares in the Great Bunt were at one time forty-two. In 1735 Col. Joseph Varnum and his son Joseph, Jr., granted to the town of Dracut "liberty to pass over their land from the county road at the

great fishing falls at Pawtucket, reserving a place for catching & curing fish, extending from the place called the lower hole to the Old Bunting Place."

In 1736, according to Court Records (Vol. xiii., pp. 388), there was presented "a petition of Col. Joseph Varnum for a grant of a piece of Province land near the town of Dracut, Containing forty aeres (in consideration of the Petrs services and sufferings in the wars against the Indians)" which was granted. This adjoined the Prime purchase. This is the only record of a Grant from the Province of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in New England, made to an original proprietor of the town.

The will of Joseph Varnum made 16 Sept., 1746, three years prior to his decease, is filed at East Cambridge.

In it he mentions his wife Mary Barron; his daughters Sarah Plats, Ruth Coburn, and Mary Plats, who receive an equal share of his estate, and recites, "Whereas I have already Given to my three sons out of my Estate By Deeds to ye vallue of 1000£ (old tenor) to each of them, In full of their portion, I therefore do not Give them anything in this my Last Will." The dates of record of deeds by which conveyance is made to said sons are May 14, 1737, April 30 and May 30, 1743. He makes his eldest son Joseph his executor.

With this will is filed the inventory customary in his day, and is listed as follows :

1-st Wearing Apparill.

Imprimis :

A Blew Broadcloth & Jackit . . . . .	£22	0	0
A hat, lace & feather . . . . .	9	0	0
A Gray Broadcloth Coat & Breaches & a black Jackit .	14	0	0
A Blew woolen Coat, a Jackit & Breaches . . . . .	22	0	0
A Blew grage Coat 8£ 5 a gray Coat & Jackit 6£ .	14	5	0
An old Coat 20s a grage Coat & girdle 40s a hat 45s .	5	5	0

Gloves, Handkerchiefs, Weed & Wig 40s	Shirts & eaps 6£	8	0	0
Hose, Shoos & Shoo Buckels 7£ & Muff 15s	. .	7	15	0
A pare of pistols 9£ a Cain 25s	. . . .	10	5	0
A Neagro man servant named Cuff*	. . . .	320	0	0
A Neagro woman servant named Pegg	. . . .	230	0	0
which with various items of household furniture & utensils amounted to	. . . .	1492£	2	5

Colonel Varnum died nearly one hundred and sixty years ago, full of years and of honors. He was buried near where he lived in the little plat allotted by him as the burial place of himself and his descendants, and where lie the remains of many of his immediate family. In front stood the house built by him which served as a "Garrison House," and stood as a protection against the hostile Indians, close by what is now known as the "Navy Yard," where Beaver Brook has for many years furnished power for manufactures.

100. JOSEPH VARNUM, JR.<sup>4</sup> (*Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 7 May, 1710; died 26 Aug., 1783. He married (1) "May ye 25, 1739, Joseph Varnum, Jr., entered with me his Intention of marraigd to Rachel Goodhue, both of Dracutt."—John Varnum, T. C.

She was the daughter of Dea. Ebenezer and Mary Goodhue, and was born 28 June, 1719; died 16 March, 1746-7.

Four children:

- i. Rachel,<sup>5</sup> b. 21 Nov., 1740; m. (1) Int. 24 Sept., 1759, John Bowers; (2) William Bell.
- ii. Joseph, b. 16 Nov., 1741; d. 4 Aug., 1743.

\* Cuff is said to have been a very bright darkey and unusually shrewd. One day his master the Colonel got into a discussion about some matter with a neighbor, while Cuff stood by, listening with interest. Cuff gave some peculiar sort of a grunt, after the neighbor had made some assertion, at which the man became very indignant. "Do you think I am lying, Cuff?" he asked. "No Massa, I dosent say as I does, but you talk mighty like I does when I isn't speaking de troof."

There is in existence "a deed of sale by Thos Farmer & wife of Billere Mass of one certain neagro boy called Mingo, aged about nine months old to Joseph Varnum of Dracutt 1728."

- iii. Joseph, b. 3 Oct., 1743; d. 5 Oct., 1750.  
103. iv. Ebenezer, b. 23 Feb., 1744-5; m. (1) Sarah Butterfield;  
(2) Hannah Fox; (3) Eunice Bro.

He married (2) "Aug. 15, 1747, Maj. Joseph Varnum of Draeutt entered with me his Intention of Marriagd to Abiah Mitchell of Haverhill."—Josiah Richardson, T. C.

She was the daughter of Capt. James and Martha (Bradley) Mitehell, and sister to Hannah, second wife of his brother Samuel. She died 27 Dec., 1753.

## Four children:

- i. Abiah, b. 13 Nov., 1748; d. 30 Sept., 1750.  
 104. ii. Bradley, b. 19 Aug. 1750; m. Rachel Butterfield.  
 105. iii. Joseph, Jr., b. 1 May, 1752; m. Mary Coburn.  
 iv. Martha, b. 22 Dec., 1753; d. 3 Jan., 1754.

He married (3) (Int.) "17 Jan., 1761, Maj. Joseph Varnum entered with me his Intention of marriage to Widow Anna Bowers, both of Draett."—Ephm. Hildreth, T. C.

She was born 1707, died 26 Nov., 1778. She was the mother of John Bowers who married Raehel Varnum, as above. No issue.

He lived and died on the acres given him by his father, which was the homestead farm near to and bordering on Beaver brook in Dracutt, and opposite the Great Bunt or bend of the Merrimack, where it changes its course almost at right angle on its way to the sea. He was generally known as Major Joseph, which military title came from his position on the staff of his father. His domain embraced land along Beaver brook, where the "Navy Yard" now is, and down to where said brook enters the river, and from thence, up to Pawtucket falls. This was a part of the Shatswell-Varnum purchase, increased by land purchased by the Varnum brothers and subsequently conveyed by Thomas and John to Joseph.

Major Varnum was town clerk in 1765, and for many years treasurer of Dracut. John Varnum says in his journal : "Jan. 16, 1777, I . . . employed in Reckoning with the town treasurer, Maj: Joseph Varnum (a four years reckoning), and found 10 d in the Major's Favor." He was a man of great probity of character, of sterling integrity, and actively alive to the interests of the Country, at a time when, having been born a subject to Great Britain, he was called upon to support the cause of the Colonies. On the 16 Nov., 1776, there was held at his house at Dracut a "Convention of Agents from about 40 towns in Massachusetts and New Hampshire." Its object was, "to take into consideration the alarming situation of our Public affairs at this time, on account of the exorbitant prices that are demanded and taken in consideration for many of the necessities of life, by which means our paper money is daily depreciating in value, and the mechanic and laborer very much disturbed by the extortion of the merchant, tradesman, farmer and others, whereby many good and valuable men are much discouraged from engaging in the service of these States to the great damage of the Continental army, on which, under God, the future safety and well-being very much depends."

The action of the Convention resulted in a petition being placed before the Legislatures of Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Connecticut, Rhode Island and the Providence Plantations. The committee appointed by the respective Legislatures was made up of Hons. Thos: Cushing, Tristam Dalton, Azor Orne for Massachusetts; Hons. Eliphalet Dyer, Richard Law, Titus Hosmer, Nathaniel Wales for Connecticut; Stephen Hopkins, William B. Bradford, Henry Ward for Rhode Island and the Providence Plantations — all men of prominence and ability, and one of them a signer of the Declaration of Independence. The committee met at Providence 25 Dec., 1776, and adjourned to 2d Jan., 1777. No record appears of any

adjustment or solution of the financial trouble, which was inherent with the times. In the New Hampshire Historical Society is the manuscript journal of the proceedings.

He was buried in the garrison house burial ground, in the Varnum family range, at the ripe old age of 83.

101. SAMUEL VARNUM, JR.<sup>4</sup> (*Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 21 Feb., 1714-5; died 17 April, 1797; married "4 Jan., 1736-7. Samuel Varnum then marred To Mary Prime, both of Dracutt. The said Mary Deeeased on the 8 June, 1737, and the said Samuel was marred to Hannah Mitchell of Haverhill ye 26 Oct., 1738." (Dracutt T. R.)

Mary Prime was the daughter of Samnel Prime of Ipswich, who held one of the first grants in "ye wilderness," afterward bonght by Col. Joseph Varnum, the father of Samuel, and known as the "Prime purchase." Samnel Prime married Sarah, and Col. Joseph Varnum, Rnfh Jewett, sisters, of Ipswich.

*512.17* ~ Hannah Mitchell, born 1721, died July, 1795, was the daughter of Capt. James and Martha (Bradley) Mitchell of Haverhill, and sister to Abiah, wife of Maj. Joseph, brother to Samuel. From these two unions came the name of Bradley, so frequently, down to the present generation, appearing with the Varnum name. In the family of Samuel and Hannah first appears the double name.

Twelve children:

- i. Mary, <sup>5</sup> b. 1 Jan., 1739-40; d. 2 Dec., 1746.
- ii. James, b. 5 Dec., 1741; d. 7 Jan., 1746-7.
- iii. Hannah, b. 1 Nov., 1744; d. 1 Jan., 1746-7.
- 106. iv. Samuel, b. 17 Feb., 1746-7; m. Mary Parker.
- v. James Mitchell, b. 17 Dec., 1748; m. Martha Child.
- 107. vi. Joseph Bradley, b. 29 Jan., 1749-50; m. Molly Butler.<sup>6</sup>
- 108. vii. Hannah, b. 24 Feb., 1753; d. 27 Nov., 1806; m. (int.) 9 July, 1772, Josiah Hildreth, Jr.

viii. Mary, b. 6 May, 1755; m. (int.) 24 Jan., 1784, Lt. David Lindsay of Draeutt.

One child :

David Lindsay, b. at Thornton, N. H., 7 Oct., 1785.

ix. Abiah, b. 27 Feb., 1757; m. (int.) 10 Apr., 1779 Samuel, Barron of Draeutt.

Nine children (Barron) :

Elisha, b. 6 Mar., 1780.

Lydia, b. 7 July, 1782.

Abiah Varnum, b. 20 May, 1783.

Sammel Varnum, b. 17 July, 1784; d. 4 Jan., 1805.

James Mitchell, b. 16 Jan., 1786; m. Persis H. Varnum.

Abiah Mitchell, b. 7 Mar., 1789.

Hannah, b. 16 Apr., 1791.

Martha Varnum, b. 11 Aug., 1793; m. James Stevens.

Joseph Bradley, b. 7 May, 1803.

x. Abigail, b. 1 Oct., 1759; d. 4 Jan., 1805; m. 29 Dec., 1784, Benjamin, son of Elisha and Lydia (Jests) Barron of Draeutt, b. 22 Feb., 1756, d. 1 Mar., 1816.

Seven children (Barron), all born in Peeling, now Woodstock, N. H. :

Benjamin Mitchell, b. 5 Nov., 1785.

John Varnum, b. 2 May, 1787.

Abigail, b. 19 Jan., 1789.

Oliver, b. 17 July, 1791.

De Lafayette, b. 10 Aug., 1793.

Hannah, b. 1 May, 1795.

Martha, b. 2 Sept., 1797.

109. xi. Daniel, b. 22 Feb., 1762; m. (1) Persis Hale, (2) Polly Butler.

xii. Martha, b. 25 Feb., 1764; m. 25 Nov., 1790, Samuel Mansur, Jr. "25 Apr., 1765, A Fast at Draeutt previous to ye calling of a minister. I administered Baptism, p. m., to Martha, a dau. of Maj. Samuel Varnums. Supped at Maj. Joe Varnums."—Diary of Rev. Ebenezer Bridge of Chelmsford.

SAMUEL VARNUM was a Major in his father's, Col. Joseph Varnum, "troop of horse," and was known as Major Samuel. The Jr. to his name was to distinguish him from his cousin, Samuel, son of Thomas, who was 11 years his senior. He settled on the "Prime purchase," bought by his father in 1712 of Samuel Prime, whose daughter he, at 22 years of age, married. This property was deeded to him by his father during his lifetime. He was a farmer, and lived and died on the aforesaid farm, which was located on the river road to Methuen and Haverhill. He was Town Clerk of Dracutt from 1754 to 1765. He was buried in a plat of ground on his farm deeded by him as a burial place for his and neighboring families.

He was a member of the "training band" commanded by his son, Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum, and not being of age for active service in the Continental Army, patriotically hired a substitute in 1778 to serve.

Of his two sons, who became especially distinguished, James Mitchell Varnum was named after Capt. James Mitchell, the father, and Joseph Bradley Varnum after the grandfather, of his second wife. Both Captains Mitchell and Bradley were Haverhill men, and renowned Indian fighters. Joseph Bradley had command of the 5th Fort, located in the northerly part of the town. "His wife was captured," as Judge Sewall says in his Diary, "in the terrible massacre of Feb. 6, 1703-4, and sold by the Indians to the French for 50 livres." Her worth to her husband is evidenced by his having redeemed her after two years of captivity, travelling to Canada on foot accompanied only by his dog.

John Varnum in his Journal says :

" 14 April 1777, Training at Maj. Sam<sup>l</sup> Varnum's. Capt. James attended to try to enlist men for ye Wars without success."

" 20 Jan. 1778. Went to Maj: Sam'l Varnum's to examine a Compt made Agst Ruth Chase by Kendal Parker, for her stealing from him sun-

dry goods. The goods was found in her hands. She pleaded Guilty. Begd th Favor that she might be excused from the whip but being an old offender I ordered her to be whipt 10 Lashes on the stripped back, to restore 3 fold Damages, to pay Costs & fees & stand committed till performed, which sentence was the same day fulfilled."

102. JOHN VARNUM, JR.<sup>4</sup> (*Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 8 Sept., 1721; died 26 July, 1786; married "28 Aug., 1741, John Varnum of Draeutt entered with me his Intention of Marriag to Ann Staule of Haverhill."—John Varnum, T. C.

Ten children:

- i. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> b. 17 July, 1743; m. 11 Nov., 1763, John Mansnr, Jr., of Methuen.
- ii. Sarah, b. 26 Sept., 1745; m. (int.) 27 Mar., 1765, Samnel Mansur of Methuen.
- iii. Mehitable, b. 19 Apr., 1748; d. in infancy.
- iv. John, Jr., b. 22 Dec., 1749.
- v. Benjamin, b. 4 June, 1752; m. 16 Oct., 1780, Polly Elliot.

He cannot be traced as to family; and as nothing appears in the Dracutt records as to his descendants, it is assumed that he and his wife Polly had no issue. Both were living 30 Aug., 1799, as appears from a conveyance recorded at East Cambridge. The Dracutt records give "A list of the men's names who have done more than their ratable Proportion in the War, as upon an Everidge made in said town in the year 1777, that belong to the second company in said town, Benj: Varnum 3£." On the Revolutionary Muster Rolls in the Massachusetts State Archives, he is described as "Benj: Varnum, private, 5ft. 8in., in Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum's Company, Col. S. Spaulding's regiment of Train Band, 1777. Belonged to 2nd Draeutt Company. Hired for nine months, 20£. Reported returned from captivity; discharged 1 April, 1779."

Under the act granting pensions to soldiers of the Revolutionary War, awards were made to "Samuel Varnum, R. I. line, Me., and Benj: Varnum, Mass. line, Vt., privates."

It seems possible that the latter was the aforesaid Benjamin Varnum.

- vi. Anna, b. 25 Dec., 1756; m. 16 Oct., 1788, Nehemiah Abbott.
- vii. Jewett, b. 20 Mar., 1759.
- 110. viii. Moses, b. 9 Aug., 1760; m. (1) Lucy Mercer, (2) Sarah Dean.
- ix. Joel, b. 11 Aug., 1763.
- x. Dolly, b. 23 May, 1769.

JOHN VARNUM, JR., was in Capt. Peter Coburn's Company from Dracutt, and fought at the battle of Bunker's Hill. His name appears on the muster roll of said company as from Methuen. Ebenezer Varnum, 2d Lt., James and Jonas Varnum, privates, of said company, were his nephews. Another John Varnum of Capt. Hezekiah Hutchin's Co., Col. James Reed's regiment of New Hampshire militia, a cousin of his, was wounded in the same battle. (See line of John.) Capt. Coburn's Co. were 8 months' men, and private Varnum's name appears on Coat Rolls, vol. lvi, p. 182, vol. lvii, p. 19, dated Cambridge, 20 Nov., 1775, seven months after said battle.

In his will, filed at Salem, dated "Methuen, 1st Feb., 1775, in the 15th year of his Majesty's reign," he devises to his wife Ann and his children — Ruth, wife of John Mansur, Jr.; Sarah, wife of Stephen Mansur, and mentions Anna, Benjamin, Moses and Joel. The witnesses to this instrument were John, Parker, and Jonas Varnum.

103. EBENEZER VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 23 Feb., 1744-5; died 13 March, 1813; married (1) 12 Dec., 1765, by Rev. Nathan Davis, to Sarah Butterfield of Dunstable, sister to Rachel Butterfield, wife of his half-brother Bradley. Sarah died in childbirth, 17 March, 1767.

Married (2) 28 March, 1768, Hannah, daughter of Isaac and Abigail (Prescott) Fox of Acton, who was born 12 July, 1742.

## Eight children:

111. i. Prescott, b. 16 Mar., 1769; m. (1) Elizabeth McAlister, (2) Lydia Richardson, (3) Eunice Brown.  
 ii. Hannah, b. 19 Feb., 1770; m. (int.) 27 Nov., 1794, Phineas Whiting of Chelmsford. No issue.  
 iii. Doreas, b. 8 Jan., 1772; m. 21 Feb., 1797, Phineas Chamberlin of Bedford, Mass.

Six children (Chamberlin):

- Doreas, b. 6 Dec., 1797; m. Timothy Phelps.  
 Lydia Smith, b. 25 Oct., 1799; d. 13 Sept., 1854.  
 David Varnum, b. 6 Mar., 1801; d. 22 May, 1833.  
 Phineas Whiting, b. 2 Sept., 1803; d. 9 Jan., 1809; m. (1) Almira Hatch, (2) Esther Blood.  
 Benjamin Adams, b. 22 June, 1806.  
 Enoch Lane, b. 8 Feb., 1808; d. 5 Sept., 1885.

- iv. Sarah, b. 9 July, 1773; m. James Moore.  
 v. Rhoda, b. 11 Jan., 1775; m. John, son of Matthew and Janet (Wallaee) Dickey of Londonderry, N. H., b. 19 Jan., 1766, d. 12 Sept., 1837.

Fourteen children (Dickey):

- John Pinkerton, b. 21 Aug., 1796; d. 21 Dec., 1875.  
 James Varnum, b. 11 Sept., 1797; d. 14 Oct., 1873.  
 Phineas Whiting, b. 26 Dec., 1798; d. 6 Dec., 1874.  
 Hannah Whiting, b. 4 Aug., 1800; d. 10 Feb., 1886.  
 Jane Wallace, b. 3 Dec., 1801; d. 24 Jan., 1874.  
 Henry, b. 4 Mar., 1803; d. 4 Mar., 1853.  
 William Gage, b. 8 Aug., 1804; d. 10 May, 1889.  
 Gilman, b. 8 Mar., 1806; d. 12 Mar., 1892.  
 Matthew Wallace, b. 13 Dec., 1807; d. 31 Mar., 1812.  
 George Reed, b. 12 July, 1809; d. 11 May, 1810.  
 Sarah Clarissa, b. 17 Aug., 1811; d. 29 Mar., 1871.  
 Charles, b. 3 Apr., 1813; d. 13 Jan., 1879.  
 George Wallace, b. 24 Mar., 1815; d. 16 Feb., 1816.  
 Albert Prescott, b. 24 Mar., 1817; d. 23 Oct., 1880.
- vi. Betsey, b. 8 Jan., 1777; d. 8 Nov., 1845; m. 24 Dec., 1801, Robert, son of John Barnett of Londonderry, N. H., b. 14 Sept., 1772, d. 22 Nov., 1847.

Eight children (Barnett) :

- Eliza, b. 28 Apr., 1802; m. 21 July, 1835, Philip Greenleaf of Bradford, Vt.
- Gilman, b. 9 Sept., 1803; d. 4 Oct., 1888; m. 28 Apr., 1831, Mary Burroughs, b. 21 Nov., 1807, d. 14 Jan., 1877.
- Clarissa, b. 11 Apr., 1805; m. Charles Bryant of Sherbrooke, P. Q. She died there.
- Persis, b. 15 Feb., 1807; m. 9 May, 1850, Ephraim Bagley of Topsham, Vt.
- Hannah, b. 3 April, 1808; m. 20 Sept., 1832, Samuel H. Rowe of Stanstead, P. Q. She died there.
- Carleton O., b. at Topsham, Vt., 9 July, 1811; died there, 6 May, 1894; m. 23 Dec., 1841, Elizabeth P. Bailey, b. 1 Feb., 1817, d. 22 Aug., 1856.
- Anna, b. at Newbury, Vt., 22 Sept., 1814; d. Jan., 1899; m. 4 Apr., 1867, Ezekiel Johnson of Bradford, Vt., d. 9 Oct., 1880.
- Frye Bayley, b. at Newbury, Vt., 11 Mar., 1819; d. at Methuen, Mass., 1858.

112. vii. Phineas, b. 21 Nov., 1778; m. Prudenee Fox.  
viii. Susanna, b. 1782; d. 26 Oct., 1800.

He married (3), in 1801, Eunice Brown. No issue.

EBENEZER VARNUM lived in the upper part of Draentt, near Pelham, and was a farmer by occupation. John Prescott Varnum, his great grandson, says in his notes: "He was in Capt. Peter Coburn's Company at the battle of Bunker Hill, where he fought in the redoubt under his wife's own cousin, Col. William Prescott of Pepperell. My grandmother remembered him very well. She says that he was over six feet tall, very heavy, with huge legs, and that up to the time of his death, he wore stockings and shorts, or knee-breeches. He had a stentorian voice and a powerful will. He married, late in life, Miss

Eunice Brown, against the wishes of his children. It is my recollection that grandmother (Mrs. Col. Prescott Varnum) said that he outlived his last wife. He left a large property."

His name appears in a pay roll for military services under the crown (Military Rolls, 1761 to 1764, leaf 157, State Archives), in Capt. Moses Parker's Company, Ebenezer Varnum, private, service from 11 June, 1761, to 7 Jan., 1762. He used to assert that he was at Ticonderoga and Crown Point; and as many expeditions were sent out from Massachusetts Bay Colony at that date, in one of which his cousin John Varnum was a Lieutenant, and many Draentt men privates, it is probable that this was a part of his said services. At this date he was 16 years old. His name also appears in the Lexington Alarm Rolls, vol. xii, page 25, in the return made by Capt. Peter Coburn "Colony of Massachusetts Bay, Dec. 30, 1775," as 2d Lieutenant. At this time he received his commission, as appears from the records: "Ebenezer Varnum, rank Ensign. Ordered in Provincial Congress, Watertown, 27 May, 1775, that said officer be commissioned Lieutenant, 29 Dec., 1775." This is the company in which so many of his kinsmen served as members of the train band, and who marched to Lexington at the call of the Committee: Parker, James and Jonas Varnum, brothers, Bradley Varnum, a cousin, and John Varnum, an uncle. His name also appears in a "Return of Capt. Peter Coburn's Company, Col. Bridges' Regt., Sept. 26, 1775, Ebenezer Varnum, 2d Lt." (Bunker Hill Rolls, vol. xii., p. 25). In this company was James and Jonas Varnum, his cousins, and John Varnum, his uncle. In Court Records (State Archives, vol. xxxvi, p. 71) there is this entry: "Friday, Oct. 25, 1776, In the House of Representatives, Resolved, that there be allowed and paid out of the public Treasury to Lient. Ebenezer Varnum 33 Shillings for losses he sustained in the battle on Bunker's Hill on the 17 June, 1775." John Varnum of Candia, N. H.,

his cousin, for similar losses in the same battle, was allowed by the State of New Hampshire.

In the Dracutt town book there is this entry: "To Major Joseph Varnum, Treasurer of the town of Dracutt, or his successor in office, pay to Lt. Ebenezer Varnum Three pounds for shoes for the soldiers."

Thos. Hovey, Parker Varnum, Jos. B. Varnum,  
Selectmen of Dracutt.

Dracutt ye 9th Feb., 1779.

Lieutenant Varnum was buried in the Hildreth Cemetery, and his grave is marked with the insignia of the Sons of the American Revolution.

104. BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 31 Aug., 1750; died 15 Oct., 1799; married 12 Dee., 1771, by Rev. Nathan Davis, to Rachel, daughter of Capt. Joseph and Elizabeth (Richardson) Butterfield of Dunstable, and sister to Sarah, wife of Ebenezer Varnum, his half-brother. She was born 27 Jan., 1751; died 3 June, 1835.

Nine children:

- i. Raehel,<sup>6</sup> b. 12 Sept., 1773; d. 23 June, 1857; m. 1 May, 1796, to Jacob Howard of Chelmsford, a descendant and occupant of the ancestral acres of the Howards in whose field the Varnum boys (George and Samuel) were buried in 1676, when slain by the Indians (see *ante*, pp. 9 and 10).

Five children (Howard):

- Charles, b. 16 Sept., 1797.
- Clarissa, b. 23 Nov., 1800.
- Caroline, b. 25 Apr., 1804.
- Mary, b. 21 Mar., 1813.
- Harriet, b. 14 Jan., 1815.

113. ii. Joseph Butterfield, b. 28 Sept., 1775; m. Phebe Spaulding.

114. iii. Bradley, Jr., b. 2 June, 1778; m. Julia Ansart.

- iv. Abiah Mitchell, b. 23 Apr., 1780; d. unm. 20 May, 1810.
- v. Elizabeth, b. 5 Sept., 1782; d. 7 Dec., 1853; m. (int.) 4 May, 1799, Cyrus Baldwin, d. 23 June, 1854.  
One child, d. 28 May, 1815.
- vi. Mercy, b. 8 July, 1784; d. unm. 18 Oct., 1811.
- vii. William, b. 15 Feb., 1787; d. unm. 15 Oct., 1827.
- viii. Charles, b. 5 Sept., 1789; d. 1 April, 1794.
- ix. Frederick, b. 2 July, 1793; d. unm. 6 Dec., 1859. He was appointed midshipman in the U. S. Navy 18 June, 1812; lieutenant, 28 Mar., 1820; commander, 8 Mar., 1841; and was retired 13 Sept., 1855, being of the legal age of 62 years. He was stationed six years in the Mediterranean, and for three years was at Lima, Peru. He was buried in the "Garrison House" burial ground, near the Draectt Navy Yard, among his ancestors.

BRADLEY VARNUM was named by his mother, Abiah (Mitchell) Varnum, in honor of her family name of Bradley, as her sister Hannah, who married her husband's brother Samuel, had so named two of her children. He was like all his kinship of his generation, a patriot in the Revolutionary cause. He was a minute-man in Capt. Peter Coburn's Company, and marched to Lexington April 19, 1775 (Lexington Alarm Rolls, vol. xii, p. 25). He was also in Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum's Company, and marched to reinforce the Northern army in October, 1778, and was present at the surrender of Gen. Burgoyne (Massachusetts Military Records, vol. xliv). He was a Draectt farmer. His will, filed at East Cambridge Probate Records, gives his wife "one-third part of my Real Estate during her natural life," and also, "for her own disposal, two cows, five sheep, one swine, all my household furniture, and the use of a horse to ride at all times when she shall choose to ride abroad, to be furnished by my son Joseph Butterfield Varnum." To his daughter Rachel Howard he gives "\$1, in full with what I have already given her." To

his daughter Elizabeth Baldwin he gives "6 sheep and a brass kettle worth \$10." To his son Bradley \$600. To his daughters Abiah and Mercy \$250 each providing also that they shall have "liberty to make my present dwelling house their home, so long as they remain single." To his minor sons, William and Frederick, he gives "\$200. each when they shall reach twenty-one years of age, and to have an opportunity of attending the Town school, at the expense of my Estate." "My will is that my said sons William and Frederick shall be put out to learn such trades as they shall choose as they respectively arrive at the age of 15 years."

His son, Joseph Butterfield Varnum, is left the balance of his real and personal estate, and made his sole executor.

The witnesses to this will are Joseph Varnum, Joseph Bradley and Joseph Bradley Varnum.

"12 Nov., 1799, Joseph Butterfield Varnum was appointed guardian of Abiah & Merey Varnum; also of William & Frederick Varnum, minors under 14 years of age, children of Bradley Varnum, yeoman of Dracutt" (East Cambridge Probate Records).

He was buried in the family range in the Garrison House burial ground.

105. JOSEPH VARNUM, JR.<sup>5</sup> (*Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 1 May, 1752; died 23 Sept., 1793; married 12 Oct., 1775, Mary, daughter of Samuel and Mary (Bradstreet) Coburn of Dracutt, born 1 June, 1751, died 14 Feb., 1796.

Eight children:

- i. Mary Bradstreet,<sup>6</sup> b. 18 June, 1776; d. 23 Oct., 1778.
115. ii. Joseph 3d, b. 17 Mar., 1778; m. Ruth Moody Johnson.
- iii. Mary Bradstreet, b. 10 Dec., 1779; d. 17 Sept., 1881.
- iv. Asa, b. 26 July, 1781; d. 27 Oct., 1805.
- v. Abi, b. 23 Apr., 1783; d. 25 July, 1864; m. 17 Oct., 1803, William Johnson of Nottingham West?

Two children (Johnson) :

- Anna Moody, b. 23 Dec., 1804; m. 6 Dec., 1826, Abel Gage of Pelham, N. H.
- Mary Ann, b. 27 June, 1808; d. 29 Sept., 1871; m. 26 Nov., 1829, William Livingston of Lowell, Mass.

- 116. vi. Samuel, b. 17 Jan., 1787; m. Sarah Jackman.
- vii. Silas, b. 21 Sept., 1790; d. at Wilmington, N. C., 18 Sept., 1821.
- viii. Asenath, b. 12 Aug., 1793; d. 2 Oct., 1818; m. (int.) 7 Apr., 1812, a James Ferguson of Pelham, N. H.

JOSEPH VARNUM, JR., lived in Dracutt and was a farmer. He died at the early age of 41 years. He was not a strong man physically and therefore does not appear among the Minute-men of the town. The town records state "March 16 1777 Joseph Varnum Jr & wife were taken into the church this day."

106. SAMUEL VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Samuel, Jr.*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 17 Feb., 1746-7; died Jan., 1828; married Mary Parker, born 1749.

Four children:

- i. Rachel,<sup>6</sup> b. 11 Feb., 1789; d. 1 July, 1863; m. in 1808, Charles Doe of Vassalboro', Kennebec Co., Me., b. 7 April, 1787, d. 20 July, 1873.

Ten children (Doe):

Otis, b. 19 June, 1809; d. 22 Sept., 1882.

Charles, b. 11 Sept., 1811; d. at sea.

Harrison, b. 12 Nov., 1813; d. 24 Aug., 1816; m. (1) 21 June, 1837, Lydia Ann Harriman of Windsor, Me.; m. (2) 31 Mar., 1847, Ann M. Jackson of China, Me. Amos W., b. 12 Mar., 1816; d. in childhood.

Mary, b. 12 Apr., 1818; d. 26 Sept., 1894; m. 1 June, 1845, Calvin Page of Boston, Mass.

Cyrene, b. 11 June, 1821; d. 6 Jan., 1900; m. (1)

- 1 June, 1845, Samuel Gray of Beverly, Mass.; m. (2)  
11 May, 1851, Elbridge G. Haskell of China, Me.  
Sarah Jane, b. 4 Jan., 1824; d. in childhood.  
Stephen, b. 24 May, 1826; d. 1 Aug., 1889; m. Fran-  
ces E. Martin of Boston.  
William, b. 22 Nov., 1829; living,  
Leonard, b. 18 Jan., 1833; d. 1837.  
ii. Abigail, b. 3 May, 1791; m. Abel Dinsmore of Norridgewoek,  
Me.  
iii. Mary Parker, b. 10 July, 1793; m. Charles Winslow of Vas-  
salboro', Me.  
iv. Samuel, b. 4 Mar., 1795.

SAMUEL VARNUM, JR., was born in Dracutt, on land purchased by his grandfather, in 1712, of Samuel Prime, and deeded to his father Samuel in 1737.

In April, 1770, for a deed of gift of 170 acres of land, "he relinquished for himself and his heirs all claim against my said father's estate while he is living or after his decease." In 1771, he reconveyed the same land back to his father for 100£ (East Cambridge records, vols. 70, p. 455, and 74, p. 149).

He was a private in his brother's company, Captain Joseph Bradley Varnum, Colonel Simeon Spaulding's regiment, and enlisted out of said company with many other Dracutt men for three years service in the Continental army (Massachusetts Enlistment Rolls, vol. liv., p. 47). He joined Captain John S. Dexter's company, Col. Archibald Crary's regiment of the 9th Continental Infantry. This was the regiment formerly commanded by his brother, afterwards Brigadier-General James Mitchell Varnum. It was made up of and commanded by Rhode Island men essentially, and was in the battles on Long Island, King's Bridge and Harlem Heights.

After the termination of his enlistment, he left Dracutt and went to the Kennebec Country in Maine to settle. The historian

of Clinton, Maine, says "Previous to 1790 Samuel Varnum settled on land occupied by Charles Rowe at the ferry." The historian of Canaan says "in 1796 Samuel Varnum, among others named, are released from the support of the ministry of Mr. Calef, provided they give satisfactory evidence to the Selectmen that they have aided in the support of the Baptist denomination." In June, 1799, he is named as one of the incorporators of a religious society in said town. He is also mentioned in said history as having paid a poll tax of 11s. 11d. This would seem to indicate him as a permanent resident of Canaan.

In the later years of his life he drew a pension under the Act of 11 April, 1818, at the rate of \$96 per annum as a Revolutionary soldier, and according to papers in the State Archives at Augusta, Maine, he had received up to the time of his decease, in Jan., 1828, when he was 81 years of age, a sum total of \$933.06. His wife was living in 1820, when she was 71 years of age.

107. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 17 Dec., 1748; died 10 Jan., 1789; married "Warren, R. I., 2 Feb., 1770, These may Certify whom it concerns, that on the date hereof, James Mitchell Varnum & Martha Child were married, according to the Direction of the Law of this Colony respecting marriage, by James Manning, Pastor of the Baptist Church of said Town." "Martha, The Daughter of Cromel Child, and Robe, his wife, was born December, ye 5th day, A.D. 1748." (Warren, R. I., Town Records.)

Martha (Cromel) Child died at Bristol, R. I., 10 Oct., 1837. No issue.

JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM.<sup>5</sup>

*By James Mitchell Varnum.<sup>8</sup>*

JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM, eldest son of Major Samuel Varnum, was born at Dracutt, Mass., on December 17th, 1748. After an academical education he entered Harvard College as a Freshman at the age of 16 years and 7 months, in the class of 1769, but did not continue there until graduation. There is no official record at the University as to the reason for his leaving Harvard, but inasmuch as in Quincy's history of Harvard College there is mention of disturbances amongst the students in April, 1768, in consequence of which some were rusticated and others expelled, it is considered probable that Varnum, who had the reputation of being rather "wild" at college, may have been one of the number.

He taught school in his native town of Dracutt in 1767, and on May 23d, 1768, entered Rhode Island College (now Brown University), from which institution he graduated with honors in 1769, in the first class to graduate from that college. At the "commencement" day celebration, which was held in the then new Baptist meeting-house at Warren, on September 7th, 1769, Varnum took a prominent place in the exercises, taking part in "a Syllogistic Disputation in Latin," and also being one of two students engaged in a "Forensic Dispute" entitled "The Americans in their present circumstances cannot consistent with good policy affect to become an independent state."

Mr. Varnum "ingeniously defended the proposition by cogent arguments handsomely dressed, though he was subtly, but delicately, opposed by Mr. William Williams, both of whom spoke with emphasis and propriety." Full copies of their



GEN. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM





PHOTOGRAVURE BY N.Y.

MAJOR GENERAL JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM  
BRIGADIER GENERAL CONTINENTAL ARMY  
MEMBER CONTINENTAL CONGRESS  
JUDGE SUPREME COURT N.W. TERRITORY  
FROM PORTRAIT OWNED BY JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM NEW YORK CITY



arguments may be found in Dr. Guild's account of the commencement.\* As a sign of the times it may be mentioned that at this commencement "not only the candidates, but even the President, were dressed in American manufactures." †

In 1769, Mr. Varnum, after leaving college, again taught school for a time at Dracutt, but even at this early date seems to have decided to make his future home in Rhode Island, for soon thereafter he entered the office of the Honorable Oliver Arnold, Attorney General of the colony, with whom he was a student at law until the latter's decease in October, 1770.

It is probable, however, that young Varnum's decision to settle in Rhode Island was chiefly due to the fact that during his student life at Warren he had fallen in love with a fair daughter of that colony, whom he married on February 2d, 1770. Her name was Martha (usually known as Patty) Child, the eldest daughter of the Honorable Cromel Child of Warren, a member of the Rhode Island General Assembly, and one of a family of considerable, and even notable, distinction in those days.

One of her sisters married Hon. Benjamin Bourne, afterwards Member of Congress and United States District and Circuit Judge, and another Dr. Peter Turner, a distinguished surgeon in the Continental Army, and a prominent citizen of Rhode Island.

It may be here stated that Mr. Varnum's marriage proved to be a most happy one, he being represented by the chroniclers of that period as an "excellent and affectionate husband," and his consort as a "high-minded lady, and one of the most cheerful, sociable, and best of wives." Mrs. Varnum survived her husband 48 years, and died at Bristol, R. I., on October 10th, 1837, without issue, at the advanced age of 88 years.

\* "The First Commencement of Rhode Island College," by R. A. Guild, Collection R. I. Historical Society, vol. 7. Providence, 1885.

† Manning and Brown University, by R. A. Guild. Gould & Lincoln, Boston, 1864.

In 1771, Mr. Varnum was admitted to the Bar, and soon after settled in East Greenwich, R. I., where his decided ability early acquired for him an extensive practice, and he travelled the circuit of the colony, reaping in an unusual degree for one so young the honors and pecuniary rewards of his profession. Mr. Wilkins Updyke, in his "Memoirs of the Rhode Island Bar," in referring to Mr. Varnum at this period of his life, says: "He was deeply attached to mathematical science, and delighted in its pursuit; his whole life was an evidence that he was naturally a mathematician; his habits were those of intense study and boisterous relaxation. He was fond of exhibiting his skill in gymnastics, and ever ready to exercise in that ancient art with any one who would engage with him, noble or ignoble. Strong and active in frame, and ardently attached to such exercises, he gave his inclination for such sports the fullest range to a late period in his life." In another portion of his biography of General Varnum, and referring generally to his character, Mr. Updyke says: "Varnum was periodically an intense student, and would be secluded for weeks. He possessed the rare power of great mental abstraction and philosophic ratiocination. He was master of his cases, and all the facts were well arranged and digested for trial. Varnum told a friend that he studied his cases in bed, and often had his books brought to him. This is the solution of the mystery which some thought was intuition, of instantly rising in court and arguing his cause, to public surprise and admiration, without any apparent previous preparation or consultation. He was a great admirer of Vattel and Montesquieu; the latter he would almost repeat. He delighted in, and cultivated his taste for, the poets. Shakespeare, Young, Pope, and Addison he would recite with great readiness, and when a novel came into his hands his meals were suspended until it was finished."

It was about this time, on August 15th, 1773, that Mr. Var-

num purchased for £18. the land at East Greenwich upon which he commenced the erection of the colonial mansion, to which reference will hereafter be made. Owing, however, to the troubled condition of the country, and the war which soon followed, in which Mr. Varnum took such an interested and active part, his building operations were interrupted, and the house was not completed and occupied until some four or five years thereafter.

Mr. Varnum, very early in life, took an intense and active interest in military affairs, especially in view of the discontent in the colonies with the rule of Great Britain, and his firm conviction that sooner or later war must ensue. He made a careful study not only of military tactics, but also of the art and science of war, which afterwards stood him in good stead.

In October, 1774, he became a charter member and the commander, with the rank of Colonel, of the Kentish Guards, a uniformed militia company of infantry in East Greenwich, then chartered by the Rhode Island General Assembly under the style of the "First Independent Company of the County of Kent," and which subsequently gave 32 commissioned officers to the army of the American Revolution, amongst them Gen. Nathaniel Greene, Gen. Varnum, Col. Christopher Greene, Col. Crary and Maj. Whitmarsh.

It was about this time, and in connection with the Kentish Guards, that there began that intimacy and devoted friendship that existed between Nathaniel Greene and James M. Varnum until they were parted by the death of the latter.

Mr. George Washington Greene, in his life of Maj.-Gen. Greene, after alluding to Greene's deep interest in the Kentish Guards, says:—

" Amongst the first officers was James M. Varnum, a man of 'exalted talents,' whom he 'loved and esteemed,' who was to take an honorable place in the civil and military history of the Revolution.

Nathaniel Greene was only a private in the company, but subsequently became a candidate for a lieutenancy, a candidature which met with considerable opposition.

Greene, it seems, had had a trouble with one of his knees, which gave a slight limp to his gait, and in the eyes of some of the village and company critics, this limp, although slight, was a serious blemish, unfitting him not merely for an officer, but even for a private.

Greene was thunderstruck at this opposition, and took it sorely to heart. His friends were indignant. Varnum threatened to withdraw his name, and the loss of Varnum's fine person and popular eloquence would have been a serious blow to the half-organized company." \*

How this matter was finally settled we know not, but doubtless Greene withdrew his candidacy for lieutenant, and persuaded his friends to agree to it, for he remained a private in the company until about two years later, when, over the heads of all his critics, he was promoted to a Brigadier-Generalcy by his fellow-members of the Rhode Island Legislature, an appointment which his subsequent brilliant career fully justified.

An interesting letter written by Greene to his friend and commander, Varnum, at the time of the above-mentioned trouble, is still extant,† and is worthy of preservation in this volume, although it has already been printed in full in the life of Gen. Greene, above referred to.

It is addressed to James M. Varnum, Esq., East Greenwich, and was probably written in the autumn of 1774, or early in 1775, and reads as follows:—

Coventry, Monday, 2 o'clock, p. m.

Dear Sir:—

As I am ambitious of maintaining a place in your esteem, and I cannot hope to do it, if I discover in my actions a little mind and a mean spirit I think in justice to myself I ought to acquaint you with the particulars of the subject upon which we conversed to-day—I was informed

\* G. W. Greene's "History of General Greene," vol. 1, page 50.

† Original letter is in the possession of James M. Varnum of New York.

the gentlemen of East Greenwich said I was a blemish to the company—I confess it is the first stroke of mortification that I ever felt from being considered either in private or publick life a blemish to those with whom I associated—hitherto I have always had the happiness to find myself respected in society in general, and my friendship courted by as respectable characters as any in the Government—pleased with these thoughts, and anxious to promote the good of my country—and ambitions of increasing the consequence of East Greenwich—I have exerted myself to form a military company there—but little did I think that the Gentlemen considered me in the light of an obtruder—my heart is too susceptible of pride, and my sentiments too delicate to wish a connexion where I am considered in an inferior point of light—I have always made it my study to promote the interest of Greenwich and to cultivate the good opinion of its inhabitants, that the severity of speech and the union of sentiment, coming from persons so unexpected—might wound the pride of my heart deeper than the force of the observation merited—God knows when I first entered this company I had not in contemplation any kind of office, but was fully determined not to accept any, but Greff and others have been endeavouring to obtain my consent for some weeks past—I never expected that being a member of that company would give me any more consequence in life, either as private soldier or commissioned officer—I thought the cause of Liberty was in danger, and as it was attackt by a military force, it was necessary to cultivate a military spirit amongst the People, that should tyranny endeavor to make any further advances we might be prepared to check it in its first sallies. I considered with myself that if we never should be wanted in that character, it would form a pretty little society in our meetings, where we might relax ourselves a few hours from the various occupations of life—and return to our business again with more activity and spirit—I did not want to add any new consequence to myself from the distinction of that company—if I had been ambitious of promotion in a publick character—you yourself can witness for me I have had it in my power—but I always preferred the pleasures of private society to those of publick distinction—if I conceive aright of the force of the objection of the gentlemen of the town it was not as an officer, but as a soldier, for that my halting was a blemish to the rest—I confess it is my misfortune to limp a little, but I did not conceive it to be so great, but we are not apt to discover our own defects. I feel the less mortified at it as it's

natural and not a stain or defection, that resulted from my actions—I have pleased myself with the thoughts of serving under you, but as it is the general opinion that I am unfit for such an undertaking I shall desist—I feel not the less inclination to promote the good of the Company because I am not to be one of its members—I will do any thing that's in my power to procure the Charter, I will be at my proportion of the expense until the company is formed and completely equipt—Let me entreat you, Sir, if you have any regard for me, not to forsake the company at this crititical season for I fear the consequences—if you mean to oblige me by it, I assure you it will not, I would not have the company break and disband for fifty Dollars—it would be a disgrace upon the county and upon the town in particular. I feel more mortification than resentment—but I think it would have manifested a more generous temper to have given me their opinions in private than to make proclamation of it in publick as a capital objection, for nobody loves to be the subject of ridicule however true the cause—I purpose to attend to-morrow if my business will permit—and as Mr. Greene is waiting will add no more only that I am with great truth

Your sincere friend,

NATHANIEL GREENE.

The prominent part taken by Varnum in the Colonial controversy inspired him with an ambition to enter the military service of his country, and when the news of the battle of Lexington reached East Greenwich, in 1775, Col. Varnum assembled the Kentish Guards, and within three hours, well uniformed, armed and equipped, they were on the march to Providence, and thence to Pawtucket, where they learned that the enemy had retired to Boston, and that their services were no longer required. The next week the General Assembly of Rhode Island authorized the raising of a brigade of three regiments of infantry, under Nathaniel Greene, then a member of the Assembly, as Brigadier-General, and Varnum was selected as Colonel of the regiment to be raised in the counties of Kent and Kings, and on May 8th, 1775, he was commissioned by the Provincial General Assembly as Colonel of the

1st Regiment Rhode Island Infantry in the Brigade of Observation. After the 5th of August of that year the regiment was known as the 12th Continental Foot, and during the year 1776 officially designated the 9th Continental Foot. When this first change in name took place the officers received commissions from the President of Congress, when Washington was appointed commander-in-chief, and their commands were then styled Continental troops.

On the 8th of June, 1775, Col. Varnum arrived with his regiment at Roxbury, and reported to Brig.-Gen. Greene. Here it was under fire during the shelling of that place on the 17th of June, 1775, and also at Plowed Hill on August 26th. During the cannonade at the last-named place Adj't. Mumford and another member of the regiment had their heads shot off.

On the 23d July, the Rhode Island Brigade removed to Prospect Hill. Col. Varnum's regiment continued at the siege of Boston until the town was evacuated by the enemy, 17th of March, 1776. Meanwhile the terms of service of most of the enlisted men had expired in December, but they continued on duty until the 1st of January, 1776, and then almost all re-enlisted for another year.

Marching from Boston on the 1st of April, 1776, the regiment went into temporary quarters at Providence, and then proceeded via Norwich to New London, where it embarked in transports for New York City, and arrived there on the 17th of April.

Pursuant to general orders from Army Headquarters, New York, 30th April, 1776, the 1st and 2nd Rhode Island Continental Infantry crossed the East River to Brooklyn on the 3rd of May and began to fortify the heights.

On the 1st of June, pursuant to Brig.-Gen. Nathaniel Greene's orders of that date from Brooklyn Heights, five companies of Col. Varnum's regiment were stationed upon the right

in Fort Box, and the other three between that work and Fort Greene.

On the 9th of June, Brig.-Gen. Greene directed the 1st and 2nd Rhode Island and Col. Moses Little's 12th regiment Continental Foot (8th Mass. Infantry) of his brigade to exercise together four days in each week.

On the 17th of June, Brig.-Gen. Greene assigned six companies of Col. Varnum's regiment to garrison Fort Box, which was near the line of the present Pacific Street, a short distance above Bond Street, Brooklyn, and two companies to the "Oblong" redoubt, which was on a piece of rising ground at the corner of the present De Kalb and Hudson Avenues, Brooklyn.

On the 8th of July, the same general officer ordered the 1st Rhode Island, Col. Varnum, to go and garrison Fort Defiance, at Red Hook, Brooklyn, which in a communication to Gen. Washington from Headquarters, Brooklyn Heights, 5th July, he said he regarded as "a post of vast importance."

Here the regiment remained during the battle of Long Island, on the extreme right flank of Maj.-Gen. Israel Putnam's forces, engaged with the allied British and Hessian forces, and nearest to the enemy's ships.

On the 30th of August, the 1st and 2nd Rhode Island having evacuated the lines, re-crossed the East River to the City of New York early in the morning.

In the action at Harlem Heights, the regiment was an active participant under its Lieut.-Col. (Archibald Crary), Col. Varnum being at the time on the sick report.

Soon afterward the regiment crossed the Hudson at Fort Lee, and was there on the 23d of September with the remainder of the brigade (Nixon's, late Greene's), which included the 2nd Rhode Island. From thence, on the 13th of October, pursuant to Brig.-Gen. John Nixon's orders of that date and

place, which he had issued in compliance with Maj.-Gen. Greene's instructions, the brigade immediately moved over the ferry to Fort Washington, and on the 16th of October was at East Chester, from whence, on that date, Col. Varnum's regiment was ordered to march toward Throg's Neck, at the entrance of Long Island Sound, where the British had landed on the 12th, and to retard their advance. Taking post at the west end of the causeway from Throg's Neck, with a detachment at Westchester Mill, on the causeway where the bridge planks had been removed, the 1st Rhode Island remained here until the 18th, and then moved to Valentine's Hill.

Two days later, Col. Varnum was with his regiment at the battle of White Plains, and on the 1st of November in camp at North Castle. On the 22nd of November, the regiment was quartered near Phillipsburg, and crossed the Hudson with the brigade on the 2nd of December, and was at Haverstraw on the 4th of December.

As the terms of service of the several Rhode Island Continental regiments were drawing to a close, he here left his regiment, and was sent by his Excellency, the commander-in-chief, to Rhode Island, to hasten, by his influence and presence, the recruitment of the army.

On the 12th of October preceding, Gen. Washington, from Army Headquarters, Harlem Heights, had specially recommended him for retention in the army on its proposed re-arrangement "for the war."

He had been at home but a few days when the Rhode Island General Assembly appointed him on the 12th of December, 1776, Brigadier-General of the State Militia, and also of the Rhode Island State Brigade on the Continental Establishment. He relinquished his regimental commission on acceptance of this last commission, and was on duty successively at Tiverton 8th, 23rd January, and 11th to 17th March, 1777, Providence 25th

January, Warren 12th March, South Kingston 20th April, and Exeter 24th May, 1777. He was appointed Brigadier-General of the Continental Army 21st of February, 1777, and notified thereof by Gen. Washington in complimentary terms from Army Headquarters, Morristown, N. J., 3rd of March, 1777. Gen. Washington's letter contains ample evidence that his military record and bearing had met with the full approbation of the distinguished commander-in-chief. This new appointment vacated that under which he was then acting, and the Rhode Island General Assembly at the March session, 1777, passed a resolution on the subject "in grateful remembrance of his services."

Using his personal influence, which was great, to hasten re-enlistment and the recruitment of the 1st and 2nd Rhode Island Continentals, after their return in February from Morristown, N. J., he was enabled on the 8th of April to send forward to that place to join the "main" army a detachment from each, under Lieut.-Col. Jeremiah Olney. Under Gen. Washington's instructions from Army Headquarters at the last-named place, of the 11th of May, the two regiments when they did leave Rhode Island were directed to march to Peekskill, in the Middle Department, then under Maj.-Gen. Israel Putnam. They arrived there on or about the 23rd of May, and were at first quartered in Peekskill. Brig.-Gen. Varnum personally arrived about the 1st of June. On the 12th of June, Gen. Washington, in consequence of a movement of the enemy, directed from Army Headquarters, Middlebrook, Maj.-Gen. Putnam to forward to that place a portion of his forces. This detachment included Varnum's Brigade. While with the "main army" his brigade, on the 22nd of June, 1777, formed part of the forces detached under Maj.-Gen. Nathaniel Greene to make a demonstration against the enemy in New Brunswick. In this successful movement against Sir William Howe, Var-

num's Brigade marched down on the west side of the Raritan and followed the retreating enemy several miles toward Amboy. On the 1st of July, the brigade was ordered back by his Excellency, the commander-in-chief, and on the 2nd of July marched from Middlebrook.

The 1st Rhode Island was then sent to Maj.-Gen. Putnam to garrison Fort Montgomery.

On the 20th of August, pursuant to the latter's orders from Department Headquarters, Peekskill, Brig.-Gen. Varnum left that place on special service with a detachment to White Plains, from whence the 2nd Rhode Island went nearly to King's Bridge, in the "neutral ground" of Westchester County.

The expedition was successful, and incidentally captured two subalterns and several enlisted men of the enemy.

It returned to Peekskill on the 26th.

On the 23d September, General Washington, from Army Headquarters in camp near Pottsgrove, Pa., instructed Maj.-Gen. Putnam to send a certain detachment of troops to him without delay, via Morristown.

Accordingly the 4th Regt. Conn. Cont'l Inf'y (Col. John Durkee) and the 8th Regt. Conn. Cont'l Inf'y (Col. John Chandler) were added to Brig.-Gen. Varnum's brigade, and it again crossed the Hudson River. It arrived at Caryell's Ferry on the Delaware on the 7th October, and here he was directed to halt, and by orders of the 7th October to detach the 1st and 2d Rhode Island to Fort Mercer. Soon afterwards, he moved to Woodbury, N. J., where Brigade Headquarters were established.

On the 1st Nov., 1777, Gen. Washington, from Army Headquarters Whitemarsh, directed him to take supervision of Fort Mercer, Red Bank, and of Fort Mifflin, Mud Island, and relieve Lt.-Col. Samuel Smith, 4th Maryland Cont'l Inf'y, the com-

mandment of Fort Mifflin, who had requested to be relieved on the 18th October.

However, in prospect of an attack, Lt.-Col. Smith was continued in command, and exercised it on the 10 Nov. when the firing was resumed, until the afternoon of the 11th, when he was severely wounded in the arm and left the fort. Brig.-Gen. Varnum, then at Fort Mercer, immediately detailed Lieut.-Col. Giles Russell, 8th Conn., who went over and assumed command, and relieved part of the garrison by a detachment from his own, the 4th Conn. (Col. John Durkee's).

On the 12th, Lieut.-Col. Russell, ill and exhausted by fatigue, asked to be relieved, and while Brig.-Gen. Varnum was considering what field officer to detail to the hazardous duty, Maj. Simeon Thayer, 2d Rhode Island, volunteered, and went over and relieved Lieut.-Col. Russell and the remainder of Lieut.-Col. Smith's men with a detachment of Rhode Islanders.

As the land defences of the Delaware had been entrusted by Gen. Washington to Brig.-Gen. Varnum, the anxiety of the latter to fulfil his whole duty with the inadequate force under him was extreme.

During the bombardment of Fort Mifflin and its heroic defence on the 15th Nov., 1777, he reported to Gen. Washington at 6 p.m., as follows: "We have lost a great many men to-day; a great many officers are killed and wounded. My fine company of artillery is almost destroyed. We shall be obliged to evacuate the fort this night."

After the two forts were evacuated he marched his brigade, 20th November, to Mount Holly and joined Maj.-Gen. Greene's division there a few days later.

Having crossed the Delaware, his brigade joined the main army at Whitemarsh about the 29th Nov., and was in the operations in that vicinity against Sir William Howe's army, 5th-8th December.

Proceeding with his brigade to Valley Forge on the 19th Dec., it there erected huts and went into winter quarters.\* The brigade of General Varnum was stationed on a hill where a star redoubt was erected, whence an extensive view of both sides of the Schuylkill River could be secured, and so near the stream as to be able to employ the artillery to check any attempt of the enemy to cross over near the place, but their use for that purpose was never required. The redoubt was about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from Washington's headquarters; and just within the lines and a short distance beyond were the headquarters of General Varnum, at the residence of David Stevens, the next farm house below that occupied by Washington. This house is still standing, and has recently been described, as follows: "The house is of stone with a long porch facing the road, and is quite remarkable for the thickness of the western wall—about 12 feet. The ceilings are low, and there is a general appearance of comfort surrounding it. The main room has still the large old open fire place. It is situate close to the River road, and about three hundred feet from the ruins of the Star Redoubt, which was the strongest of the works at Valley Forge, commanding the road and the river for miles, and was doubtless the key to the situation."†

The trials, sufferings and privations of the Continental Army at Valley Forge are too well known to all students of history to require any extended allusion thereto, and the same may be said as to the bitter attacks and cabals against General Washington at this time, but the following extracts from letters of General Varnum may be of interest. On December 22d, 1777, he wrote to General Washington, as follows:

\* History of Valley Forge, by Henry Woodman (collection of Penn. Hist. Society). Also John F. Watrous' memo, in same collection.

† J. V. P. Turner, Esq., of Philadelphia, in Newport Mercury, Dec. 21st, 1895; and in personal correspondence with the Editors, 1902.

"According to the saying of Solomon, hunger will break through a stone wall. It is therefore a very pleasing circumstance to the Division under my command that there is probability of their marching. Three days successively have we been destitute of bread. Two days we have been entirely without meat. The men must be supplied or they cannot be commanded. The complaints are too urgent to pass unnoticed. It is with pain that I mention this distress. I know that it will make your Excellency unhappy; but if you expect the exertion of virtuous principle while your troops are deprived of the necessities of life, your final disappointment will be great in proportion to the patience which now astonishes every man of human feeling."\*

In a letter to his life long friend, General Nathaniel Greene, dated Valley Forge, Feb. 1st, 1778, he speaks of General Washington, as follows:

"I know the great General in this as in all his other measures, acts from goodness of soul and with a view only to the public weal. \* \* \* You have often heard me say, and, I assure you, I feel happy in the truth of it, that next to God Almighty, and my country, I revere General Washington, and nothing fills me with so much indignation as the villany of some who dare speak disrespectfully of him."

On February 16, 1778, General Varnum wrote another letter from camp to General Greene, as follows:

"The situation of the camp is such that in all human probability the army must soon dissolve. Many of the troops are destitute of meat and are several days in arrear. The horses are dying for want of forage. The country in the vicinity of the camp is exhausted. \* \* \* \* My freedom upon this occasion may be offensive; if so I should be unhappy, but duty compels me to speak without reserve."†

General Varnum was the first person in the country to advocate the enlistment of negroes as soldiers, and thus to recog-

\* Ford's Washington, vol. 6, page 254.

† Ford's Washington, vol. 6, page 381.

nize courage "behind a thatch of wool." On January 2d, 1778, in view of the difficulty of obtaining sufficient troops for the Continental Army, he suggested to General Washington the propriety of raising a battalion of negroes to make up the proportion of Rhode Island in the army. Washington submitted this suggestion to the executive of Rhode Island without approval or disapproval. The Rhode Island Legislature, however, promptly passed an act authorizing the enlistment in two battalions of negroes and Indians; every slave enlisting to receive his freedom, and his owner to be paid by the State an amount not exceeding £125. At least one battalion was successfully raised, and did excellent service at the battle of Rhode Island.\*

General Varnum seems to have been one of the most aggressive and strenuous of the general officers of the army in presenting, not only to the Commander-in-Chief, but also to the State of Rhode Island and to Congress, the sufferings and needs of the Continental troops at Valley Forge, and in demanding some immediate relief for them, and doubtless this aggressiveness and insistence led him naturally to incur the hostility of some active members of the general government, for on May 23d, 1778, Governeur Morris, then a member of Congress from New York, writes to Washington concerning Varnum that his "temper and manners are by no means calculated to teach Patience, Discipline and Subordination."†

Dr. William Shaw Bowen says of Varnum :

"His talents for the conduct of business affairs were very great, and his manners were so engaging that Varnum was called on by Washington to conduct delicate negotiations for the Continental as well as for the State Government. Washington placed a high estimate on him."

"The solemn visage of the father of his country must have relaxed when

\* Ford's Washington, vol. 6, page 347.

† Ford's Washington, Vol. 7, p. 30.

he referred to him as 'the light of the camp' during the dreadful winter at Valley Forge."\*

Pursuant to General Washington's orders dated Army Headquarters Valley Forge, 7th May, 1778, he was directed under the resolution of Congress of the 3d February preceding, to administer the oath of office to the officers of his own and Brig.-Genl. Jedediah Huntington's brigade of Connecticut Continental Infantry.

On the 4th March, 4th, 23d, and 29th April, 17th, 26th and 28th of May and 4th June, he was Brigadier-General of the day to the "Main" Army at Valley Forge. Soon afterward and before the evacuation of Philadelphia by the enemy, he went on special duty to Rhode Island. Here his brigade joined him near Providence on the 3d August, 1778, preparatory to the campaign before Newport. It now consisted, under General orders dated Army Hd. Qrs. Wright's Mills, 22d July, 1778, of the 2d R. I. Contl. Infantry (Col. Israel Angell), Colonels Henry Sherburne's and Sam'l. B. Webb's additional Regts. Contl. Infy. and the 1st Regt. Canadian Contl. Infy. (Col. James Livingston).

On the 14th August pursuant to Genl. Orders of Maj.-Genl. John Sullivan dated Hd. Qrs. Portsmouth. R.I., he was assigned to the command of the right wing of the front line of the Army in Rhode Island, and by the same authority was directed to command the covering party in the lines at the siege of Newport on the 16th.

In addition to his other duties he was detailed as President of a General Court Martial, per Major-General Sullivan's orders, dated Hd. Qrs. before Newport. 17th Aug., 1778, and continued on this duty until the 29th August when the Court was dissolved.

\* *Providence Journal*, March 6th, 1902. [This remark was made by Washington to Captain Samuel Packard of Providence (grandfather of Dr. Bowen), and frequently repeated by Capt. Packard.]

On the 14th and 31st August he was Brigadier of the Day to the Army.

In the battle of Rhode Island his command bore the principal part of the fighting against the forces of Maj.-Genl. Robt. Pigot.

In General Orders dated Hd. Qrs. Department of R. I., Tiverton, 31st Aug., 1778, his brigade was ordered "to take post at Bristol and Warren, divided as he shall think best for the defence of those posts." He made his Brigade Hd. Qrs. at Warren until 26th Feby., 1779, when he was at East Greenwich. Meanwhile Major-General Sullivan, during his own absence, by General Orders dated Hd. Qrs. Providence, 27th January, 1779, placed him temporarily in command of the Department of Rhode Island.

The necessity of attending to his private affairs, and to the support and maintenance of his family, compelled him at this time much against his will to tender his resignation to Congress. In a letter to his friend, Genl. Greene, dated 26th Feby., 1779, he says: "The resolution was painful, but hard necessity urged it by every cogent motive." He was honorably discharged from the service "at his own request," 5th March, 1779.

Upon official notification of acceptance of his resignation, Maj. General John Sullivan, in Genl. Orders Hd. Qrs. Department of Rhode Island, Providence, 18th March, 1779, said :

"Brigadier-General Varnum having this day notified the Commander-in-Chief that he has transmitted a final resignation of his commission to Congress, and that he is under the disagreeable necessity of quitting the service of the United States :

The General esteems it his duty to return his sincere and most cordial thanks to Brig.-Genl. Varnum for his brave, spirited and soldierlike conduct while acting under his immediate command in this Department, and sincerely laments that an officer, who by his conduct, has merited so much from the public, should be under the disagreeable necessity of leaving a

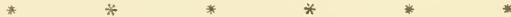
service where his exertions as an officer would have been of essential advantage had he been able to continue in the army."

Appointed by the R. I. General Assembly to be Major-General R. I. Militia, 5th May, 1779, he continued in this office by unanimous annual reappointments until the 7th May, 1788, and was, from the 25th July to the 8th Aug., 1780, called into the actual service of the United States under Lieut.-Genl. the Comte de Rochambeau. On the 26th Oct., 1779, he was appointed by the Rhode Island General Assembly Advocate in the State Court of Admiralty.

Upon his resignation from the army General Varnum returned to his home at East Greenwich, completed the construction of his dwelling and resumed the active practice of the law.

As to this house of General Varnum's, which is still standing (1906), and in excellent preservation, although more than a century and a quarter old, we have an interesting description in an article written by its present owner and occupant, Dr. William Shaw Bowen, which was published in the *Providence Journal* of March 6th, 1892, from which we quote as follows:

" Of the pre-revolutionary mansions there are few better specimens in existence than the Varnum place in East Greenwich. The venerable edifice has been shielded from the approaches of the iconoclastic 'restorer,' and today, in its interior, it is one of the most perfect of the remaining instances of colonial architecture the country affords. In its way it is as unique as the Braddock house at Alexandria, Va., the Chancellor Wythe mansion at Williamsburg, or the Brandon place on the James River near Richmond. Varnum house is not only rich in the perfect details of its kind, but it teems with historic interest. Few houses in Rhode Island are more replete with associations of the last days of her colonial history and the early period of independent existence, the hiatus between the date of the separation from English rule and that of the final union with the established States of the American Union.









PUNCH-BOWL

*Presented to General Varnum by General Lafayette*

In possession of the Society of the Cincinnati in the State of Rhode Island and  
Providence Plantations

The present owner cherishes the home of the brilliant and versatile Varnum, and takes pride in preserving the old place in its original style. The hall, which closely resembles that of the Vernon house, is wainscoted on the first and second floors, as are nearly all of the rooms. The wood-work of the parlor is greatly admired by architects. The heavy cornice is dentated and the pediment above the fireplace is peculiarly graceful in its effect. The doors have small, oval, fluted brass knobs. All of the rooms have open fireplaces with tile facings. The fireplace of the dining room is seven feet in width and constructed of cut granite. The rooms are filled with antique black mahogany furniture, mostly of the Georgian age. The parlor set was brought from England in the last century."

In the same article we find a picturesque and attractive account of a visit paid by the Marquis de Lafayette and a party of French officers in September, 1778, to General Varnum at his East Greenwich home. It reads as follows :

"On a warm afternoon in September, in the year 1778, a small sloop rounded 'the rocks,' which jut out into Coweset Bay from the estate now occupied as a summer residence by William Stoddard, Esq., of Providence. The fresh southerly breeze which prevails a considerable portion of the year wafted the craft to Long Point, which limits the little Greenwich cove. Then the sloop made a few tacks, and was speedily tied alongside the wharf at the foot of King Street. The loungers on shore, attracted by the new arrival, beheld a gallant spectacle on the sloop's deck. There was a handsome young man clad in the buff and blue regimentals of a general officer in the Continental army. He was of medium height, erect and dignified, and his manners were those of one who is in a position to command men. With distinguished courtesy he assisted several unknown military gentlemen to the shore. The uniform worn by the strangers was unfamiliar to the barefooted youths who clustered on the caplog of the wharf. It consisted of a green coat faced with red and laced with gold. The breeches were of buff cloth. Black silk stockings, a four-cornered cocked hat and a large red silk sash were other features of the costume. One of the number was clad in the Continental blue and buff. On him the attention of the first mentioned officer were especially bestowed. He was a young man with sharp features and a prominent nose. When the

shore was reached the first officer in Continental uniform exclaimed : ' My dear Marquis, welcome to East Greenwich and my home.'

The speaker was Brigadier-General James Mitchell Varnum, who commanded a brigade at the battle fought on Rhode Island on August 29th previous between the American army under General Sullivan and the British garrison at Newport. His guest was the Marquis de La Fayette, who was sent with two brigades of Continental troops by Washington to reinforce Sullivan. The failure of the French fleet to coöperate compelled Sullivan to evacuate Rhode Island after the sanguinary contest of Butts Hill and Quaker Hill. The officers in green were Frenchmen. They came to the county seat of Kent to partake of Gen. Varnum's hospitality.

The record of what transpired during the stay of La Fayette rests wholly on the reminiscences of the late Miss Eleanor Fry, a venerable Quakeress who lived in an ancient gambrel-roofed house on the site now occupied by the Central Hotel, immediately adjoining the Kent County Court House on the south. Miss Fry, known to the villagers as ' Cousin Ellen,' died many years ago. She was a beautiful woman in her youth, and a favorite in the courtly society of the Revolutionary period. She witnessed the little procession of guests led by Gen. Varnum with La Fayette at his side as they came along King Street, crossed Main Street and thence walked up the short ascent of Court Street—by the house afterwards occupied by Dr. Peter Turner of Continental army fame at the battle of Red Bank—to the residence of Gen. Varnum on Pearce Street.

The imposing façade of the house appeared exactly as at present, save that it was not shadowed by the two great elm trees that stand in front. They were then young trees recently planted. The location was, as it is today, the best in the village. Narragansett Bay stretched out in front toward Newport. Warwick Neck and distant Bristol were in view. The quaint old town, then consisting almost entirely of unpainted houses, the streets sandy and rain-washed, lay on the side hill sloping toward the waters of Greenwich Cove. In 1778 the Varnum mansion was isolated, with broad fields and meadows on either side and extending far back in the rear. Pearce Street contained only four houses, and was an out-of-the-way portion of the village. The house, resplendent with white paint, green blinds, and huge, shining brass knocker on the front door, was regarded as a palace by the townspeople, many of whom characterized it as 'Varnum's Folly,' and as savoring of aristocratic and unrepiblican pretense and display.

According to 'Cousin Ellen' Fry the several days that the gallant La Fayette and the French officers passed as the guests of Gen. Varnum were of unwonted gayety. Every evening tea was served, to which the village beauties, with their chaperons, were invited. La Fayette lodged in the northeast chamber. His valet slept on a cot outside the door. Gen. Varnum occupied the southeast chamber. The French officers were placed in the southwest chamber. The nights were spent in conviviality. It was a free living, hard drinking age, and the breakfasts were at a very late hour.

The occasion of La Fayette's visit was characterized by Gen. Varnum as his *house-warming*. It is believed that Gen. Sullivan was of the memorable party.

Returning from a visit to Boston, Gen. Washington passed a night in Varnum's house. He dined and supped there, and during the afternoon enjoyed a brief siesta in the northeast chamber. The journey westward was resumed the following day over the old road through Coventry, to Lebanon, where Washington stayed with Governor Jonathan Trumbull."

Generals Nathanael Greene and John Sullivan and the Comte de Rochambeau, the Commander-in-Chief of the French army,—under whom Gen. Varnum served in Rhode Island, and between whom and Varnum there was formed a sincere and lasting friendship, with sundry members of his staff,—were also guests at this hospitable mansion.

Commissary General Claude Blanchard of the French army relates in his diary that when he dined with General Varnum, at the latter's house on the 20th of August, 1780, the entire conversation was carried on in Latin.

It was doubtless at or soon after the visit of the Marquis de Lafayette above referred to, that the latter presented to General Varnum the Punch Bowl, of which a picture appears in this volume, and which is now owned by the Rhode Island Society of the Cincinnati, of which General Varnum was subsequently President.

In April, 1780, the people of the State of Rhode Island "in

grateful recollection of his eminent services in the cause of public liberty, and desirous to throw into the national councils those distinguished talents which could be spared from the field," elected General Varnum their delegate to the Confederated or Continental Congress of that year, and he was reelected the next year, serving from May 3d, 1780, to May 1, 1782; and he was subsequently reelected for the term from May 1st, 1786, to May 2d, 1787.

As that body sat with closed doors, his voice could not be heard by the public, but his name appeared very often on the published journal, and it is evident that he exerted great power and influence.

In 1781 he was one of the Committee appointed to apportion amongst the States the assessments for public expenses and carrying on the war, was Chairman of the Committee to whom was referred a report of the Board of Admiralty, embracing instructions to private armed vessels, was one of the Committee who reported a resolution which was adopted giving the thanks of Congress to Brigadier-General Morgan and the officers and men under his command for their fortitude and good conduct in the action at the Cowpens.

In 1782 he served on many committees, and amongst others was Chairman of the Committee authorizing the exchange of Lieut.-General Burgoyne and his officers; he reported and had passed a resolution urging the States to send full representations to Congress; was on Committee to express the thanks of Congress to Washington, Rochambeau and de Grasse after the victory at Yorktown; and was Chairman of the Committee to thank General Greene and his officers after the battle of Eutaw Springs. In 1786-7 General Varnum also occupied similar important positions in Congress.

Mr. Augustus C. Buell, in his recently published work entitled "Paul Jones, founder of the American Navy" (Vol. II.

pp. 58-61) refers to General Varnum as the Chairman of the Select Committee of Congress, March 28th, 1781, to investigate and report as to the conduct of Commodore John Paul Jones, which committee, after a protracted and searching inquiry, not only exonerated the Commodore from all charges, but reported resolutions giving him the thanks of the United States for his distinguished services, which resolutions were unanimously passed by Congress by standing vote.

Mr. Buell also gives interesting quotations from General Varnum's own account of the proceedings of that committee.\*

It appears also that Varnum was one of a committee appointed by Congress to draft a proclamation which was adopted and issued by Congress on the 26th day of October, 1781, designating December 13th as a day of general thanksgiving and prayer, in special commemoration of the confederation of the States, the victories of our allies at sea, the prowess of our troops, and the surrender of Cornwallis and his whole army at Yorktown.

Those familiar with Varnum's writing and addresses are of the opinion from the style and form of the proclamation that he was its draughtsman.†

The distinguished Dr. William Samuel Johnson, of Connecticut, who was in Congress with him in 1786, referring to General Varnum's Congressional career, said that "he was a man of uncommon talents and of the most brilliant eloquence."

In the "Memoirs of Elkanah Watson," an exceedingly rare book, may be found interesting details concerning Varnum. The writer describes some of his characteristics :

"I first saw this learned and amiable man in 1774, when I heard him deliver a Masonic oration. Until that moment I had formed no concep-

\* Memorial of James Mitchell Varnum. His publick services, and excerpts from his diary of events printed for subscribers.—Providence, 1792.

† "Proclamation for Thanksgiving issued by the Continental Congress, &c."—Munsell & Rowland, Albany, 1858.

of the power and charms of oratory. I was so deeply impressed that the effects of his splendid exhibition has remained for 48 years indelibly fixed on my mind. I then compared his mind to a beautiful parterre, from which he was enabled to pluck the most gorgeous and fanciful flowers, in his progress to enrich and embellish the subject."

General Varnum upon his retirement from the army devoted himself assiduously to the practice of the law, with increased reputation, and despite interruptions later for several years caused by his Congressional duties, became recognized as one of the leading and most brilliant men at the bar of Rhode Island, and was retained in all the most important causes.

Many great and important cases arose growing out of the relations of the nation to the state. One of the most notable of these, was the great paper money case of Trevett against Weeden, which stirred the community to its very foundation. The questions involved and their importance are fully set forth at considerable length in the biography of General Varnum in Updyke's Memoirs of the Rhode Island Bar. It was tried in September, 1786.

General Varnum was the counsel for the successful defendant, and his argument was considered masterly and convincing.

An attempt being afterwards made to impeach the Justices of the Supreme Court for their decision in the above case, General Varnum appeared for the judges, and his argument is described as having been "copious, argumentative and eloquent," and the attempt at impeachment fell through.

Mr. Updyke says, "It was eulogium enough on Varnum that the power of those speeches wrought such a triumphant victory over public opinion, that the dominant party, to save themselves from political prostration, were compelled to repeal their arbitrary acts within sixty days after their passage."

In another celebrated case in which Varnum took part, we have fortunately handed down to us a vivid description of the

personality of the leading counsel, Hon. William Samuel Johnson, of Connecticut, and General Varnum.

It was the fashion of the bar of that day to be very well or elegantly dressed, and after describing Dr. Johnson's appearance, and his dress of black silk cut velvet, Mr. Updyke then describes the opposing counsel :

" Gen. Varnum appeared with his brick-colored coat, trimmed with gold lace, buckskin and small clothes, with gold lace knee bands, silk stockings and boots (Gen. Barton and himself being the only gentlemen who wore boots all day at that period), with a high, delicate and white forehead, with a cowlick on the right side : eyes prominent and of a dark hue. His complexion was rather florid—somewhat corpulent, well proportioned and finely formed for strength and agility ; large eyebrows, nose straight and rather broad, teeth perfectly white, a profuse head of hair, short on the forehead, turned up some and deeply powdered and clubbed. When he took off his cocked hat he would lightly brush up his hair forward, while with a fascinating smile lighting up his countenance he took his seat in court opposite his opponent."

Mr. Wilkins Updyke in a personal letter to Hon. Benjamin F. Varnum (in the possession of his son John M. Varnum), dated in 1839, says :

" My eldest brother Daniel studied under General Varnum in 1784, and I have always been an ardent admirer of the character of the General \* \* \* General Varnum was one of the most eloquent men that this or any other country ever produced. All the aged bear testimony unanimously as to his wonderful oratorical powers, and he was beloved by everybody. No one thought himself safe in a trial without him."

General Varnum became an original member of the Society of the Cincinnati on December 17, 1783, and was the first Vice President of the Rhode Island branch of that distinguished military order, and after the death of General Nathaniel Greene, succeeded the latter as President, a position which he retained until his death. He presided for the last time at the annual

meeting held in the State House at Providence on the 4th July, 1787.

General Varnum was a warm and unwavering advocate for a federal constitution; he knew the inefficiency of the confederation, and the selfish considerations that governed the States, and felt that unless an instrument cementing the Union was speedily adopted, future efforts would be unavailing.

The following letter, dated August 24th, 1787, from him to Hon. Mr. Holton,—(probably Hon. Samuel Holton, a prominent member of Congress from Massachusetts)—gives General Varnum's views as to the proper form for a constitution. It will be noticed that the Constitution, as finally adopted after his death, followed substantially the lines suggested by him in this letter : \*

" My worthy friend :

You have several times hinted the difficulty of expressing upon paper, ones ideas of an energetic federal government, altho' convinced of the inadequacy of our present system. Permit me to devote fifteen minutes to this subject ; and, as detail or amplification is unnecessary to an informed mind, I shall confine myself to principles.

These principles may be considered under two heads. The first as originating from the confederacy and directing the various powers that should be exercised by the nation collectively, and by the States individually.

The second, as flowing from the nature of civil Society having due regard to the customs, manners, laws, climates, religions, and pursuits of the citizens of the United States. Under this head may be considered the manner of exercising these powers, or the formal government of the Nation.

In the first place, whatever respect the citizens collectively, or as immediately relating to the whole confederacy, whether foreign or domestic, must be subjected to the national controul & whatever respects the citizens of a particular State, & has relation to them as such should be directed by the States respectively. But as interferences may sometimes arise

\* This original letter is now in possession of Gen. James M. Varnum of New York.

the collective power must decide and enforce. This check would be better placed in the judiciary than the legislative branches.

In the second place. The Government of the United States should be so modified as to secure the rights of the different classes of citizens. But as these are distinguished by education, wealth & talents, they naturally divide into Aristocratical and Democratical. It is necessary then to form a Supreme legislative, perhaps as Congress is now formed, to originate all national laws, and submit them to the revision of a Senatorial body, which shall be formed out of equal districts of the United States, by the appointment of the Supreme legislative & whose commissions shall be so modified as to retain an equal number of old Members in office with the new, who may form a succession. In this body should reside the power of making war and peace.

The execution of the laws, both civil and military, should be placed in an executive council, consisting of a President of the United States, and the Officers of the great departments of War, Finance, Foreign Affairs, and Law, to be appointed by the Senate, & commissioned during good behavior, excepting the President, who should be appointed by both the legislative and senatorial bodies, & commissioned for a term of years, or for life. All appointments of Judges & other officers civil and military, should be made by the President, by and with advice of the council & commissioned in his name. These officers should be accountable for their conduct and triable before the respective tribunals before whom their actions would respectively be made cognizable. I think the President should not be liable to any direct prosecution as in him would reside that part of the sovereignty which displays itself in the etiquette of nations.

In this system, the balance would be secured, Military objects would be directed by the Senate, executed by the President and Council & checked by the fiscal power of the legislative.

The objects of revenue should be few, simple and well defined, & in case of very uncommon emergency, the States respectively should be called upon from contingents, which would form an ultimate and never failing check against encroachments upon the political system.

August 4th, 1787.

I am Sir, Yrs.

J. M. VARNUM.

Hon'ble Mr. Holton."

It would have been well if General Varnum could have been content to remain at his own comfortable home, with a wife whom he loved and cherished, in a state where he was at once a leader of the bar, and universally loved and respected and where all were proud to do him honor. But as a matter of fact, his health had become considerably impaired, and he had a tendency to weakness of the lungs, and the exposure of army life had implanted the seeds of pulmonary consumption in his system, which were aggravated by his constant laborious and strenuous work in his professional and in public affairs.

Varnum's judicial mind and public services, both in the army and Congress, had given him a reputation which extended throughout the whole country, and hence when the "Northwest Territory," a pet scheme of President Washington's, was formed (which included all the territory northwest of the Ohio) in 1787, Varnum was chosen as one of the Directors of the "Ohio Company of Associates" on August 29th, 1787; and on the 14th of October following, when General Arthur St. Clair was designated as Governor, General Varnum was appointed one of the United States Judges for that Territory, a position he accepted.

Accompanied only by Griffen Greene of Coventry, R. I., Varnum left his home in Rhode Island in the Spring of 1788, via Baltimore, and journeyed on horseback through the forests to Marietta, a town site selected by the New England Land Company at the junction of the Ohio and the Muskingum rivers. It is known that Varnum invested considerable money in the enterprise. The plans outlined partook of the methods of the speculative town boomers of the present age. The name finally selected was that of Queen Marie Antoinette, but the Roman classics were drawn upon in providing a Campus Martius, a via Sacra and a Capitolenum for the infant town. Malaria was prevalent and the location was a poor one in all respects.

He arrived at Marietta, Ohio, on June 5th, 1788, and at a celebration there on the 4th of July, was the orator of the day. Judge Varnum's oration was highly commended by all who heard it, and was subsequently published by the Directors of the Ohio Company, (Augt., 1788) copies of which are still extant, but extremely rare.

On the second day of July following, there being a quorum present (Generals Parsons, Varnum and Putnam), the Directors of the Ohio Company held their first meeting at Marietta, at which meeting, amongst other business transacted, was the change of the name of the city from Adelphia to Marietta.\*

A grand celebration of the national holiday took place at Marietta on the fourth of July, 1788.

It is described as follows by Mr. Charles S. Hall in his interesting life of General Parsons : \*

"There was a procession of the citizens and soldiery and a public dinner which was spread under a long bower built of intertwined oak and maple boughs near the North Point at the mouth of the Muskingum. The wealth of the rivers and forests was drawn upon to enrich the feast. Amongst the delicacies served was a pike weighing one hundred pounds. Patriotic toasts were given and an eloquent oration delivered by Judge Varnum.

Lamenting the absence of his Excellency Governor St. Clair 'upon this joyous occasion,' with uplifted hands he prays 'may he soon arrive,' and then turning first towards one and then towards the other, he thus apostrophizes the all unconscious rivers flowing on either side : 'Thou gentle flowing Ohio, whose surface as conscious of thy unequalled majesty, reflecteth no images but the grandeur of the impending heaven, bear him, oh ! bear him safely to this anxious spot ! And thou beautifully transparent Muskingum, swell at the moment of his approach, and reflect no objects but of pleasure and delight.'

Thus in the fertile soil of Ohio, by a Rhode Island man, the first seeds of western eloquence were sown."

\* Life and letters of Gen. S. H. Parsons, by C. S. Hall, Binghamton, N. Y., 1905-6.

One hundred and seven years later, on November 29th, 1905, a handsome bronze tablet was unveiled in the city of New York "to commemorate the great ordinance of 1787 establishing the Northwest Territory, and the sale of land to the Ohio Company of Associates."

The tablet is affixed to the portico of the United States Sub-Treasury in Wall Street, the site of Federal Hall, where the Congress met which enacted that ordinance. Upon it is an appropriate inscription, and in prominent letters also appear the following :

*"Directors of the Ohio Company, 1787:*

General Rufus Putnam	Rev. Manasseh Cutler
General Samuel Holden Parsons	General James Mitchell Varnum
Major Winthrop Sargent, Secretary	Colonel Richard Platt, Treasurer."

From the American Pioneer, Cincinnati, 1842, p. 64, we cull the following account of the opening of the United States Court for the Northwestern Territory :

"The first court held northwest of the Ohio River under the forms of court jurisprudence was opened at Campus Martius, Marietta, September 2d, 1788." \* \* \*

On the preceding 7th of April, General Rufus Putnam, with forty-seven men, had landed and made the first permanent settlement, in what is now the State of Ohio. General Harmar with his regulars occupied Fort Harmar. Governor St. Clair and Generals Parsons and Varnum, Judges of the Supreme Court, arrived in July.

From a manuscript written by an eye witness, we have the following account of the ceremonies on this first opening of court :

"The procession was formed at the Point (where most of the settlers resided) in the following order :

- 1st The High Sheriff, with his drawn sword.
- 2d The citizens.

- 3d The officers of the Garrison of Fort Harmar.
- 4th The members of the Bar.
- 5th The Supreme Judges (Generals Varnum and Parsons).
- 6th The Governor and clergyman.
- 7th The newly appointed Judges of the Court of Common Pleas (Generals Rufus Putnam and Benjamin Tupper).

They marched up a path that had been cut and cleared through the forest to Campus Martius Hall (stockade) where the whole countermarched and the Judges took their seats.

After a blessing by the Rev. Dr. Cutler, the Sheriff Col. Ebenezer Sproat proclaimed with his solemn "Oyez" the opening of a court for the administration of even handed justice.

Although this scene was exhibited thus early in the settlement of the state, few ever equalled it in the dignity and the exalted character of principal participation. Many of them belong to the history of our country in the darkest as well as the most splendid periods of the Revolutionary War. To witness this spectacle, a large body of Indians was collected from the most powerful tribes, then occupying the almost entire west."

We learn from another source that the Indians were specially impressed by the commanding aspect and the piercing eyes of the High Sheriff, Colonel Sproat, and that they gave him the name of Hetuck, or "Buck-eye," from whence is derived the cognomen by which the state of Ohio and its residents have since become generally known.

Judge Varnum assisted Governor St. Clair and Judge Parsons in framing a code of laws for the territory, but this was his last official act, as his health which had been constantly declining since he left home rapidly became worse, and it became evident to all that the end was not far off.

It was about this time that Judge Varnum, who was supposed by many of his acquaintances to be if not an agnostic at least devoid of deep religious convictions, wrote the following touching and beautiful letter to his wife :

" MARIETTA, 18th December, 1788.

My dearest and most amiable friend:

I now write you from my sick chamber, and perhaps it will be the last letter that you will receive from me. My lungs are so far affected, that it is impossible for me to recover but by exchange of air and a warmer climate. I expect to leave this place on Sunday or Monday next for the falls of the Ohio. If I feel myself mend by the tour, I shall go no farther, but if not, and my strength should continue, I expect to proceed to New Orleans, and from thence to the West Indies & to Rhode Island. My physicians, most of them think the chances of recovery in my favor; however, I am neither elevated nor depressed by the force of opinion; but shall meet my fate with humility and fortitude.

I cannot however but indulge the hope, that I shall again embrace my lovely friend in this world, and that we may glide smoothly down the tide of time for a few years, and enjoy together the more substantial happiness and satisfaction as we have had already the desirable pleasures of life.

It is now almost nineteen years since Heaven connected us by the tenderest and the most sacred ties, and it is the same length of time that our friendship has been increased by every rational and endearing motive; it is now stronger than death, and I am firmly persuaded will follow us into an existence of never ending felicity.

But my lovely friend the gloomy moment will arrive when we must part; and should it arrive during our present separation, my last and only reluctant thoughts will be employed about my dearest Martha. Life, my dearest friend, is but a bubble, it soon bursts, and is remitted to eternity. When we look back to the earliest recollections of our youthful hours, it seems but the last period of our rest, and we appear to emerge from a night of slumbers to look forward to real existence. When we look forward time appears as indeterminate as eternity, and we have no idea of its termination but by the period of our dissolution. What particular relation it bears to a future state, our general notions of religion cannot point, we feel some things constantly active within us, that is evidently beyond the reach of mortality, but whether it is a part of ourselves, or, an emanation from the pure source of existence or reabsorbed when death shall have finished his work, human wisdom cannot determine. Whether the demolition of the body introduces only a change in the manner of our being, or leaves it to progress infinitely, alternately elevated and depressed accord-

ing to the propriety of our conduct, or whether we return to the common mass of unthinking matter, philosophy hesitates to decide.

I know therefore but one source from whence can be derived complete consolation in a dying hour, and that is the Divine system contained in the Gospel of Jesus Christ. There, life and immortality are brought to light; there, we are taught our existence is to be eternal. And secure in an interest in the atoning merits of a bleeding Saviour, that we shall be inconceivably happy. A firm and unshaken faith in this doctrine must raise us above the doubts and fears that hang upon every other system, and enable us to view with a calm serenity the approach of the King of Terrors, and to behold him as a kind and indulgent friend, spending his shafts only to carry us the sooner to our everlasting home. But should there be a more extensive religion beyond the veil, and without the reach of mortal observation, the Christian religion is by no means shaken thereby, and it is not opposed to any principle that admits of the perfect benevolence of deity. My only doubt is, whether the punishment threatened in the *New Testament* is annexed to a state of unbelief which may be removed hereafter, and so restoration take place, or whether the state of the mind at death irretrievably fixes its doom forever. I hope and pray that the divine spirit will give me such assurance of an acceptance with God, through the merits and sufferings of his Son, as to brighten the way to immediate happiness.

Dry up your tears, my charming mourner, nor suffer this letter to give too much quietude. Consider the facts at present as in theory, but the sentiments such as will apply whenever the change shall come.

I know that humanity must and will be indulged in its keenest griefs, but there is no advantage in too deeply anticipating our inevitable sorrows. If I did not persuade myself that you would conduct with becoming prudence and fortitude, upon this occasion, my own unhappiness would be greatly increased, and perhaps my disorder too, but I have so much confidence in your discretion as to unbosom my inmost soul.

You must not expect to hear from me again until the coming Spring, as the river will soon be shut up with ice, and there will be no communication from below, and if in a situation for the purpose I will return as soon as practicable.

Give my sincerest love to all those you hold dear. I hope to see them again, and love them more than ever. Adieu, my dearest friend. And

while I fervently devote in one undivided prayer, our immortal souls to the care, forgiveness, mercy and all prevailing grace of Heaven in time and through eternity, I must bid you a long, long, long farewell.

JAMES M. VARNUM."

On the 10th day of January, 1789, General Varnum passed away, at the Campus Martius at Marietta.

His remains were interred there with great solemnity and respect.

The following was the

ORDER OF PROCESSION.\*

*Marshals.*

Mr. Wheaton, bearing the sword and military commission of the deceased on a mourning cushion.

Mr. Lord, bearing the civil commission on a mourning cushion.

Mr. Mayor, with the diploma and Order of the Cincinnati on a mourning cushion.

Mr. Fearing, with the insignia of Masonry on a mourning cushion.

*Pall Supporters.*

Griffin Greene,  
Judge Tupper,  
William Sargeant, Esq.

Corpse

*Pall Supporters.*

Judge Crary,  
Judge Parsons,  
Judge Putnam.

*Private Mourners.*

Mr. Charles Greene,  
Mr. Frederic Crary,  
Dr. Scott,  
Deacon Story.

*Private Mourners.*

Mr. Richard Greene,  
Mr. Philip Greene,  
Dr. Tinley,  
Dr. Drown.

*Private Citizens.*

Thirty Indian Chiefs.

Officers of Fort Harmer.

Civil Officers.

The Gentlemen of the Order of the Cincinnati.

Freemasons.

Mr. Clark, Mr. Stratton, Mr. Leach and Mr. Balch superintended the order of the procession, and the whole were preceded by Captain Zeigler

\* Providence Gazette, March 7th, 1789,

of Fort Harmar with troops and music. A very affecting oration was delivered on the melancholy occasion (January 13th, 1789), by Dr. Solomon Drown.

This oration was subsequently published by the Ohio Company. It was reprinted in "*The First Settlement of the Northwest Territory*," a pamphlet published at Marietta in 1888.

General Varnum's burial place was on a ridge northeast of the mound near the stockade, but his remains, with those of a number of other officers, were many years afterwards removed to Oak Grove Cemetery, where they now rest.

We here quote again from Mr. Wilkins Updyke, who says :

"It might have been gratifying to his vanity, but Gen. Varnum committed an unfortunate error in accepting the office to which he was appointed. He had impaired his constitution by a free and liberal life, and with an enfeebled physical system, to leave his family, his circle of friends, and the comforts of an old State, and a delightful mansion erected in accordance to his own taste, and ornamented to his fancy, to become a kind of pioneer in a new and unsettled country, among strangers, and in a society uncongenial to his habits, was delusive—fatally delusive.

Professional pursuits, in our populous cities, are both more reputable and profitable than any of our national appointments. Yet the over-powering charm of being pre-distinguished from among the people as capable, or being selected from among our associates as entitled to public honor, is too alluring to individual vanity. But the abandonment of our country, our firesides, and the endearing connections of home, is a sacrifice too dear for it all. And so the unfortunate Varnum found it, on horseback, and attended by a solitary companion (Griffin Greene), he left a country that honored him, and an idolizing people, and traversed eight hundred miles of wilderness, mostly devoid of the comforts of life. And at his journey's end was tabernacled in a rude stockade, surrounded by excitements, his disorders aggravated for the want of retirement and repose, breathing the deadly exhalations of a great and sluggish river, and protected, by military array, from the incursions of the western savage. The issue proved he had no chance for life, and with a constitution too much impaired to return, he there lingered and expired."

Mr. Updyke concludes with the following epitome of General Varnum's career :

"The career of Gen. Varnum was active, but brief. He graduated at twenty, was admitted to the bar at twenty-two, entered the army at twenty-seven, resigned his commission at thirty-one, was member of Congress the same year, resumed his practice at thirty-three, continued his practice four years, was elected to Congress again at thirty-seven, emigrated to the West at thirty-nine, and died at the early age of forty. From the time of his admission to the bar to his departure from the state was seventeen years; deducting the four years he was in the military service, and three years he was in Congress, his actual professional life was only ten years."

\* \* \* \*

A century has passed since General Varnum delivered at Marietta the first oration ever delivered in this country in the territory northwest of the Ohio.

Once again, and on the seventh day of April, 1888, there is a celebration at Marietta, now in the great and flourishing state of Ohio, on the occasion of the centennial anniversary of the founding of the great Northwest. And again in an oration delivered, the orator of the day is the Honorable George Frisbie Hoar, a distinguished Senator of the United States from the state of Massachusetts, and his oration\* is a magnificent tribute from posterity after the lapse of one hundred years, to the pioneers of 1788, and incidentally to the subject of this biographical sketch. We quote therefrom as follows :

"I do not believe the same number of persons fitted for the highest duties and responsibilities of war and peace could ever have been found in a community of the same size as were among the men who founded Marietta in the Spring of 1788. \* \* \*

'I knew them all,' cried Lafayette, when the list of nearly fifty military officers who were among the pioneers was read to him at Marietta in 1825. 'I knew them all. I saw them at Brandywine, Yorktown and Rhode Island. They were the bravest of the brave.'

\* Published by Charles Hamilton, Worcester, Mass., 1895. 6th edition.

Washington and Varnum, as well as Carrington and Lafayette, dwell chiefly, as was Washington's fashion, upon the personal quality of the men and not upon their public offices or titles. Indeed to be named with such commendation, upon personal knowledge, by the cautious and conscientious Washington, was to a veteran soldier better than being knighted on the field of battle.

\* \* \* \*

Your hearts are full of their memories. The stately figures of illustrious warriors and statesmen, the forms of sweet and comely matrons, living and real as if you had seen them yesterday, rise before us now," and amongst them "*Varnum*, than whom a courtier figure never entered the presence of a queen — soldier, statesman, scholar, orator — of whom Thomas Paine, no mean judge, who had heard all the greatest English orators in the greatest days of English eloquence, declared the most eloquent man he had ever heard speak."

---

Notes to the foregoing biography of General James M. Varnum.

#### HIS MILITARY AND CIVIL COMMISSIONS.

The only one of these commissions now known to be in existence is that issued to him by William Greene, Governor, Captain General and Commander in Chief of the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation, as Major General of the State of Rhode Island, which bears date May 10th, 1779. It was under and by virtue of this commission that Varnum, although no longer in the Continental Army, acted in coöperation with the Comte de Rochambeau and his force in Rhode Island, during the later years of the war of the Revolution. This commission is now in the possession of General James M. Varnum of New York, the namesake and kinsman of the officer to whom it was issued.

#### HIS SWORD.

One of his swords is still in existence, and in excellent preservation. It is the same shown in the portrait of General Varnum, a copy of which appears in this volume.

## HIS WILL AND ESTATE.

General Varnum by his will dated October 28, 1782, gave all his estate to his wife.

The will was admitted to probate at East Greenwich, May 30th, 1789, and his father in law Cromel Child was appointed his administrator.

The inventory shows that his personal estate was small — less than £300.

## BOOKS OF REFERENCE.

*Memoirs of the Rhode Island Bar*, by Wilkins Updyke, Providence. (Contains a long and interesting Biography.)

*Register of the Society of the Cincinnati in Rhode Island*, by Asa Bird Gardiner. (In press.)

*General James M. Varnum of the Continental Army*, by Asa Bird Gardiner (James M. Varnum collaborating). " Magazine of American History," Sept., 1887.

*The case of Trevett against Weeden*, by James M. Varnum, Esq., Major-General of the State of Rhode Island, &c., Counsellor at law and Member of Congress for said State. Providence—Printed by John Carter, 1787. (Copy in possession of James M. Varnum of New York.)

*Oration*, delivered at Marietta, July 4th, 1788, by the Hon. James M. Varnum, Esq., one of the Judges of the Western Territory, &c. Newport, R. I. Printed by Peter Edes, 1788. (Copy in possession of James M. Varnum, of New York.)

*Oration* of Dr. Solomon Drown at the funeral of General Varnum at Marietta on January 13th, 1789. (Original in possession of Henry R. Drowne, Esq., of New York.)

*Oration* of Dr. Solomon Drown at Marietta, April 7th, 1789, containing allusion to General Varnum. Worcester, Mass. Isaiah Thomas, 1789.

*Memorial of James Mitchel Varnum. His Publick Services and Excerpt from his Diary of Events*. Printed for subscribers. Providence, 1792. (This book is referred to and quoted from in "Paul Jones, Founder of the American Navy." Mr. Buell, the editor, made these extracts in 1886, but the compilers of this work have been unable after diligent inquiry to find a copy.)







HITTY VARNUM — 1797 — DANIEL SWETT

*The first Settlement of the Northwest Territory, Marietta, Ohio, April 7th, 1778.* Pamphlet published at Marietta in connection with the Centennial celebration, 1888. (Interesting.)

*Historical Address, by Rev. Dr. Goodwin,* at East Greenwich, R. I., October 15th, 1899, on the occasion of the 125th Anniversary of the Kentish Guards (with complimentary reference to Varnum).

*Paul Jones, Founder of the American Navy,* by Augustus C. Buell, Vol. 2, page 59. Chas. Scribner & Sons, 1900.

*Oration by Hon. James M. Varnum before the Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons in the Church at Providence, December 28th, 1778.* Providence, 1778. (Copy in R. I. His. Soc. Library.)

*Manning and Brown University,* by R. A. Guild, pp. 88 and 279. Biography 96-102. Gould and Lincoln, Boston, 1864.

*The First Commencement at Brown University,* by R. A. Guild.— Collections R. I. Hist. Soc. Vol. 7. Providence, 1885.

And many other histories, encyclopedias and articles relating to the Revolutionary War, the Continental Congress, and the State of Rhode Island, and the settlement of the "territory north-west of the Ohio."

108. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 29 Jan., 1749-50; died 11 Sept., 1821; married 26 Jan., 1773, by Rev. Amos Moody, to Molly, daughter of Jacob and Molly (Eames) Butler of Pelham, N. H., born 4 June, 1750, died 17 April, 1833.

Twelve children:

i. Hitty,<sup>6</sup> b. 2 Nov., 1773; d. 30 Dec., 1814; m. (int.)

7 Sept., 1797, Daniel, son of Abraham and Sarah (Bradley) Swett of Haverhill, Mass., b. 2 Nov., 1772, d. 9 Oct., 1824.

Nine children (Swett):

Mary Butler, b. 2 Aug., 1798; d. unm. 17 Oct., 1888.

Sarah Bradley, b. 2. Aug., 1798; d. unm. 10 Sept., 1877. Both were for many years school teachers.

Harriet, b. 24 Jnne, 1800; d. 12 Feb., 1886; m. 24 Sept., 1822, Samuel Bragdon, of Newburyport, d. 13 Apr., 1856.

Draeutt town records: "To all whom it may concern, Be it known that I have taken my granddaughter Harriet Swett into my family, and by the consent of her parents have adopted her as a daughter, and with their consent and at my request, she has assumed the name of Harriet Swett Varnum, and is hereby entitled to a share of my property equal to other daughters or their heirs.

In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand at Draeutt the 14th day of Sept., 1812.

Joseph Bradley Varnum.

By Act of the Legislatnre of Massachusetts passed 17 June, 1817, the name Harriet Swett became Harriet Swett Varnum. (State Records.)

Elizabeth, b. 3 April, 1802; d. 18 Dec., 1812.

Daniel, b. 14 April, 1804; d. 12 April, 1879; m. 27 May, 1825, Sarah Hnnt of Boston.

Hitty Varnum, b. 14 April, 1804; d. 5 April, 1876; m. 2 Sept., 1822, Benj. H. Swett of Lynn, d. 23 April, 1868.

Emily, b. 14 Sept., 1808; d. 9 Dee., 1854; m. 13 April, 1830, Dana Richardson of Draeutt.

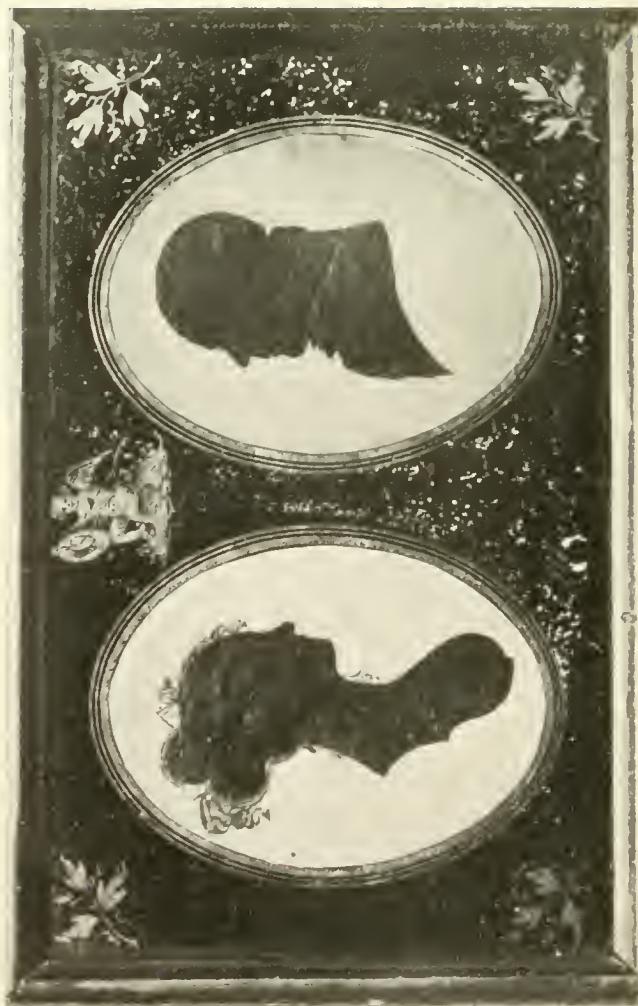
Charles, b. 10 Sept., 1809; d. 14 Sept., 1809.

Elizabeth Ann Appleton, b. 23 Aug., 1814; d. 26 Mar., 1852; m. 13 April, 1837, Walter Rockwood, b. 12 July, 1810, at Groton, Mass., d. 13 July, 1851, at Nashville, Tenn.

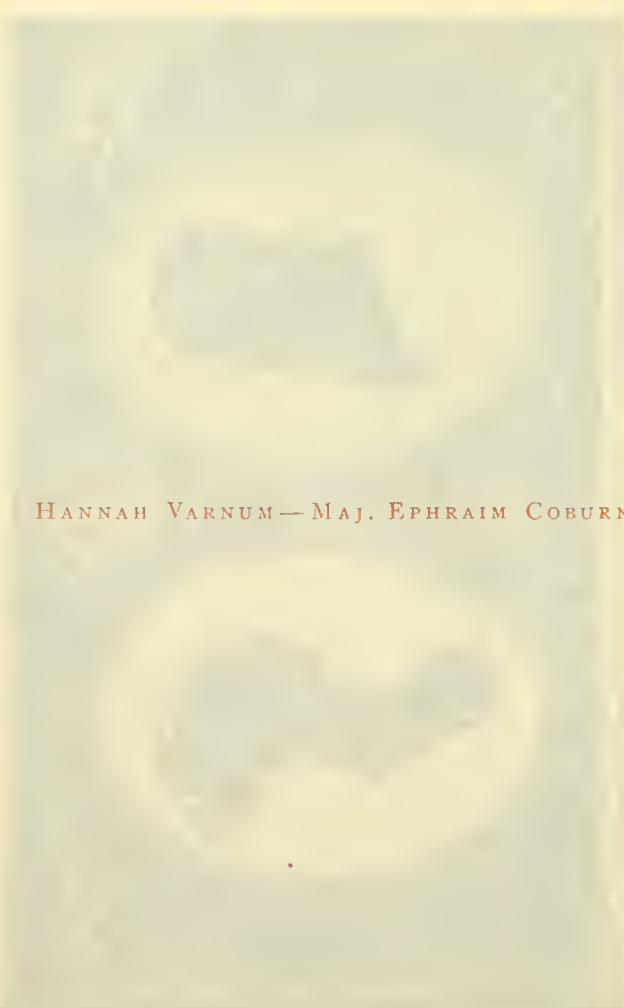
ii. Molly, b. 24 Feb., 1775; d. 12 Dec., 1866; m. 7 July, 1794, Gen. Simon, son of Simon and Keziah (Durant) Coburn of Draeutt, b. 17 Feb., 1770, d. 4 Sept., 1843.

Simon Coburn was commissioned Lieutenant in the 7th Regiment, 2nd Brigade, 3rd Division, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, 11 Aug., 1803; Captain, 6 May, 1806; Major, 29 July, 1809; Lt. Colonel, 2 Nov., 1811; and Brigadier General 3rd Regt. 2nd Brigade 3rd Division, 21 Sept., 1813. He lived on the Methuen road, a half mile below Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum. At his house, while on a visit, Mrs. Molly









HANNAH VARNUM—MAJ. EPHRAIM COBURN

(Butler) Varnum passed away in 1833. He was buried in the Varnum Cemetery where, twenty-three years after, his wife was laid beside him,

Seven children (Coburn) :

Samuel Adams, b. 13 May, 1795; d. 24 March, 1856; m. (1) Eleanor Varnum, (2) Rebecca Bradley, (3) Lydia Fish.

Mary, b. 18 Jan., 1799; d. unm. 4 March, 1877.

Joseph Bradley Varnum, b. 4 Aug., 1801; d. 19 Sept., 1869; m. Mercy Parker.

Thomas Jefferson, b. 17 April, 1804; d. 27 Dec., 1871; m. Sarah Tufts.

John Hancock, b. 11 April, 1806; d. 17 Dec., 1871; m. Jane Miller.

Emily, b. 15 June, 1811; d. 10 Jan., 1890; m. 17 May, 1832, Edward Tuck.

George Washington, b. 29 Nov., 1815; d. 23 Dec., 1888; m. 16 May, 1838, Mary Bamford.

iii. Phebe, b. 3 Feb., 1778; d. 11 Aug., 1778.

iv. George Washington, b. 21 Feb., 1779; d. unm. 8 July, 1812, at Lynchburg, Va.

v. Abigail, b. 7 Jan., 1781; d. 25 April, 1814; m. 15 May, 1803, Capt. Josiah Brown of Tewksbury.

One child (Brown) :

Jane, b. 22 Oct., 1804; d. 8 Sept., 1901; m. William Smith of St. Louis.

vi. Hannah, b. 18 Feb., 1783; d. 12 March, 1847; m. 23 June, 1805, Maj. Ephraim, son of Ephraim and Jane ( )

Coburn of Draentt, b. 28 Dec., 1777; d. 20 Aug., 1851.

Six children (Coburn) :

Jane, b. 22 Sept., 1806; m. Charles Morgan.

Mary Almira, b. 2 Feb., 1809; d. unm. 23 Oct., 1880.

Hannah Augusta, b. 30 April, 1812; m. George W. Gilman.

Joseph Bradley Varnum, b. 28 June, 1814; m. Lydia Carter.

Henry Dearborn, b. 1 Feb., 1817; d. 22 Oct., 1821.

Lauretta, b. 28 Dec., 1819; m. Fisher A. Hildreth.

- 117 vii. Joseph Bradley, b. 3 Jan., 1785; m. Mary Jane Graham.  
 118 viii. James Mitchell, b. 2 Aug., 1786; m. Mary Pease.  
 119 ix. Jacob Butler, b. 13 June, 1788; m. (1) Mary Jane Aikin; (2) Catharine Dodamead.  
 x. Phebe, b. 14 July, 1790; d. 1 Oct., 1863; m. 1815, Capt. Josiah Brown of Tewksbury, Mass.  
     Two children (Brown):  
     Josiah, b. 17 Sept., 1816.  
     William, b. 27 July, 1819; d. 27 March, 1867.  
 xi. John Hancock, b. 21 June, 1792; d. 26 Dec., 1801.  
 120 xii. Benjamin Franklin, b. 11 April, 1795; m. Caroline Bradley.

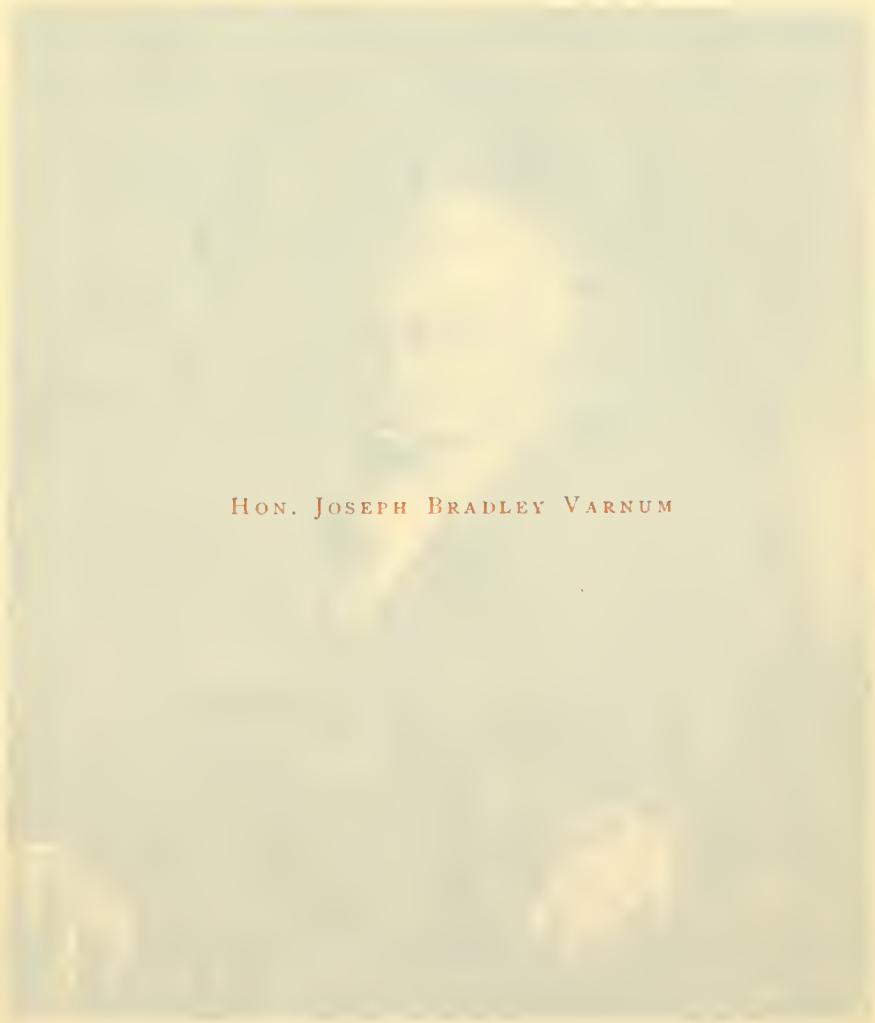
### JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM.<sup>5</sup>

*By John Marshall Varnum.<sup>7</sup>*

JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM was born, lived and died in Dracut on the farm left him by his father, Samuel. In his early years he had the common school advantages which was the lot of all youth of his day and generation, which although meagre in the light of modern educational advancement was an excellent foundation, because thorough even in its limits. Of his three brothers, James Mitchell alone attained to a college education, graduating in the first class of Providence College, now Brown University. Samuel Varnum, the father, like all New England farmers, could not afford to all his sons the same advantages of education, and Joseph Bradley, the third son, had to remain to carry on the home farm. He was, however, a youth with a definite purpose in life, and sought diligently to improve his mind with such means as was then available. It is said of him, that he used to lay down evenings before the blazing wood fire, and despite the fatigue and monotony of farm life, devote himself to study.

In his autobiography,\* written in the last years of his life, he

\* Autobiography dictated by him to and written by his niece, Harriet Swett Varnum, in 1818, in the possession of John M. Varnum.



HON. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM





MAURICE BRAUER

PRINTED IN U.S.A. BY THE STUDIO OF

ATLANTA, GEORGIA

MAIL BOX NUMBER 2000

FROM PORTRAIT STUDIO OF ATLANTA, GA.



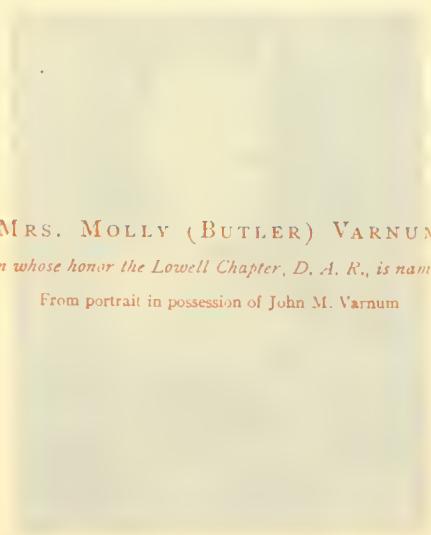
narrates that he had "but a very scanty library for a young man to refer to, in order to obtain knowledge without a teacher, but a strict attention to agriculture did not prevent him from often recurring to it, and he spent many hours in pursuit of his object." It was, perhaps, unfortunate that his self-taught knowledge, which in after life, with his commanding intellect, gained him high credit in the many public positions which he filled, led him to place undue stress upon it, and to regard a common school or academic education sufficient for his sons, who greatly lamented their deficiency of knowledge, although they all went to the academy at Westford, of which their father was one of the incorporators.

A thoughtful, studious boy, young Varnum could not but make a sober-minded man. Even at the age of thirteen he was mindful of the sense of his obligation to his Maker, and that turn of mind so actuated him during his long political career, that his character was ever of stern and inflexible integrity. Many years after, towards the close of his life (1818), he became an ardent Baptist, and together with his wife and others was immersed in the waters of the little brook flowing through his farm. There being none other than Congregational or Orthodox worship in the Dracutt Centre Meeting-house, to which he was an original subscriber, he joined the Baptist Society in Haverhill. Secession from stated worship, for which every man was compelled to pay tithes, was, in that day, rank heresy, and in consequence of this act the use of the Centre Meeting-house was denied to his son, for a funeral discourse after his father's decease.

When he was twenty-two years of age, he took unto himself a wife, who, in all senses, was a valuable and efficient helpmate. He speaks of her, after their forty-eight years of married life, and twelve children had blessed their union, of the "cordiality and friendship which had uniformly pervaded their minds since

their first acquaintance, and how when, in 1782, nine years after their marriage, they lost by fire their home and its contents, which their industry and economy had accumulated, yet finding that none of their dear children were consumed in the flames, they blessed God that nothing more grievous had befallen them." Molly Butler was the daughter of Jacob and Mary (Eames) Butler of Pelham, N. H., a town adjoining Dracutt. She was of sturdy New England stock, and ever retained the love and esteem of her husband, and the warm affection of her children. On the tablet to her memory, erected in the little burial-ground adjoining the Gen. Varnum farm, is justly inscribed: "Her children rise up and call her blessed." Her husband further says of her: "Throughout the whole of the struggle (Am. Revolution) he had the consolation and accordance of his beloved wife. When soldiers were called upon to go into service who were not possessed of blankets, she furnished them, even to taking of the last she had. When they needed shirts or knapsacks, she supplied them by cutting up her sheets, even to the head tester sheet of her own bed, relying on Divine Providence for strength to manufacture more." That she was a woman of sturdy independence and imposing dignity of character, is shown by her conduct during the inflammatory times of the Shays Rebellion (1786), which her husband, at the head of his military company, assisted in suppressing. He says: "Mrs. Varnum was visited by a number of those friendly to the insurrection, and insulted in a most menacing manner; but that heroic zeal and undeviating patriotism, which was her uniform characteristic during the Revolutionary War, enabled her to promptly repel their insinuations and menaces in such a manner as to compel them to retire with shame and discomfiture."

Samuel Varnum, on the marriage of his son, 26 Jan., 1773, gave him as his portion "160 acres of land, with half a dwelling-



MRS. MOLLY (BUTLER) VARNUM

*In whose honor the Lowell Chapter, D. A. R., is named*

From portrait in possession of John M. Varnum







house and a barn 30x30. A small portion of the land was under cultivation, but it was almost entirely without any permanent fence; but having been raised a farmer, he became attached to that occupation, and pursued it with all industry and perseverance, so that by economy of his wife and the aid of his children" he, in 1818, "owned 500 acres of land, the greater part under good cultivation, with extensive buildings, and more than ten miles of good stone fence upon it."

He was a practical and successful farmer, as is evident from the fact that his farm was the main means of support of his large family; at least, up to the times when his public services took him from his home to Philadelphia and Washington, in the early days of the Republic. A letter written to his son George in the beginning of his Congressional career, is an evidence of his practical turn of mind, and his deep interest in affairs on his Dracutt farm.

"Philadelphia, Nov. 28th, 1797.

You are no doubt apprised of the probability of a hard winter, and the Consequent necessity there will be of strict Economy In the Expenditure of every kind of Fodder. Tend the Cattle carefully, fodder them often, keep them clean and warm, water them three times in a day, and never give them more than they will Eat, and still Retain an appetite for more: all this will not only save fodder, but will be of much Service to the Cattle, both in their Flesh and Strength. Throw no Straw, or other fodder into the yard, on the common principle of making manure; but let it all be eat by the stock. The Calf which was nigh coming when I left home had best be Vealed, and killed at a month old. This will be a saving of at least four times the value of the Calf, by the milk of the Cow. Let all the Cows which give milk, be tyed together, that they may have provender and other high keeping; from this mode of Treatment additional profits will be derived from them. Do not fail to have all the Cattle curried every morning, & the Horses twice in a day, every day. Sheep, although Generally the least attended to, in the Winter season, in order to ensure profits from them, I think, require the strictest attention of any species of stock; they have a very delicate Taste, and although they will

live on very little when the Ground is bare if suffered to range, yet in that way they are but little profit to the owner; but if they are properly tended to, they are the most profitable stock a Farmer can keep; they should be watered often, have a small matter of sweet fodder at a time and frequently repeated; no oats should be suffered to lay before them from day to day, neither should their dung be suffered to remain in the Novel where they feed together for any considerable time. All Cattle, Horses, Sheep and Swine should have their feed at particular set times, each day; a scanty allowance in that way, will keep a Stock much better than even a Surplusage dealt out to them in a different manner.

In order to Succeed in any profession or Occupation in life it is highly necessary and important, to pay strict attention to the duties of it, and at all such times, as the nature thereof shall require. To be a Farmer, a consistent Farmer, happy in the Occupation, and respectable in Society, it is necessary to rise Early in the Morning, Pay Speedy attention to all necessary requirements, and take advantage of the Labours of the day, by performing the most arduous part, before the Sun arises to its Meridian Splendor. The strictest attention must be paid to the Buildings, Fences, Stock of Cattle, husbandry tools, and every species of produce. All necessary repairs must be Early made. No part of the produce must be suffered to be wasted or lost for want of care. Thus the Farmer becomes wealthy, respectable and happy. \* \* \* \* \*

I highly revere all the laudable professions and Occupations in Life, and I should be very happy to have it in my power to place each of my Children in such of them as they might choose. Yet From the variety of different situations I have Experienced, and the many professions and Occupations with which I have been acquainted, I have not discovered any other situation in which I think I could make myself so Comfortable and happy as in the cultivation of a good Farm. \* \* \* \* \*

I was about to close this Letter, but several matters of family, police, and agricultural relations, which I wish you to attend to, occur to my mind. I have been apprehensive from the severity of the weather since I left home, that you have not been able to compleat the plowing of the field assigned for planting Indian Corn the next spring. If that be the case, pray do not fail of Imbraeing the first opportunity to Effect it. Whenever the frost and snow will permit, if in mid-winter, let the plough be going until it is accomplished.

Be cautious of Cutting any Green Wood for the fires, if the winter will permit you to do otherwise, if not, select those Trees which are on the decay in the back Thicket. Let your wood be cut at the door, for summer, and neatly piled up. See that all the Husbandry Tools are kept under cover in their proper places, when they are not in use. Thrash the Grain as soon as possible and have it secured in Casks in the Corn barn. Dress out the flax before spring work shall Interfere. You will keep the doors, and the passages for water about the House, clear of Snow. Make a point of keeping all the windows of the House fastened down. Bolt all the doors, and lock the Corn barn every night. I hope you will be scrupulously attentive to the fires, see them properly Extinguished every night before you retire. Keep the Children at school; take them to Meeting as constant as the weather will permit. Minute your accounts in the day Book every Evening. Keep a Cash account of the money you receive & pay away. And I do Conjure you to be particularly kind and attentive to your Mam'm, and let all other kinds of business give way, when you can thereby become Subservient to her wishes, Comfort, or happiness."\*

His sons were kept on the home acres until fully of age, when their father's influence and their own sturdiness advanced them to more advantageous and lucrative positions. The youngest, Benjamin Franklin, by agreement, remained with his parents until their deaths, and received the larger share of the landed estate.

#### MILITARY SERVICES.

He early imbibed a taste for military life. At sixteen years of age, when "in 1767 the British troops were transported hither with an avowed design of enforcing submission to the mother country, he visited said troops in Boston from day to day, with a view to acquire a knowledge of military tactics and discipline to better enable himself to become useful in the defence and in anticipation of the Independence of his country."

\* Letter in possession of John M. Varnum.

"Previous to the war with the mother country, there was one military company in Dracutt, but not under any recognized authority, nor tactical instruction. The Boston Massacre in 1770 aroused and fired a latent spirit of the Love of Liberty and Independence in the old Town, and soon after the Massacre, there were formed two volunteer companies. One of these included about 70 men, and organized itself similar to the companies under the Royal Government. This Company unanimously chose Joseph B. Varnum for their Captain. The Train Band included men from 15 years of age upward. This Band met frequently, and made much progress, until December, 1774, when the Provincial Congress decided to enlist 12,000 men to act as Minute Men under any particular emergency. The Train Band then reorganized with Stephen Russell as Captain; Simon Coburn as Lieutenant; Abraham Coburn as Ensign, older men, but retained young Varnum as Instructor both to themselves and the militia under their command, in which capacity he continued to serve until the commencement of the Revolutionary War." He marched with said Company under Capt. Russell to the fight at Lexington. On Jan. 1, 1776, there was a reorganization of the militia, and Varnum was chosen Captain of the Dracutt companies of Minute Men and was accepted, and received his commission from the Bay State Council dated 31st of May, 1776.\* He held command of this Company until the 4th day of April, 1787.

Upon Capt. Varnum devolved the duty of keeping up the quota of requisition for men from his town, and he "never failed in a single instance." In this capacity he was of signally efficient service to the cause. The Continental Congress was continually calling on the thirteen States for men. None could or would enlist beyond a few months. Even at the siege of Boston, the Connecticut troops, their terms of enlistment ex-

\* Mass. Muster Rolls, Vol. xli. 155.

piring, refused to serve unless they were promised bounty, and many returned home because they were so refused, as no authority had been granted by the Continental Congress in the matter.

Capt. Varnum was drawn with his Command, 29 Sept., 1777; and marched to "reinforce ye Northern Army," and had "the consolation of seeing a whole British Army with Burgoyne at their head, march from the heights, music beating a retreat, upon the plains of Saratoga."

John Varnum in his Journal says,

"27 Sept 1777, Orders came for 1-2 of ye able bodied officers and soldiers immediately to march to Tyconderoga."

"29 Sept., Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum was drawn with 40 men to march to ye Westward."

"1 Oct., Capt. Varnum and his Company tarried until afternoon waiting for horses."

"2 Oct., The Company marched early in ye morning."

"12 Oct., Had news that our people had arrived safely to Bennington."

"16 Oct., Old Mr. Davis came home from the Army with ye horses that went with the last recruits. Brought word that our friends was all well, in high spirits, that Burgoyne's Army was retreating, our Army harrassing them giving battle. Got many advantages greatly embarrassing Burgoyne's Retreat."

"Sunday, 26 Oct., 1777. Lt. Ephm: Coburn, Jona: Jones, & Dr. Abbot came home from ye Army. Confirmed the surprising account of ye Wonderful Victory over Burgoyne and his whole Army, being about 7000 all taken, surrendered to Gen. Gates and laid down their arms to us, resigned their public stores, that our Militia was conducting them to Boston, expecting they would be in this week. Mr. Davis preached an excellent sermon suitable to the occasion, from that part of the song of Moses where Pharaoh & his host were pursuing the children of Israel, 'And God overthrew them in the Red Sea.'"

"1 Nov., Jona: Parkhurst came home from ye Army, brings word that all is well. Zealous for a fifer & fiddler for the grand appearance the day that Burgoyne's Famous Army is to be brought in. A Wonderful Show,

a day that our hearts should be employed to speak & live to the praise of God."\*

On the 29 July, 1778, Capt. Varnum was drawn with his Company, and marched in Gen. Lowell's Brigade to Rhode Island, to join Gen. Sullivan who was acting in conjunction with the French fleet under Admiral D'Estaing in repelling the British. This expedition was unfortunate in its results, as the fleet was scattered by a gale of wind, and the land force, after a sharp engagement, forced to retreat. Capt. Varnum's Company lost one man killed, two wounded and one missing. The Company served out its term of enlistment at East Greenwich and Warwick.†

\* A Muster Roll of Capt: Joseph B. Varnums Company of Volunteers from Dracutt, in Colo: Jona: Reeds Regt., State of Massachusetts Bay, who marched and reinforced ye Northern Army, according to A Resolve of the Great & General Court of that State 22 Sept. 1777.

Privates.

J. B. Varnum	Capt.	David Jones.	Josiah Hildreth.
Ephm: Coburn	Lft.	Samuel Barron.	Daniel Jaqueth.
Abijah Fox	Sergt.	William Abbott.	John Mears.
Jonas Varnum	"	Simeon Coburn.	Jona: Parkhurst.
Jona: Jones	"	Leonard Coburn.	Ebenezer Sawyer.
Timo: Parker	"	Saml: Coburn.	David Sawyer.
John Hancock	Corp.	David Coburn.	David McLaughlin.
David Trull	"	Saul Coburn.	Isaac Parker.
Josbua Pillsbury	Clerk.	Reuben Coburn.	Samuel Piper.
Barzala Lue	Fifer.	Jone: Crosby.	Jona: Taylor.
		Moses Davis.	Thomas Taylor.
		David Fox.	Solomon Woods.
		Zach: Goodhue.	John Woods.
Dracutt, 23 Jan. 1778.		Bradley Varnum.	Peter Hazletine.
(Military State Records of Massachusetts, Vol. liv. p. 45.)			

† Pay Roll of Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum's Company, Colo: McIntosh's Regt. Gen. Lovell's Brigade of Militia, from the State of Massachusetts Bay on an expedition to Rhode Island, July & August, 1778.

Reuben Lewis.	Saul Coburn.	James Harvey.	Thompson Bacon.
David Aston.	Oliver Coburn.	Paul Hill.	John Bowman.
Asa Spaulding.	Ephm: Crosby.	James Lewis.	Jesse Auger.
Wm Spaulding.	Benj: Danfort.h	Sam'l Coney.	John Webber.

In the winter of 1786-7, Capt. Varnum, leaving the Senate Chamber of the General Court, where he represented Middlesex County, marched with his Company to aid Gen. Benjamin Lincoln in quelling the Insurrection of Shays and others, in the western part of the State. While this was a short and bloodless campaign, it was a severe one, because of its being in the dead of winter. During this campaign, Gen. Lincoln found it necessary to send a post to the General Court at Boston, to procure funds to pay the troops. He selected Capt. Varnum who successfully performed the mission in three and one-half days, making a journey of 320 miles. For this he received from his commander the following letter of approval:

"Pittsfield, 12 Feby., 1787.

Sir:—The business for which troops were ordered out seems to be pretty much over. Your services will be important, and are much needed in the General Conrt. It is, therefore, my wish that you assign your Company to ye next officer and meet the assembly as soon as possible. Your example in turning out on this occasion meets the esteem of your Country and entitles you to its thanks. Mine you have most sincerely.\*

With Great esteem, I have the honor to be your ob't

Servant,      B. LINCOLN."

---

Jona: Heywood.	Wm: Danforth.	John Perham.	Ebr: Leman.
Jesse Heywood.	James Davis.	Wm: Parker.	Jona: Foster.
Oliver Bowers.	Josiah Fletcher.	Chester Parker.	David Merrill.
Oliver Farmer.	Levi Fletcher.	Simeon Parker.	Jona: Dunn.
Jona: Botteys.	Edward Farmer.	John Shed.	Andrew Hall.
Amos Bradley.	John Gordon.	Jona: Woodward.	John Thompson.
Jesse Butterfield.	Eben; Hunt.	Timo: Baneroff.	G. Flagg Lane.
Jeptah Coburn.	Jona: Hunt.	Nat: Ingalls.	Thomas Goodwin.
			Abraham Jaquith.

Dracutt, 6 Oct. 1778.

(Military State Records Massachusetts, Vol. liv, p. 22.)

"Ang. 1778, Six men were drafted from the militia to go to R. I., viz: Oliver Bowers, Josiah Fletcher, Levi Fletcher, Jona: Dunn, Jesse Heywood, Wm: Spaulding. Dr. John Beatty went as a volunteer and was chosen clerk of the Co. commanded by Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum. The above named were drafted for six weeks, and were in an Engagement in R. I., in which one man from Capt. V's Co. was killed, two wounded and one missing." Hist. of Chelmsford, p. 181.

\* Letter in possession of John M. Varnum.

He was chosen Colonel of the 7th Regt., 3d Division, Mass. Militia, in which he had served eleven years, and received his commission 4 April, 1787. He was a rigid and very successful disciplinarian and his regiment received high praise for its unexampled order and military spirit, at its first Muster in the autumn of 1787.

On the 22 Nov., 1802, he was made Brigadier-General; and on 12 June, 1805, Major-General of the 3d Division of the Militia of the State. When he died, in 1821, he was the senior Major-General in service. This long term of over 45 years of active and continued service is unparalleled in the history of military affairs in the State of Massachusetts. A part of it, from 1817 to 1821, was after his retirement from national politics, when his influence from such a source availed him nothing, and after too, he had excited much hostility because of his support of the war of 1812, unpopular in Massachusetts and throughout New England, which conduct was largely influential in his failing election for Governor in 1813.\*

The Adjutant-General's office of the State of Massachusetts reports that "under Act of Congress of 12 April, 1812, requiring the Commander-in-Chief to take effective measures for organizing the Militia, the Western Division of Massachusetts was organized under Maj:-General Jos: B. Varnum, to consist of 3,145 men, including officers, to form two Brigades"; and the War Department at Washington has this record: "The name of Joseph Bradley Varnum appears with rank given as Major-General in the Caption of a Pay roll of Capt. John Reed's Company, 3d Mass. Militia, detailed under General Orders of 6 Sept., 1814. This roll is dated Boston, Feb. 27, 1815, and is for the period from Sept. 11 to 13, 1814." Capt. Reed's com-

\* Strong, who had rendered himself peculiarly obnoxious to the Administration by refusing to call out the State's quota of Militia, received nearly 57,000 votes, while Senator Varnum (the Republican candidate) received 43,000. (Adams Hist. U. S., Vol. vii., p. 60.)

pany was serving under General Varnum, who was detached Sept. 5, 1814.

#### GEN. VARNUM'S MILITARY COMMISSIONS.

- As Captain 10th Co., 7th Regiment, County of Middlesex, Massachusetts.  
From the Councel, dated 31 May, 1776.
- As Captain 7th Regiment.  
From John Hancock, Governor, dated 1 July, 1781.
- As Purchasing Commissary and Agent.  
From Oliver Phelps, Supt. of Purchases, dated 14 July, 1781.  
By authority of the General Court.
- As Colonel 7th Regiment, 3d Division, Militia of Massachusetts.  
From James Bowdoin, Governor, dated 4 April, 1787.
- As Brigadier-General, 2d Brigade, 3d Division, State Militia.  
From Caleb Strong, Governor, dated 22 Nov., 1802.
- As Major-General, 3d Division, State Militia.  
From Caleb Strong, Governor, dated 12 June, 1805.

#### POLITICAL CAREER.

The New England States have generally been noted for a recognition of the ability and character of their sons in public life, and for honoring them with long tenures of political office. Mr. Varnum's entrance into State politics began in 1781, when he was thirty years of age, and from that time up to his death he was an active and prominent personality in State and National affairs. From 1781 to 1785 he represented his native town in the State Legislature. From 1786 to 1795, and from 1817, after the cessation of his Congressional career, up to 1821, the year of his death, he was a Senator from Middlesex County. In 1795\* he was elected a Representative from his

\* Hildreth, History of the United States, vol. iii., p. 577, says: "Among the new members of the 4th Congress was Joseph Bradley Varnum of Massachusetts, who had defeated Samuel Dexter after a violent and protracted struggle." Mr. Dexter was an eminent lawyer, and became Secretary of the Treasury during a part of the administration of the elder Adams. He was a federalist and a supporter of the treaty of 1795 between the United States and

District to the 4th National Congress at Philadelphia, and after the removal of the seat of Government was one of the first to sit as a member of the National House of Representatives at Washington.

At the beginning of his Congressional career, Mr. Varnum met with a rebuff which threatened to imperil his political life. Four memorials were presented to Congress from his District, impeaching his election, and demanding that he be regarded as ineligible to his seat as Representative. These protests were seized upon by his political opponents and made so much of that they seemed likely to cause him much trouble. It was alleged that inasmuch as he was one of the selectmen of Dracutt at the time of his election, he had allowed certain votes to be received and counted which were illegal if not fraudulent. At that period a citizen in order to qualify as a voter in Massachusetts, must be "possessed of 60£ in Real Estate or what was equivalent to 3£ yearly, in any property whatever." On Mr. Varnum's own motion the memorials were referred to the Committee on Elections.

When the matter finally came up, Mr. Varnum being called upon to vindicate himself, said "he did not think it necessary to speak on the subject. It was not very pleasant to sit and hear gentlemen from his own State treat him with all possible personalities; but he would submit with patience." This manly position was characteristic of him, and won him the sympathy of the House.

It came out in the investigation, and was a cause of offence to the Memorialists, that the "people of Dracutt were so satisfied as to give no information on the subject, and that the uni-

Great Britain. This measure of the administration was very unpopular in Massachusetts. Mr. Varnum was a republican and opposed to the treaty. Apropos of the controversy, the Providence, R. I., *Journal* of Sept. 19, 1795, under "Items from Salem, Mass.", published the following squib: "Should the treaty become the law of the land, the towns of Boston and Dracutt are determined to detach themselves from the Union, and form a mighty independent nation of themselves."

versal respect for Mr. Varnum where he lived, contradicted the old proverb that "a prophet is not without honor save in his own country." The report of the Committee was a complete vindication, and upset all the plans of the conspirators to ruin him. Its Chairman reported that "no one of the plaintiffs or their agent had appeared to prosecute the complaint; that the sitting member had evidence that the election in the town of Dracutt (the unfairness of which had been complained of) was conducted with justness and propriety, and though there had been some irregularities committed in other places, they were mostly owing to the misconduct of the petitioners, and that the conduct of the sitting member has been fair and honorable throughout the whole transaction. Your Committee are therefore of the opinion that Joseph Bradley Varnum was duly elected, and that the charges against him are wholly unfounded."\*

After the removal of the archives of the United States from Philadelphia, and the establishment of the Seat of Government at Washington, he continued to represent his District. In the Ninth Congress (1805–1807), he was a prominent candidate for the Speakership, receiving 24 votes, 57 being necessary to a choice. In the Tenth Congress (1807–1809), he was chosen, the vote being Varnum 65, Nathaniel Macon, candidate for re-election, 45, scattering 9. This election resulted in overthrowing the power of John Randolph, Speaker Varnum ignoring his claim to the Chairmanship of the Committee of Ways and Means, which position carried with it the leadership of the House.†

\* Annals of Congress. Vol. v., pp. 368, 369, 785, 789, 823, 838; vol. vi., pp. 1913, 1984, 1985, 1987.

† The schism which has taken place between the Northern and Southern Democrats, looks to me to be of such irreconcileable nature that it can never be healed. John Randolph and some of his friends lead the Southern Junto; while Bidwell, Gen. Varnum, Crowninshield and Gen. Thomas appear to manage the Northern phalanx. Gen Varnum, he has styled "Sworn Interpreter of Presidential messages," &c.—Letter of Col. Ben Tallmadge in Life of Mauasseh Cutler, page 327.

Speaker Varnum appointed in his place George W. Campbell of Tennessee.\* Concerning this important change, Hon. Albert Gallatin, then Secretary of the Treasury, wrote : "Varnum, much against my wishes, has removed Randolph from Ways and Means and appointed Campbell of Tennessee. It was improper as to public business, and will give me additional labor."† Randolph's aerbity of temper and bullying disposition had made him unbearable, and this change, if it did not expedite business, at least created harmony. In the 11th Congress (1809-11), Speaker Varnum received the compliment of a reëlection, the vote being Varnum 59, Goldsborough 17, Bassett 17, scattering 24.

On the question of Direct Taxes, Mr. Varnum made in Jan., 1797, a long and able speech. It is full of statisries taken from Government reports, and does him great eredit as a maiden effort. He said : "I am clearly of the opinion that any sums needed for defraying the expenses of the Government or for the payments of its just debts, ought to be raised by duties on imposts and excises. That is a method of taxation with which we are acquainted and which experience has taught us the operation of, under this Government. There are almost insuperable objections to a direct tax, and until all the objects of indirect taxation are exhausted I presume the Government will never adopt one."‡ He argued from figures taken from the annual reports of receipts and expenditures of the Treasury, that the proceeds from existing taxes would be commensurate with the demands of the Government for the ensuing four years. This doctrine was in unison with the political tenets of his party, and he eonsistently maintained it during his Congressional career.

\* Mr. Campbell became a member of the United States Senate, and took his seat the same session as Mr. Varnum (1811). In 1814 he was appointed Seeretary of the Treasury, by President Madison.

† Adams' Gallatin, p. 363.

‡ Annals of Congress, vol. vi., pp. 1879 to 1885.

On the question of receiving the petition of certain manumitted slaves, whom parties had seized and sold again into slavery, but who had escaped and fled into Philadelphia where they had been held under the Fugitive Slave Act, and had prayed relief from Congress, Mr. Varnum in Feb., 1797, said: "The Petitioners had received injury under a law of the United States (the Fugitive Act), and therefore had an undoubted right to the attention of the General Government. They declared themselves to be free, and he did not see any argument of force to convince the House that they were not. Surely it could not be said that color alone should designate them as slaves. To be deprived of liberty was more important than to be deprived of property."\*

On the question of striking out the clause relating to the punishment of persons found guilty of importation of slaves, insisted upon by the Southern members, Mr. Varnum voted in the negative. He remarked that he "thought the Southern States were in imminent danger from slavery. He recalled that he had heard a former member from the South compare that part of the Union to a bundle of combustibles which only needed a little fire to kindle a blaze which would consume them. He had often heard gentlemen from the South express this dread of the final ruin of that country from slavery."†

These expressions of his sentiments on slavery tally with the tribute paid him by Henry Wilson in his "Rise and Fall of the Slave Power in America," who quotes him as an earnest opponent of the traffic in human beings, and asserting it to be "equally criminal with the practice of the Algerines in carrying American citizens into slavery," which was a burning question in his day, and made the simile most caustic and forcible. "Where there was a disposition to retain a part of our species

\* Benton's Debates of Congress, vol. ii., 60.

† Annals of Congress, vol. xvi., 243.

in slavery, there could not be a proper respect for the rights of mankind.”\*<sup>\*</sup>

Such sentiments were far in advance of the morals of the time. The conscience of the North was not generally sensitive on the subject of slavery. It had not long disappeared in New England, and trade in slaves was winked at. In Dec., 1811, the brig “Saragossa,” from Bristol, R. I., was underwritten in Boston, “at and from the leeward coast of Africa to Havana,” in which policy it is stated, “The assurers are not liable for the mortality of the slaves, but take the risk of insurrection.”†

In May, 1798, on the question of a temporary Direct Tax, he made strong opposition, and said in reply to the argument that the said tax might at any time be repealed. “Although this House might consent to a repeal of this tax, it was by no means certain that the other House would consent to it. Indeed it was his opinion that if this tax was established as a permanent one, that the people of this country would not be relieved from it for many years. Many objects, no doubt, would be found by gentlemen over fruitful in this respect, upon which to expend any surplus which might arise from it.”‡

These were words of wisdom and foresight uttered on the threshold of our Nation’s history, and the legislation in our Country proves their accuracy. It has taken years of determined effort to wipe from our statute books laws or enactments made to fit peculiar exigencies, and Mr. Varnum’s prediction as to the bill referred to was a wise and sagacious warning.

Again in June, 1798, on the question of Direct Taxes, he interposed his objections. He said he “had always thought, since the establishment of our Government, that there should be no necessity for resorting to direct taxes, except in case of our being engaged in war ; but he now believed a majority of

\* Wilson, vol. i., 36.

† Original in possession of John M. Varnum.

‡ Benton’s Debates, vol. ii., 272.

the Government of the United States are determined on war, and he would on that account have given his vote for the bill, if the tax proposed was to be laid on just and equitable principles."\*

Party lines were strongly drawn in the early days of the Republic, and in March, 1802, the repealing of the Act of 1801 relating to the Judiciary was made an issue between the Republicans and Federalists.† Adams says, that the fear was that the Federalists, who had found the courts favorite places for their patronage and the setting forth of their theories as to government, would gain great advantage in the promulgation of their views through decisions. He asserts that Joseph Story, a republican, was elevated to the bench of the U. S. Supreme Court to offset the influence of John Marshall the Chief Justice.‡ In the debate, Mr. Varnum made a lengthy argument as to the right of Congress under the Constitution to repeal the Act creating the Court. It occupies many pages of the Annals, and is a strong exposition of his views. In his speech he pays this fine tribute to the judicial system of his State: "There has never been a Court of the United States of which the Judges possessed more eminence of character, ability, law-knowledge, impartiality, correctness of decision, and moral principle, than has adorned the Bench of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts from its first establishment under the present State Constitution up to the present time."§

In the Committee of the whole in the debate on the Act erecting Louisiana into two Territories and providing for the tem-

\* Benton's Debates, vol. ii., 304.

† "The Republicans were strict constructionists of the Constitution, narrowing down powers of the Federal Government to the express and exact terms of that instrument, while the Federalists claimed a broader and more liberal exposition in favor of the States. The opposition between these parties was the strength of State Sovereignty against Federal Sovereignty."—Life of Joseph Story, Vol. I., pp. 276-277.

‡ Adams' Hist. U. S., Vol. I., p. 260.

§ Annals of Congress, Vol. XI., pp. 971 to 981.

porary government thereof, Mr. Varnum was in advance of his party, and took strong ground as to the rights of the people. Adams says "Varnum of Massachusetts denounced the whole system, and demanded an elective legislature."\* In February, 1804, he said, "I am of opinion that the bill provides such a kind of government as never has been known in the United States. Sound policy, no less than justice, dictates the propriety of making provision for the election of a legislative body by the people. There is not only the common obligation of justice imposed on Congress to do this, but it is bound to do so by treaty. This treaty (with France) makes it obligatory to admit the inhabitants of Louisiana as soon as possible to the enjoyment of all the rights, privileges, advantages and immunities of citizens of the United States." He moved the reference to a select committee to so modify the act. Mr. Speaker Macon strongly supported Mr. Varnum in his views.†

On the question of Revolutionary Pensions, Mr. Varnum, in Dec., 1805, said that "during the late Revolutionary War with Great Britain, the Government of the United States thought proper to place on the Pension list, certain officers and soldiers who had been wounded or disabled in the war. It had so happened from a variety of circumstances, that a large number of our meritorious officers and soldiers of this description had not been on the list. A number of them had kept back and omitted to reap the benefit of the provision, under the expectancy of supporting themselves by their own industry or through the assistance of friends. He believed that many had been prompted to do this by the most laudable of motives. Many of them had since found themselves unable to earn a decent subsistence. A number of petitions of this kind had this morning been referred to the Committee on Claims, and Mr.

\* Adams' Hist. U. S., Vol. II., p. 123.

† Benton's Debates, Vol. III., p. 144.

Varnum said that it was his wish that a general and ample provision should be made for all who had been disabled. The Independence and happy situation of our country were owing to their exertions, and our wealth now enables us to make generous provision for their future comfort and welfare. He therefore moved that the Committee on Claims be instructed to enquire what further measures are necessary to be adopted to remunerate the meritorious officers and soldiers who were wounded or disabled in the Revolutionary war with Great Britain, with leave to report by bill or otherwise."\*

The offering of this motion was a peculiarly gratifying act to Mr. Varnum, who himself a patriot of the Revolution, felt deeply for those whose pride had kept them from receiving the bounty of the Government and for whose relief a special enactment was necessary.

In January, 1808, a bill was under consideration by the Committee on the Whole in the House, "to provide more effectually for the national defence by the Militia of the United States."

It authorized the President, on the appearance of national danger, to order out the militia of the United States, to be known as the "Junior class of Militia." This bill was a peculiarly obnoxious one to Mr. Varnum, who thoroughly acquainted with the militia system from experience and practice, being at the time a Major-General of the Militia of the State of Massachusetts, and having been an officer in continuous service from 1776, saw clearly the shortcomings and defects of the measure and its utter impracticability. There was no man more competent to throw light on such a question than himself, and his words on this and a subsequent occasion, on a bill of similar import in the Senate, carried a conviction which led to its defeat. Mr. Varnum (Speaker) said "he hoped the committee

\* Annals of Congress, vol. xv., 267.

would rise, and be refused leave to sit again on this bill. He believed that the situation of the United States at present would by no means admit of the classification of the militia. If ever it was necessary this is not the proper time. It had been said that the classing had been recommended by the several Presidents of the United States. If that is a fact it was not known to him. He could see no kind of advantage to be derived from the proposed modification of the militia system. Were not the militia, under the present laws, equal to any service which could be required of them? If particular States had failed to carry into effect the part assigned them by the Constitution, would any other plan induce them to attend to it? It was a fact that where State Governments had taken up the subject of the organization and discipline of the Militia and carried it into effect as far as in their power, those States had a respectable body of militia, from 18 to 45 years in age, banded together as brothers in arms, and they from their discipline, would regard it as an invidious distinction if men at particular ages were selected from the mass, and thus destroy the present efficiency. He was aware that it has been said that the militia was inefficient in some parts of the United States. What was lacking, was that subordination which existed in other sections, and nothing more."

"It has been said that in the course of the Revolutionary war the militia in some instance abandoned their posts; but he was sure that the credit due to the militia of his part of the country had not been awarded. In some of the hardest battles of the war the principal actors were the militia. There is a radical difficulty in the system proposed. The bill provides that none shall be called into general service except those from 21 to 26 years of age. Is it expected that young men will be better able to perform military duty than those who have become veterans in the service, who have experienced the advan-

tages of liberty, and who have families and property to defend? The Constitutions of some of the States provide that the Captain and Subaltern of each Company shall be chosen from the whole Company from the age of 21 to 45. The officers would generally be over 46 years of age. The practice is at variance with this bill."

"Gentlemen may suppose that it is an easy thing for the State Governments to alter their systems to conform to the requirements of the General Government; but it is a matter which some States will not do. The militia at the present time in some parts of the United States are well organized and disciplined, and display a spirit of emulation which does them honor. In the State he had the honor to represent, there are 70,000 militia, all fully armed and accoutred. They are individually subject to a fine of \$8.00 for every time they appear without arms, and if not always provided, to a fine of \$10.00 per annum. This severe regulation results in universal arming. Very few troops, take them from what part of the world you will, are better disciplined than our companies of artillery, every man of which is completely uniformed at his own expense, and every company of which is supplied with brass field pieces, of which they have 150. The whole body of militia would be ready to march, if called upon, in 12 hours notice, and under officers of their own choice would go into service with alacrity. They would consider it a hardship to see their younger comrades called into a State which did not happen to adjoin their own while they could not march to assist, as this bill provides that men between 26 and 45 shall go no farther than the border of their own or an adjoining State. If an enemy were to land in Connecticut the brave militia of New Hampshire or Vermont are not to assist in repelling them because the said States are not adjoining. It is the flower of the militia which is to be slaughtered, instead of repelling the en-

my by the whole force of the body. Every man capable of bearing arms should be called upon to take part in the defence of his neighborhood, when invaded. It was felt to be a hardship in the time of the Revolutionary war that every man capable of bearing arms should be compelled to do his part, scarcely a man being left to till the ground ; but it was essential to the safety of the country. Have we increased to such a degree of population that we can afford to now leave at home three-fourths of our able bodied men ?"

" This bill embodies a system which has many times been before the House for consideration, and has always been found impolitic to adopt. I hope at this critical juncture that we shall not wholly disorganize the militia because some persons do not choose to submit to military discipline and the subordination essential thereto. I am ready to assert that if the system is adopted, that our militia will be broken up, as the States have laws now in force in conformity with the Act of 1792 for the organization of the militia, and under said laws are ready to act."\*

Later, in the same month, the subject was again under discussion, and the Annals state, " Mr. Varnum opposed the bill with considerable spirit and force."† The result finally was that the measure died in the hands of the Committee, probably because its advocates were at last brought to see its inutility. It may be that the results of these early efforts of the General Government to enact laws to gain control over the militia of the several States led to the final abandonment of the subject. The General Government has never exercised control over the militia of the States, always making its requisitions, in case of war, through the governors. Even in the war of 1812, the Governor of the State of Massachusetts (Strong) refused to

\* Annals of Congress, vol. xviii, 1484-5-6.

† Annals of Congress, vol. xviii., p. 1508.

acquiesce in the requisition of the President of the United States (Monroe).

The speech just quoted was the last appearance of Speaker Varnum on the floor of the House, and he spoke only on this occasion, in Committee of the Whole, to discuss a matter dear to his heart, as he was an active participant in the military affairs of the State he had the honor to represent, and from the inception of its military system had been its able exponent.

The State election in Massachusetts in 1808 resulted in the choice of Christopher Gore as Governor. Gen. Varnum was one of the candidates of the Republicans ; the defeated ticket being Levi Lincoln of Worcester (afterwards elected Governor), and Joseph Bradley Varnum of Dracut, Lieut. Governor.\* The campaign of 1811 yielded a very important triumph for the party to which Gen. Varnum belonged. It had several times elected its candidate for Governor, but had failed to gain full control of the Legislature. In 1810 it elected Elbridge Gerry as Governor and a majority of Representatives, but lacked one vote of control of the Senate. The election of 1811 gave a majority of 40 in the House and secured the election of its candidate (Joseph Story) for Speaker and the one lacking vote in the Senate.

"This triumph was indeed a real one, for it enabled the Republicans to send Speaker Varnum to the Senate of the

\* The official returns in State Archives of this election are :—

Gore for Governor . . . . .	47,916
Lincoln for " . . . . .	45,178
Varnum for Lieutenant Governor . . . . .	44,729
Cobb " " " . . . . .	47,540
Necessary to choice . . . . ,	46,662

As an evidence of the virulence of polities of those days the following copied from the *Columbian Sentinel*, April 1st, 1808, is in evidence: "The Reyd Clergy or the Deacons of the two religious societies in the Town of Worcester are invited and requested to certify from the best evidence they can obtain, how many times the new Democratic Candidate for Governor entered either of the houses of worship on the Lord's day, from Jan. 1, 1797, to Jan. 1, 1808, making a period of 10 years and including 520 Sabbaths."

United States in place of Timothy Pickering, whose term had expired, and at a critical moment of our history made Massachusetts a Republican State.”\*

Joseph Story, Speaker of the House of Representatives of Massachusetts, and afterwards Justice of the United States Supreme Court, wrote May 7, 1810, of this contest : “ In the glorious struggles of the Republicans I have not been an indifferent spectator, and I now have the right to rejoice in the honorable triumph they have achieved against intrigue, influence and wealth. We shall elect a Senator in the place of Mr. Pickering or at least (if the Senate do not concur) we shall save our State from being misrepresented. Let us enjoy the present moment, and with sincere congratulation ‘ pursue the triumph and partake the gale.’ ”†

In the Senate Gen. Varnum was made chairman of the Committee on Military Affairs. During his term as Senator (1813) he became the candidate of the Republican party and received the nomination of Governor of his State against Caleb Strong, who represented the anti-war element.‡ This campaign and

\* MacMaster's History of the People of the U. S., vol. iii., pp. 422-423.

† Story : Life and Letters, vol. i, 198.

‡ The election for Governor was held April 15, 1813. The Republican banner bore the inscription :

FREE TRADE & NO IMPRESSMENT.

AMERICAN REPUBLICAN CANDIDATES.

HON. JOSEPH B. VARNUM  
for Governor

HON. WILLIAM KING  
for Lieut. Governor

of Massachusetts for the ensuing year.

The vote stood: Strong, 56,463; Varnum, 42,789; necessary to choice, 45,670.  
A doggerel of this campaign ran as follows:

“ Let peace and commerce flourish long,  
I give my vote for Caleb Strong;  
But those who wish for war and tax,  
Oh, darn 'em!  
Let 'em vote for Gen. Varnum.”

that of Lient. Governor in 1808, resulted in the only two defeats of his political career.

Adams says: "Of all supporters of the war (1812) Senator Varnum was one of the steadiest. He was also the highest authority in the Senate on matters pertaining to the militia. When Giles's bill came under discussion (Nov. 6th, 1814), Varnum began the debate with a speech vehemently hostile to the proposed legislation."\* He said: "I am deeply impressed with the importance of the present crisis of our national concerns, and the necessity for the adoption of strong and energetic measures calculated to meet and repulse the force which the enemy contemplate placing in the field against us. No man in this Senate will go farther than I shall feel disposed to go, to effect the object which is dear to every friend of the nation, provided the measures pursued shall appear to me founded in justice and equity."

He first objected that "although the bill purported to call for an army of 80,000 men, yet in some of the subsequent sections of it we find that instead of realizing the pleasing prospect of seeing an ample force in the field, said force is to be reduced indefinitely, which contradiction in terms, inconsistency in principle and uncertainty in effect, cannot fail to produce mortification and chagrin." He objected to drafting men from the militia for two years service, "because the principle of nine months service was already established by common law. If the nation wants a regular force, why not make it a part of the regular army, without a system of militia drafting, unnecessary, unequal, and unjust. The machinery of classification and draft is wholly impracticable. The limit of service to adjoining States, abandoned the objects for which the Union existed. The proffered bounties would ruin the recruiting service for the regular army. The proposed exemptions and

\* Adams's History of the United States, vol. viii., pp. 269, 270.

deductions in terms of duty, left no permanency to the service. The bill inflicted no penalties, and charged no officers with the duty of making the draft. I consider the whole system as resolving into a recommendation upon the patriotism of the States and Territories and upon the patriotism of the classes."\*

"The justice of Varnum's criticism could not fairly be questioned," Mr. Adams concludes.† This view was supported by Senator Daggett of Connecticut, who immediately followed Mr. Varnum, and by Jeremiah Mason of New Hampshire, "a man second to no one in legal ability or in personal authority." Senator Christopher Gore, formerly Governor of Massachusetts, although opposed to Mr. Varnum in politics, supported him in opposition to the bill.

Formerly the office of President *pro tem* of the United States Senate was held to be a very important position, made especially so by its relation to the Presidential office. In Dec., 1813, Senator Varnum was chosen to preside over this body, and after the expiration of his term was repeatedly chosen as Chairman of the Committee of the Whole. At the close of his career as Senator from Massachusetts, when the overthrow of his party had ended his congressional services, his constituency thought him too able and sound a counsellor to relegate to private life, and from the successive years of 1817 to 1821, the close of his life, he represented them in the Senate of the State of Massachusetts.

He was a member of two important Conventions in his State: that of 1787, to ratify the Federal Constitution; and that of 1820, to revise the State Constitution. Over the latter he was the main presiding officer, President John Adams and Chief Justice Parker, the regularly chosen Presidents, being unable to perform their duties, the former declining the honor because

\* Annals of Congress, vol. xxviii., pp. 58-69.

† Adams's History of the United States, vol. viii., p. 270.

of enfeebled age, and the latter being unable to actively serve because of ill health. Gen. Varnum's weight of character and great experience as a legislator gave him a very important standing in this Convention. He was made Chairman in the Committee of the Whole, and that of the Militia. On questions of parliamentary law and methods of procedure, he was constantly appealed to, and his decision went without debate. The deference paid him, and the high honor of being selected and presented to the Convention by Chief Justice Parker, as President *pro tem*, who spoke of him as one "whose long public services in high stations, and whose able exertions in the Convention, entitled him to the respect of his country," was exceedingly gratifying to his feelings. In a letter written at that time to his wife, he says, of the high esteem shown him by members :

" BOSTON, Dec. 2d, 1820.

MY DEAR WIFE:

\* \* \* \* \*

I have really been much disappointed since I came here. I did expect that the old frowns of Federalism would be poured down upon me in Torrents; but from some Observations which I made in regard to the Rules of procedure in the Convention, and my Presidency in the Chair since, when in Committee of the Whole, seems to have eradicated every Idea of party prejudice in regard to me, and I am now hailed as the Sunnum bonum of Order in the Convention. Many gentlemen have declared to me that they had been impressed with an Idea that I was opposed to principles of order and good Government; but that they had found out their mistake, and now all parties eulogize me as holding principles of correct intention."\*

He appears to have made no lengthy remarks in the Convention, except on the matter of religious toleration. This came up in the debate on incorporating denominational religious

\* Letter in possession of John M. Varnum.

societies. Gen. Varnum said, "if he had not been assigned to a duty which was incompatible with his taking any part in the debate, he would not have had occasion to detain the Convention at this late period. He would make no profession as to his regard for religion : his conduct would speak for itself ; nor would he make any invidious distinctions between different sects or denominations. He would wish all to live in fellowship so far as their principles were consistent with pure morality and the good of society. He wished the gentlemen would unite and adopt something which would give satisfaction to the denominations. For this purpose he hoped they would do away with all technical difficulties, and gave a full discussion to the subject before the Convention. It was a matter dear to the people at large, and they counted upon its being fully deliberated upon. It was for the benefit of all interested that we should act with such a spirit of conciliation as all might go home satisfied. We all agree until we come to the difficulties arising from differences of sects and denominations. He wished that everything like discrimination might be done away with, and we come together like brothers. It has been decided by the Supreme Court that before the law of 1811, no society was within the meaning of the article unless it was incorporated. It has been the practice to tax every person in the parish where he lived in disregard of what he might pay for the support of his own religious teacher. After burdening the Parishes with collecting ministerial taxes assessed on them from persons belonging to other Societies, it was often necessary to restore the money to the religious teacher to whom it justly belonged. He contended that every person should be taxed only by his own denomination, and that the Parish ought not to be put to the trouble of levying and collecting a tax nor a religious teacher nor the person paying it, the trouble of getting the money back. He was astonished that so many gentlemen from the Town of Boston were

opposed to everything that gives religious toleration. He was never better pleased than when the honorable Chief Justice, his associate in the chair, the other day came forward and in so manly a manner, advocated the rights of conscience and of private judgment in matters of faith and worship. He thought that everything like an intolerant spirit in religion was fast passing away, and he trusted that before long men of all denominations would be willing to worship together. He wished to promote this harmonious spirit, and to adopt a principle which would permit men of all beliefs to retire from this Convention satisfied with a work well done and one broadly promoting the cause of Christian fellowship."\*

This speech from General Varnum, who was brought up under the tenets of New England Congregationalism, and became in his later years a Baptist, distinguishes him as a man of very advanced liberalism, broad and catholic in his convictions, and remarkably progressive for his day.

#### HIS POLITICAL COMMISSIONS.

State of Massachusetts. House, - from 1781 to 1786.

" " " Senate, - " { 1786 to 1795.  
" " " " { 1817 to 1821.

National Congress. House, - - " 1795 to 1811.

" " Speaker of, - " 1807 to 1811.

" " Senate, - - " 1811 to 1817.

" " Pres. *pro tem* of, 1813.

State of Massachusetts. Convention to ratify Federal Constitution, 1787.

Delegate to Convention to amend State Constitution, 1820.

#### HIS CIVIL COMMISSIONS.

Justice of Peace and Quorum - from 1787 to 1818.

Chief Justice, Court of Sessions,† " 1807 to 1811.

Member of Governor's Council, 1787, 1792.

Sheriff of Middlesex Co. (declined), 1794.

\* Debates, Massachusetts Convention, 1820, pp. 562, 563.

† Established 3 July, 1782, "To hear and determine all matters relating to the conservation of the Peace, cognizable by them at common law." An amendatory Act of 19 June, 1807, provided for a Chief Justice and a number of Associate Justices throughout the State.

## PERSONALITY.

John Randolph, who was never so happy as when imputing base motives to his political opponents, and whose sharp tongue was dreaded by all his associates in Congress, in the debate on Spanish affairs in the house, 7th April; 1806, charged Gen. Varnum as being the author of certain expressions and opinions as to President Jefferson, asserting that he "seemed thunderstruck and humbled" at the charge. "As to being humbled," replied Gen. Varnum, "I have never felt humbled by any man. I have never yet felt nor shall feel afraid of the face of mortal man. I have been many years in the service of my country, and I have never heard any argument that I was unwilling to meet, if it was worthy answer. I have done my duty unconscious of injury to any man."\*

This incident illustrates the type of character of Gen. Varnum. He was fearless and independent. Throughout his whole political career there is no evidence that he lacked the courage of his convictions. He stood manfully up in maintenance of the right of petition in the case of manumitted slaves in the national Congress at Philadelphia in 1797, and for the freedom of religious thought in 1820, in the Massachusetts Constitutional Convention. Throughout his whole career he was strong and sturdy as a leader of his party, when Massachusetts and Maine were one political community, and was a consistent Republican, even when supporting the war of 1812, an unpopular measure in his section.

In 1809, when he was the nominee of his party for the office of Lieutenant-Governor with Levi Lincoln of Worcester as the candidate for Governor, he reluctantly permitted the use of his name, and only consented because of party fealty. His letters at that date show that he did not anticipate success ; moreover, his position as Speaker of the National House was a congenial

\* Annals of Congress, vol. xx, pp. 987, 988.

one, and he had nothing to gain by resigning it.\* The *Boston Patriot* of Mar. 21st, 1809, said of him, "Gen. Varnum has spent the chief part of a laborious life in the public service. He is a farmer; a statesman and a soldier; of such estimation at Washington, that he was recently elevated by that august body, the House of Representatives, to the Speakership—a situation honorable to the country which has been so long distinguished by his useful services."

As a farmer he was so devoted to that pursuit, that he was ever speaking in its praise to his sons, as a vocation, and eulogizing it as the choicest, most honorable and most satisfying of occupations. His ancestors had been large, original land owners in Dracutt, and although his military and political life had led him into other and varied activities, he still clung to the arduous life and labor of a farmer. He well knew the hardship of it, for he says in his autobiography, "With his own hands he laid miles of stone wall," to enclose his aeres.

It was a tribute to his personal worth, that as a Republican, and a leader of his party, he had the close confidence and esteem of the illustrious Jefferson. His relations with the elder Adams, Jefferson, Gallatin, Gerry, Granger, and other famous statesmen in the early history of our country, is attested by letters from them, carefully preserved by his descendants. One from John Adams, of 19 closely written pages, is alluded to by Joseph Story, at that date a member of Congress from Massachusetts:

" Washington, Jan. 14, 1809.

President Adams has written a very long letter to Gen. Varnum on our national affairs. He speaks in great approbation of the Administration, and goes the whole length in vindication of our national rights. I assure you that I read this letter with the greatest delight, and regretted that for

\* Nathaniel Macon of Georgia, who was a candidate for Speaker with Gen. Varnum in the contest in 1809, said in withdrawing his name, "I regard the office of Speaker of the House one of the most honorable in the nation—perhaps none were more so after that of the President and Vice-President." Macon was Speaker 1807—1809.

a moment, I had ever doubted his patriotism. The letter would do honor to any man living."\*

In personal appearance, Gen. Varnum was a man somewhat inclined to corpulence; of about the average height, having a light complexion, with dark blue eyes. The portrait accompanying this sketch has been pronounced by those who knew him in life, to be a very accurate likeness, and to convey a just impression of his personal appearance. His mental powers were of the highest order. He was a man of uncommon accuracy of judgment, and his opinions were given with promptitude. He was regarded as "the most distinguished man of his time in the Merrimack river valley." His republican simplicity was pronounced. He would wear no clothing of foreign manufacture. His apparel was of homespun, prepared by his wife on her loom at the homestead farm. Some years before 1790, one Ezekiel Hale came to Dracutt and engaged in business at Beaver brook—that of fulling, dyeing and dressing the homespun cloth made in the farmers' families. In 1810, Mr. Hale made a bolt of his finest cloth, and presented it to Gen. Varnum, who had it made into a suit of clothes, which he proudly wore as he sat as Speaker of the National House at Washington.

On the 4th of March, 1817, his term as Senator ended, and with it his congressional career. A letter to his wife describes his relief at laying down the cares and duties of his long service:

" Washington, Dec. 28, 1816.

My dear Wife.

With consolation, satisfaction and gratitude, I anticipate the fourth of March next, which will free me from the solicitude of serving my country in situations which have compelled me, for a considerable part of the time each year for thirty-seven years past, to abandon the enjoyment of domestic happiness."†

\* Story, Life and Letters, Vol. 1, p. 192.

† In possession of John M. Varnum.

On his retirement to his home farm, his active political life did not end. He was elected Senator from Middlesex County to the Legislature of Massachusetts in 1817; and was a member at time of his decease in 1821. He was Senior Maj. General in the military service of his State. He was chosen a delegate to the Convention for the revision of the Constitution of the State in 1820.

He passed away on the 11th Sept., 1821, from a sudden attack of angina pectoris. His son Benj. F. made this entry in his Journal, the month previous: "Father instructed me in case he should suddenly be taken away, to have a common coffin with a box, and no parade of military, and to purchase and hoist a black flag at halfmast."

His decease was sudden. He rode out on the day preceding it, but being indisposed speedily returned, and found his dissolution rapidly approaching. He called his family around him, acquainted them with his situation, gave directions that his funeral might not be attended with any military or civic parade, appointed his pall bearers and calmly awaited the final summons.

From the house to the little burial ground where his body has its last resting place, is but a step. There were no carriages, only a procession on foot, the coffin on a bier, borne by the pall bearers, followed by the family and those who came to pay the last tribute.

The *Columbian Sentinel* of Sept. 15, 1821, said of him: "In all the offices he held, Gen. Varnum exhibited an assiduity which never tired, and an integrity above suspicion. Though of late years he differed on some points of political economy, from the majority of his fellow-citizens of the State, it may with truth and justice be affirmed that at his death, Massachusetts did not contain a more honest or independent man."

---

## THE STORY OF SILAS ROYAL.

*By John M. Varnum.*

These records would not be complete without appropriate testimony as to Silas Royal, the faithful and loyal black servant of Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum, who lived for a greater part of his life in his family, and who was provided for in the will of the General, and died a member of his household. A tradition in the family is to the effect that he and his sister, when infants, were purchased in Boston and on being conveyed in saddle bags to Dracutt, one, the sister, was unfortunately thrown out, resulting in her death.

"Ryal" Varnum, as he was most generally known, was the house servant of Gen. Varnum. Early in the Revolutionary war, he served as a privateersman on board the brig Franklin of Salem. Joseph Roberson, master, and shared 1-4 of its prize money. He also served on the sloop Revenge, Jos. White, commander. The latter made a cruise in 1776 and took many prizes. Ryal's share of the prize money amounted to 146£ 1s. 7d., of which 4£ was paid to him and the balance to Joshua Wyman, who claimed his services. In Sept. 1777, Ryal sued said Wyman for the recovery of this sum and got judgment. The Court Records state "Concord, Ct., 13 Apr., 1779. The defendant brings into Court 112£ 12s 6d, in full satisfaction of this action, which is accepted by the ptf. and he takes the money out of Court with him." In this case, John Lowell, ancestor of Judge John Lowell of Boston, was Ryal's counsel.

In January, 1776; he enlisted in the Continental service, and was stationed at Prospect Hill, in Capt. John Reeds' company, Col. James M. Varnum's regiment. In this he served until the April following, when he was released and went into service as a privateersman.

An interesting and exciting event in his career is thus set forth in the Journal of John Varnum:

June 19, 1778. This morning while at breakfast, heard that Joshua Wyman had sold Ryal Varnum, that ye news was brought from Westford by Joseph Varnum Jr., and that sd Ryal was carried off in a covered waggon Handcuff'd. On hearing of which Immediately called for my horse, Galloped to Jos. Varnum's to know the Certainty. He confirmed it. Sent him to Capt. Jos. to come Immediately & Joyne in ye pursuit to Relieve sd Ryal. He came Immediately. Sent Jonas with my horse. Gave Jonas \$20 to bare his expenses, with orders to pursue with all possible speed, overtake, Bring back, and not suffer such arbitrary voyalance to Escape with Impunity. They pursued. Came to Woburn, found the News confirmed. That it was ye infamous John White, the Seurrious Tinker of Haverhill, that Bought him (at ye same time knowing sd Ryal was a freeman) sd White had Imprisoned him, Woburn people had liberated him. Sd White laid a false charge against him. Said that he was an Inlisted Soldier in ye Continental service, that he had received \$20 Continental money & had Deserted, that he had stole from sundry persons, & was a thief, & that if ye prison Could not hold him, ye guard should & Profainly Swore that he had bought him & would have him someway, and on that complaint, altho he knew it to be false, he put him under Guard. There is ye Infamous White, That hath worked by some means or someway to be a Quartermaster for ye Army at or near Boston, a fine post to get money when Truth nor Honour be not regarded.

June 20, Capt. Jos. & Jonas Varnum went to Boston. Complained to Gen. Heath Against sd White, had sd Ryal liberated & a promise from ye General that he would take Notice of said White. They gave him sd White's Just Character, he promised that he would take Notice of it. They went to White, Informed him what they had done. He was extremely angry, Curst & Swore very Profainly, they dealt him very sharply for his Conduct to Ryal. He said that he did not know that Ryal was free. They told him that he could not know that his Crime alleged against Ryal for which he was put in Gaol was true, but that he knew ye Contrary. He said that all such Damd Neagroes ought to be Slaves. They told him that Ryal was as Good a man, & of as much honour as he, at which he was extremely angry & profain. Laid his hand on his Hauger

by his side. They told him that they had seen Hangers & men before they had seen him or his, that they was Ready to answer him any way he pleased, that they could not forget his Conduct towards Ryal, that they on sd Ryal's Behalfe should Bring an action of Damage for false Imprisonment, that such arbitrary Tyrants & menstealers should not go unpunished. They came to Wyman's ye same Day, Gave him ye like trimming."

Among the papers\* of Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum, who is the Capt. Jos. referred in the foregoing narrative, there is preserved the declaration of said White regarding Ryal, which was probably obtained from White in preparation for the suit which was commenced against Wyman. By it, it appears that the seizure and imprisonment was in pursuance of a conspiracy to ship Ryal south and dispose of him as a slave:

I, John White, solemnly declare that I purchased a Negro named Royall of one Joshua Wyman of Woburn, in the county of Middlesex, State of Massachusetts Bay, sometime the last of the spring or beginning of the summer of 1778, for which I paid him fifty-six pounds lawful money. Sd Wyman declared to me on his word of honor that if I would sell the sd Ryal to some other southern officer, so that he might never return again to New England, he would give me some consideration therefor (as he said) on account of his infamous character as a thief &c. And that he, the sd Wyman, still retains the money from me that I gave him for said negro, alledging that he is my slave for life, and that it is my fault that I do not make him so. This I solemnly protest to be the truth.

JOHN WHITE.

NEWBURYPORT, SEPT. 28, 1779.

There is also this paper, showing that proceedings were commenced against said Wyman, being instructions from Ryal from his counsel, Col. James M: Varnum of Rhode Island, brother of Capt. Joseph Bradley Varnum, said paper bearing the caption, "Instructions for Silas Royal in his action vs Joshua Wyman, to be tried before the October term of Superior Court in the County of Bristol, Oct. 1779."

\* In possession of John M. Varnum.

1. Take deposition to prove the bill of sale made to White.
2. Take deposition to prove that Wyman has confessed that he made such a bill of sale, that he was sorry for what he had done.
3. Make deposition to prove your confinement in irons &c., that Wyman was knowing to it, and that White intended carrying you to South Carolina as a slave.
4. Find out, if possible, who were witnesses to the bill of sale, and take their depositions.
5. Take deposition to prove yt Wyman intermeddled in the affair of your release, and endeavored to have those prosecuted who released you. Let the witnesses ascertain as near as they can, the date of the bill of sale.
6. Get a copy of ye whole case at ye Superior Court when your freedom was declared.

J. M. VARNUM.

P. S. Desire ye Justees of Peace to be particular in their eaptions, *viz*:

A plea of Trespass whereof Silas Royal is Pt and Joshua Wyman Deft. Depending before ye Superior Court at Taunton, in Oct. A.D. 1779.

N. B. Follow your Instructions exactly without minding other people's nonsense.

J. M. VARNUM.

The suit was brought by Ryal, who claimed damages against Wyman to the amount of £5000. Wyman's answer in defence was, that the action against him ought not to be maintained because sd Royal was purchased by him on the 1st Aug.. 1767, and was his negro slave, having been sold to him by Maj. Samuel Varnum.

Aside from the personality of the plaintiff, the case is very interesting from the appearance of so many Varnums, James and Jonas being the sons of John Varnum, whose interest is set forth so dramatically in his narrative: Capt. Joseph and Col. James M. being the sons of Maj. Samuel Varnum, the original master of Ryal, and Joseph Varnum Jr., being the brother of Maj. Samuel. In passing, it may add to the story to state, that John Varnum the father, and his sons James and Jonas, lived near Pawtucket falls in Dracutt; Joseph Jr., near Beaver brook

or central Draenett, while Maj. Samuel Varnum and his son, Joseph Bradley, lived four miles down the river towards Methuen, so that it was no small task to get the parties interested together to save Ryal from being carried off out of the State.

The testimony of James Varnum was that "sd Royal enlisted into the Continental service in January 1776 & joined his Regt. at Prospect Hill, & did duty there as a soldier in Capt. Reed's Co. and Col. Varnum's Regt., & until the Regt. was ordered to march southward the 1st of April following, when the sd Wyman appeared & made a verbal promise to Royal that as he had a bill of sale of him that if he would return home, he would deliver up sd bill of sale & that he would give him his freedom & 100 acres of land. Thereupon Royal was released from service and afterwards joined a privateer."

The testimony of Joseph B. and Jonas Varnum made before Justice John Varnum was that "sometime in June, 1778, we heard from Persons of Veracity that Joshua Wyman of Woburn had sold Silas Royal, and that the Silas Royal was seen in a wagon with irons on his hands, between Cambridge and Waltham, the sd Royal crying for help, as was supposed; But the wagon being drove fast, were not able to make any pursuit. Upon this intelligence we set out in order to rescue the sd Royal, if possible, from being sent forth as a slave, supposing this to be the Intent of the Purchaser."

Among the papers in the case in the Suffolk County records where the source of these affidavits, and proceedings are to be found, appears the following additional paper, being the bill of sale given by said Wyman to the said White:

"Rec'd of John White, Esqr, Quartermaster in Gen. Nixon's Brigade, fifty-five pounds for my negro man named Royal, whom I warrant a slave from, by or under me, the subscriber, according to the Bill of Sale of the same Royal under the hand of Maj. Samuel Varnum, dated Nov. 4th, 1767, Reference to the same being had June 9, 1778. JOSHUA WYMAN."

Alas for the glorious uncertainties of the law! The case was duly tried before an Inferior Court of Common Pleas at Taunton, Bristol County, on the second Tuesday of Sept. A.D. 1779, and Ryal lost his suit being taxed the costs. He appealed from this decision and the case was again tried Oct. 10, 1780, with the result of a confirmation of the verdict of the lower Court.

Ryal lived to a good old age, dying in 1826, May 3d, and was buried in the little burial ground where rest the remains of Maj. Samuel Varnum and his son Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum. His expressed wish was to lie beside an Indian, who was buried in a remote corner of the ground, asserting his belief that he was not worthy to lie in the family burial lot, where it was intended to place his body. He was exceedingly punctilious as to respect he felt due him as Gen. Varnum's servant. If any of the young men of Dracutt failed to take off their hats to him when they met him on the road, he would cry out "Boys! where's your manners?" and failing recognition would send his cane after them in double-quick time.

To his last day he retained the respect of everybody, he being a colored man of remarkable dignity of manner, and to whom was entrusted all the police of the farm management.

---

109. DANIEL VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 22 Feb., 1762; died 31 Dec., 1822; married (1) 3 Mar., 1789, Persis, daughter of Joshua and Persis Hale of Haverhill, by his brother, Joseph Bradley Varnum, J.P. She died 12 Dec., 1796, aged 30 years.

Four children:

- i. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> b. 6 Nov., 1789; d. 10 April, 1839; m. 13 June, 1809, Frederick Noyes of Methuen.

Ten children (Noyes) :

Mary, b. 1 Jan., 1810; m. Brinsley Stevens.

Hannah Varnum, b. 28 Sept., 1811; m. Moody B. Abbott.

Sarah, b. 26 April, 1816; m. Rev. Joseph Burbank.

Caroline Persis, b. 31 Mar., 1819; m. (1) James Colliston, (2) Charles Wilson.

Emily, b. 25 Sept., 1821; m. D. F. Shannon.

Lydia Jane, b. 18 July, 1824; d. 22 April, 1839.

Ellen Varnum, b. 23 Jan., 1827; m. Holsey Bendick.

Frederick, b. 5 April, 1829.

Charles D. Varnum, b. 28 May, 1832; m. Harriet Williams.

Fanny, b. 13 Oct., 1833; m. William Chickering.

121. ii. Daniel, Jr., b. 21 Aug., 1791; m. Naney Prescott.

122. iii. Joshua, b. 7 Nov., 1793; m. Susan Hildreth.

iv. Persis Hale, b. 15 Mar., 1796; d. 29 Feb., 1856; m. (int.) 22 Dec., 1821, James Mitchell, son of Samuel and Abiah (Varnum) Barron of Dracutt, b. 16 Jan., 1786, d. 12 Jan., 1860. No issue.

He married (2) 26 June, 1798, Polly, daughter of Daniel and Polly (Tenney) Butler of Pelham, niece of Mrs. Molly (Butler) Varnum, born 2 Mar., 1779, d. 11 July, 1837.

Children:

i. Polly, b. 29 June, 1799; m. 27 Nov., 1827, by Rev. Joseph Merrill of Dracutt, Paul Tenney of Nottingham West, N. H.  
Two children (Tenney) :

Augusta Coburn, m. William H. Foran.

Harriet Varnum, m. Walter M. Hunt.

ii. Harriet, b. 11 Feb., 1801; d. unm. 23 Feb., 1884.

iii. Prudence Gale, b. 1 Dec., 1802; d. 4 May, 1882; m. 25 Dec., 1820, Daniel Thissell of Dracutt, b. 4 Oct., 1801, d. 12 Jan., 1862.

Eleven children (Thissell) :

Daniel Varnum, b. 14 Feb., 1821; d. 3 Jan., 1905; m.

- (1) Frances Downes, (2) Cynthia Libbie.  
Lydia Ann, b. 3 Aug., 1823; d. unm. 3 Feb., 1898.  
Charles Augustus, b. 13 Jan., 1825; d. 3 Apr., 1883;  
m. Hester Ann York.  
John Wallace, b. 4 Sept., 1826; m. Mary Ann Fox.  
Orphah, b. 3 March, 1828; d. 25 Dec., 1891; m. Alan-  
son Briggs.  
Franklin Tenney, b. 29 March, 1830; d. 11 June, 1882;  
m. Adeline N. Colburn.  
George Nelson, b. 2 Aug., 1832; m. Martha J. Carter.  
Jane Coburn, b. 8 May, 1834; m. Richard A. Elliot.  
Mary Ellen, b. 7 Feb., 1839; m. Franklin P. Boynton.  
William Henry Harrison, b. 27 July, 1841; d. 11 Aug.,  
1842.  
Prudence Augusta, b. 21 March, 1842; d. 9 Nov., 1875;  
m. Charles E. Briggs.
- iv. Mehitable, b. 20 June, 1806; d. 1 June, 1884; m. 2 Dec.,  
1829, by Rev. Joseph Merrill of Dracutt, to Franklin Tenney  
of Nottingham West, N. H., brother to Paul Tenney, who  
married her sister Polly, b. 17 Jan., 1803, d. 22 Nov., 1896,  
at Washington, D. C.

He lived in Nashua ten years pursuing his trade as harness-  
maker. About 1845, sixteen years after marriage, he re-  
moved to Manchester where he became a member of the firm  
of Tenney & Hubbard, dealers in family groceries. Later he  
became proprietor of the Elm Street and City Hotels in that  
city. In Nov., 1857, he was attracted to Washington, D. C.,  
where he leased the National Hotel, which had been closed  
nearly a year because of a mysterious and fatal sickness which  
had broken out among its guests. This occurrence was just  
prior to the inauguration of President James Buchanan, and  
was a supposed attempt to poison him. Under the able and  
judicious management of Mr. Tenney, the hotel early regained  
its former good repute, and because of its proximity to the  
Capitol, and its homelike character, became the favorite abid-  
ing place of prominent men of the nation—Judges of the Su-

preme Court, Senators and members of the National Congress, and during the Civil War, the leading Generals of the Army. Mr. Tenney was its successful and popular landlord for forty years, his death occurring shortly after the relinquishment of interest in its management. He was a man who held the affectionate regard of all who knew him, of the strictest probity, of the broadest sympathy, and of most gentle and kindly charity.

Two children (Tenney) :

Georgette Avarina, m. (1) Dr. Warren Chamberlain,  
(2) Dr. Josiah Chamberlain.

Emma Brown, b. 1 June, 1845; d. 31 Jan., 1879; m.  
30 June, 1870, John Wesley Ross.

- v. James Mitchell, b. 25 Nov., 1809; d. 23 Aug., 1899; m. by Rev. Amos Blanehard of Lowell, to Sarah Durgin of Newfield, Me. He was educated at Phillips Academy, Andover. Became a calico printer on the Merrimack corporation, Lowell, and afterwards Superintendent of the Manchester Print Works. He was, for nineteen years, a member and Captain of the Lowell Mechanics Phalanx, prior to the Civil War one of the crack military companies of the State of Massachusetts.
- vi. Charles Butler, b. 3 Dec., 1812: d. 14 Sept., 1819.

Major Daniel Varnum, as he was generally known, lived and died on the paternal acres in Dracutt. His military title came to him after the Revolutionary war, in which he was too young to serve, from his having been on the staff of his brother, Major-General Joseph Bradley Varnum. His father conveyed to him, in 1785, when he was twenty-three years of age, 128 acres of land and "1/2 my dwelling-house divided by the middle of the chimney, with land whereon the said house stands," having previously made a conveyance to his son, Joseph Bradley, of the other or western half. About this date the house was destroyed by fire, and Major Daniel erected on the site a very handsome house, still standing (1906). It is located on the

river road to Lawrencee, and is one of the best specimens of country or farm mansions of that date in Dracutt. His brother, Joseph Bradley, had a little earlier, erected on land conveyed to him in 1772 by his father, the dwelling across the road, in which he lived and passed away. The family fires were kindled, in the non-striking of the tinder-box, matches not having been invented until fully half a century later, by the borrowing of live coals from either house.

Major Varnum represented his native town in the Legislature of Massachusetts, during the successive years of 1809, 1810 and 1811, and filled many town offices with great credit to himself and the approval of its citizens. He was buried in the Varnum burial ground near his house, in the Varnum range, in the sixty-first year of his age.

110. MOSES VARNUM<sup>5</sup> (*John,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 8 Aug., 1759; died 30 Dec., 1833; married (1) Lucy Mereer, (2) Sarah Dean, born 1762, died 22 Sept., 1833.

Nine children:

- 123 i. Moses,<sup>6</sup> b. 27 Aug., 1774; m. Sophia Stacey.
- <sup>7</sup> ii. Sarah, b. 1792; m. 16 April, 1825, Moses Lemen.
- 124 iii. Jewett, b. 6 Aug., 1794; m. (1) Rachel Dixon, (2) Ann Shields.
- iv. John.
- v. Frederick, m. 2 Mar., 1820, Susan Gilman.
- 125 vi. Justus Bradley, b. 24 Nov., 1799; m. Sarah Ann Dixon.
- vii. Hannah, m. 30 Dec., 1822, Josiah Frost.
- viii. Rebecca, m. Mill Nye of Chester, O.; 2 children.
- ix. Mary, m. Daniel Barker; 8 children.

MOSES VARNUM was born in Dracutt and removed to Maine about 1790, becoming one of the early citizens of Belfast. "In 1802, he and James Badger, both citizens of Belfast, gave to the inhabitants and their posterity forever, to be used as a Com-

mon or Market, the triangular piece of ground at the foot of Main street, known as 'Paddle Dock' or Dock Sq.: Varnum was a trader, and had a store fronting the Common. He was the principal owner of lot 35, and through him is derived title to some of the most valuable real estate in Belfast."\*

He, early in the century, removed to Marietta, Ohio, and finally to Illinois Territory, where he died.

111. PRESCOTT VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 16 March, 1769; died 26 Oct., 1843; married (1) Elizabeth, daughter of Archibald & Elizabeth (MacKean) MacAllister of Londonderry, N. H., born 20 May, 1770, died 4 July, 1810.

Ten Children:

- i. Mary,<sup>7</sup> b. 7 July, 1790; m. Jonathan Fletcher of Chelmsford.
- 126. ii. James, b. 15 March, 1792; m. Elmira Melvin.
- iii. Elizabeth, b. 2 Feb., 1794; d. 9 June, 1867; m. 20 Sept., 1820, Marquis de Lafayette, son of Saml & Hannah (Jones) Coburn of Draett, b. 27 Dec., 1793, d. 28 March, 1867.
- 127. iv. Prescott, Jr., b. 24 Feb., 1796; m. (1) Lucy Presbury, (2) Elizabeth Clements.
- v. Nancy, b. 1 March, 1798; d. 4 Aug., 1827; m. 1 Dec., 1815, Amos, son of Dr. Amos & Lydia (Jones) Bradley of Draett, b. 9 May, 1790.

Four Children (Bradley):

- George Prescott, b. 24 Apr., 1816; d. U. S. service.
- Amos Lewis, b. 26 Apr., 1819; d. in Savannah, Ga.
- Cyrus Augustus, b. 6 April, 1822; d. 29 Apr., 1896; was ordained to the Universalist ministry, 6 Nov., 1845; m. Lucretia, dau. of Capt. Freeman Foster of Brewster, Mass.

John Varnum, b. 11 June, 1824; d. 12 Feb., 1896; m. Augusta Ann Dinsmore.

- vi. Hannah, b. 7 March, 1800; d. 13 Dec., 1842; m. 3 May, 1821,

\* Williamson "History of Belfast," pp. 139, 683.

Samuel, son of Samuel & Prudence (Wood) Richardson of Dracutt.

Ten Children (Richardson) :

- Phineas, b. 11 Nov., 1821.
- Edward E., b. 16 May, 1823.
- Prescott Varnum, b. 8 May, 1825.
- Samuel Wood, b. 11 Jan., 1828.
- Andrew, b. 10 July, 1830.
- George Augustus, b. 5 Aug., 1832.
- Elizabeth Jane, b. 6 Nov., 1833.
- George Augustus, b. 30 July, 1835.
- Calvin, b. 25 July, 1837.
- Cyrus, b. 30 March, 1840.

- vii. Phineas, b. 31 March, 1802. Went to Michigan.
- viii. Susanna, b. 25 April, 1804; d. unm. 4 Oct., 1821.
- ix. Fanny, b. 12 April, 1806; d. 20 Sept., 1874; m. 12 April, 1834, David, son of Samuel and Prudence (Wood) Richardson of Dracutt.

Four children (Richardson) :

- Franklin, b. 18 Mar., 1835.
- Lorenzo, b. 20 Sept., 1836.
- Frances, b. 10 Jan., 1838.
- Henry Edward, b. 8 Jan., 1841.

- 128. x. William, b. 29 July, 1808; m. (1) Sarah Dinsmore.

Married (2) 17 Dec., 1811, Lydia, dau. of Lt. Obediah C. and Hannah (Hildreth) Richardson of Dracutt, b. 8 April, 1789, d. 17 Sept., 1886.

Nine Children:

- i. Archibald Oakley, b. 9 June, 1812; d. 6 Dec., 1878; m. 8 Oct., 1838, Anna M. Parker; 1 child, Laura Ann, b. 9 Dec., 1840.
- ii. Laura Angusta, b. 22 Apr., 1814; m. Rev. Edward P. Finnell.
- iii. Charlotte Richardson, b. 9 Apr., 1815; m. (1) Robert Morrison, (2) Charles Baker.

- iv. Clarissa Sophia, b. 18 July, 1818; m. 7 June, 1838, Augustus Hovey.
  - v. Sarah Coburn, b. 20 June, 1821; m. Ephraim O. Richardson.
129. vi. John, b. 18 May, 1823; m. Naney E. Green.
- vii. Obediah Richardson, b. 15 July, 1826; d. unm. Dec., 1851.
  - viii. Lydia Emily, b. 22 Feb., 1829; m. John Jourdan.
130. ix. Henry, b. 20 Mar., 1832; m. Marietta Lee.

PREScott VARNUM was Colonel of the 3d Regt., Second Brigade Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, of which Joseph Bradley Varnum was Brigade Commander. He was chosen Captain, 3 May, 1803; Major, 2 April, 1806; Lt. Col. Commanding, 16 April, 1810; and resigned 3 Oct., 1811. He was succeeded by Lt. Col. Simon Coburn.

One of his grandchildren, Rev. Cyrus A. Bradley of South Brewster, Mass., says of him: "As I remember my Grandfather, he was a man of sound mind, strong common sense, kind, affectionate, honorable in all his dealings. I never heard him disputing on political questions, yet I am sure he was deeply interested in all things affecting the public interest. I never heard him express his opinion on the religious creeds of his later years. His children and grandchildren differed in religious faith, and I think several denominations were represented in his numerous family. He seemed glad to know that they were trying to lead honorable and Christian lives. I think his religious experiences were of an eminently practical nature. I have ever thought of him as a sincere and devoutly religious man, charitable to all. When I knew him, his days of active life were over, but he was very industrious. My childish mind was indelibly impressed by the effort he made for the happiness of those around him. I am sure all who knew him held him in high esteem."

112. PHINEAS VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Ebenezer<sup>5</sup> Joseph<sup>4</sup> Joseph<sup>3</sup> Samuel<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 21 Nov., 1778; died 13 Oct., 1858; married 13 Aug., 1805, Prudence, daughter of Abijah and Mercy (Harris) Fox of Dracutt, born 19 Sept., 1774, died 1 March, 1872.

Three children:

131. i. Phineas Fox,<sup>7</sup> b. 22 Sept., 1806; m. Elizabeth Thomas.
- ii. Prudence Harris, b. 19 June, 1808; d. 22 Aug., 1825.
- iii. Ahnira Merey, b. 5 Nov., 1812; d. 22 Aug., 1825.

PHINEAS VARNUM was the second son of Lieutenant Ebenezer and Hannah (Fox) Varnum of Dracutt—two sons and six daughters having been born to them. Prescott, the elder, remained on the home farm in Dracutt, while Phineas having been apprenticed to the trade of blacksmith, early went to Portland, Me., where he became interested in the manufacture of iron. He superintended and made all the mountings of the guns when Fort Preble was erected. Like his brother he was interested in military affairs, and one of his earliest acts in Portland was to head a petition on the 9th of June, 1807, to the Legislature of Massachusetts for authority to establish and organize a company of artillery in the town of Portland, to be attached to the 1st regiment, 2d brigade, 6th division of the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. He was chosen Captain of this company when it organized on the 17th June, 1812, and it was attached to Lt. Colonel Nichols's regiment, and was in service from the 7th to the 21st Sept., 1814. It was later in service under Major Alfred Weeks in Portland and Cape Elizabeth from 28th Sept. to 27th Oct., 1814. This was during the war of 1812. He was afterwards promoted in the several grades of military service up to Brigadier General in 1826. Maine separated from Massachusetts and became a State in 1820, and his services after that date were as an officer rendered to her, and from her he received his commissions as Colonel and Brigadier General.

Mr. Varnum was one of the original charter members of the Maine Charitable Mechanics Association established in 1811

and was a member for 47 years, up to the time of his decease in 1858. This Association erected a large building, with two halls for entertainments, and established departments for instruction in civil and mechanical engineering, and other branches of education. He was for several years City Street Commissioner, and Portland owes to his sagacity and enterprise much of her beauty of streets and avenues. He was for many years one of the Directors of the Caseo Bank, then as now the leading bank of the city.

The Eastern Argus of 14 October, 1858, gave this obituary notice of him:

"Gen. Varnum was a man of vigorous constitution and strong powers of mind. By his enterprise he acquired a large estate to the care of which he principally devoted his time for some years. He was at one time a member of the Executive Council of the State, and has filled other offices of honor and trust. He was a man much respected and beloved by his fellow citizens."

Personally Mr. Varnum had many characteristics of his father. He was a large man with blue eyes. His disposition came from a well-balanced organization, never hasty, always genial and courteous to every one in his business or social relations. Every year he and his wife used to journey to Dracutt, their trunk strapped to his chaise. They thus kept up a close intimacy which endeared them to all their relations. He was one of the overseers of the poor, and his ear was always turned towards tales of distress, with a heart and pocket to assist if deserving. In his religious views he was a Unitarian, and an owner in the First Church of Portland which, like nearly all the early congregational churches became of liberal faith, when the doctrines of Priestly and Channing were disseminated throughout New England. He died at 80 years.

113. JOSEPH BUTTERFIELD VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Bradley*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 28 Sept., 1775; died 4 Nov., 1857; married 28 Dec., 1799, Phebe, daughter of Joel & Phebe (Tyler) Spanlding of Chelmsford, born 26 Dec., 1779, died 4 Nov., 1857. No issue.

Joseph Butterfield Varnum was born in Dracut upon the same estate which fell to Colonel Joseph Varnum, on the division of the Samuel Varnum lands with his brothers Thomas and John, in 1699.

"He was 82 years of age when he died, and until within a few months of his decease, had been actively engaged upon his farm, participating in all the duties of farm life. His vigor and activity were remarkable, and at fourscore years he was not excelled at the plough by even younger men, and he had the reputation of being 'the man who could do the best day's work in town.' Although not a church member, Mr. Varnum was a constant attendant at divine service at the First Congregational Church of Dracut, and its most liberal contributor, besides leaving to it a handsome legacy in his will. He was universally popular, having a large acquaintance young and old. Mrs. Varnum, who for sometime had been in feeble health, had frequently expressed the wish that her life might be spared as long as that of her aged partner, and, as if Heaven had answered her prayers, she expired on the same day in less than five hours after he had breathed his last. She was 78 years old and for many years had been an exemplary member of the Church which she and her husband attended. Her amiable deportment and many virtues caused her to be beloved, respected and honored."\*

Mr. Varnum was a man of large means, a director in the largest bank in Lowell, but not inclined to polities, although very public-spirited as a Dracut citizen.

\* Obituary in Lowell Courier.

114. BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Bradley*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 2 June, 1778; died 15 Sept., 1857; married 27 Dec., 1806, Julia, daughter of Col. Louis and Catharine (Wimble) Ansart of Dracutt, born 19 June, 1785, died 12 Oct., 1869.

Five children:

- i. Julia Augusta,<sup>7</sup> b. 17 July, 1807; d. 30 Sept., 1822.
- ii. Elizabeth Wimble, b. 25 July, 1810; d. unm. 11 Mar., 1845.
- 132. iii. Charles Bradley, b. 5 Sept., 1815; m. Rebecca S. Gage.
- iv. Julia Ansart, b. 7 June, 1823; d. 28 June, 1897; m. 12 Nov., 1845, Abel, son of Timothy & Hannah (Varnum) Coburn of Dracutt, b. 24 Aug., 1815, d. 2 Oct., 1894.  
One child (Coburn):  
Elizabeth Czarina.
- v. Eleanor, b. 12 July, 1825; m. 1 June, 1859, Oliver Barrows.  
No issue.

BRADLEY VARNUM was a stonemason. He superintended the laying of the foundation of the mills and the walk along the Pawtucket Canal in Lowell, Mass., which were built of Draentt granite.

115. JOSEPH VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 17 March, 1778; died 1 Nov., 1849; m. 19 Feb., 1800, Ruth Moody Johnson of Nottingham West, born 4 Dec., 1772, died 27 March, 1843.

Six children:

- i. Sally Johnson,<sup>7</sup> b. 8 Dec., 1800; d. 5 Oct., 1826.
- ii. Harriet, b. 24 Sept., 1802; d. 3 May, 1843; m. 23 Oct., 1819, Jesse, son of Capt. Nathl. and Mercy Coburn of Tyngsboro.
- iii. Mary Jane, b. 22 May, 1804; d. 14 Nov., 1814.
- iv. Joseph, b. 31 May, 1806; d. 26 June, 1806.

- v. Ruth Moody, b. 2 April, 1810; d. 18 Sept., 1810.
- vi. Hannah Jane, b. 20 May, 1812; d. 11 Sept., 1838; m. 16 May, 1834, J. Tyler Fletcher of Chelmsford, b. 28 June, 1809. No issue.

116. SAMUEL VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Joseph,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 17 Jan., 1787; died 7 March, 1864; m. April, 1806, Sarah Jackman of Newburyport, born 27 Nov., 1785, died 13 June, 1859.

Ten children:

- i. Sarah Ann, b. 25 Jan., 1807; m. Wm. T. Jackson.
- ii. Eunice, b. 21 Jan., 1809; d. 3 July, 1859; m. Timothy Osgood.
- iii. Phebe Spaulding, b. 27 Feb., 1811; d. 22 July, 1855; m. Henry Jackman.
- iv. Adaline, b. 24 Apr., 1813; d. 29 Aug., 1814.
- v. Joseph Butterfield, b. 3 Dee., 1815; m. Catharine Howard; 1 dau., Phebe Caroline.
- vi. Mary Johnson, b. 28 May, 1818; m. Samuel Merrill.
- vii. Martha Bradstreet, b. 21 Apr., 1820; d. 23 Sept., 1879.
- viii. Charlotte Ann, b. 28 June, 1822; d. 15 Oct., 1868; m. Wm. Blaisdell.
- ix. Elizabeth Morse, b. 14 Jan., 1827; d. 26 Sept., 1874; m. Elisha Storey.
- x. Hannah Jane, b. 15 Nov., 1830; m. Franklin Storey.

SAMUEL VARNUM went to West Newbury to learn the wheelwright trade when fourteen years old. He married and settled in Newburyport, and lived near Chain Bridge.

117. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Joseph Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 31 Jan., 1785; died 15 Jan., 1867; married 13 Oct., 1824, Mary Ann, daughter of Nathan B. and Jane (Lorimer) Graham of New York, born 2 June, 1803, died 17 Feb., 1871.

## Seven children:

- i. Mary Jane,<sup>7</sup> b. 12 Aug., 1825; d. 7 Oct., 1905; m. 3 Nov., 1847, Henry A., son of Dr. Valentine and Jane (Wall) <sup>W/aw</sup> Mott of New York, b. 26 Aug., 1824, d. 6 Feb., 1894.

## Four children (Mott):

- Mary, m. Joseph T. Lowe of New York.  
 Joseph Varnum, b. 5 Sept., 1848; d. 23 Dec., 1904.  
 Emma, m. Sidney Whittemore.  
 - Henry, b. 22 Oct., 1852; d. 8 Nov., 1896.  
 Louisa, b. 5 Sept., 1859; d. 3 Mar., 1885; m. Franklin L. Gnunther.

- ii. Joseph Bradley, b. 15 Dee., 1826; d. 13 Aug., 1827.  
 iii. Joseph Bradley, b. 29 Dee., 1827; d. 4 Sept., 1838.  
 iv. Louisa Graham, b. 4 May, 1830; d. 26 Sept., 1849.  
 v. James Lorimer, b. 8 Jan., 1833; d. 7 June, 1835.  
 vi. Margarett Ann, b. 15 Aug., 1834; d. 18 Sept., 1875; m. 23 June, 1855, James Weeks, son of Benjamin Townsend and Eliza ( ) Underhill of New York, b. 23 Mar., 1819, d. 19 Mar., 1867.

## Three children (Underhill):

- Mary Louisa, b. 23 Aug., 1856; d. 23 Nov., 1878.  
 James Varnum, b. 13 Mar., 1859; d. 19 Oct., 1864.  
 Franees Townsend, m. 14 Nov., 1883, Henrietta Graham Meyer of New York city.

- vii. Julia Mathilda, b. 17 July, 1840; d. 27 Jan., 1886; m. 27 Jan., 1870, Edward de Rose of New York city.

## Two children (de Rose):

- Susan, b. 11 July, 1872; d. 20 Apr., 1873.  
 Edward Livingston, b. 17 May, 1876; d. 12 June, 1897.







JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM

*Merchant and Railroad Financier of New York City*

JOSEPHI BRADLEY VARNUM.<sup>6</sup>*By James Mitchell Varnum.<sup>8</sup>*

After spending some years on his father's farm at Dracutt, and attending with his brothers Westford Academy, he repaired to Washington about the year 1810, where he was appointed to a clerkship in the War Department under the Secretary of War, General Dearborn.

He remained in the position for about a year, and then becoming dissatisfied with the monotony of his duties made application for more active service.

General Wayne had just concluded his treaty with the Indians of the Northwest, one of the stipulations of which, required the United States to keep among the Indians, agents to supply them with all necessary articles of civilized life at reasonable rates in exchange for furs, etc.

Young Varnum was appointed to one of these positions, and spent the next four years at Fort Dearborn, Fond-du-Lac, Mackinaw, and in the neighborhood. He was, of course, brought into communication with all the Indian chiefs, amongst them with Tecumseh. He acquired the entire confidence of the Indians by his fair dealing, and the experience thus acquired in the fur trade afterwards proved of great service to him.

He had many curious adventures and hair breadth escapes. On one occasion, travelling to Detroit with a party of other horsemen, they discovered about sunset a camp of hostile Indians (then in the employ of the British Government), several hundred in number, directly before them. Most of the other horsemen wanted to retreat, or take a long detour through the woods, but Varnum and another prevailed upon them to cock their pistols, put their horses to the utmost speed and go directly through the camp. So astonished were the Indians at

this sudden apparition, and at the boldness of the move, that they never thought of firing upon them, or giving chase, until long after they had passed.

In passing through Detroit in 1812, he was taken very ill, and when convalescent found himself unable to leave, in consequence of the place being in a state of siege. He was present in the fort when General Hull received a despatch from the British commander, informing him that in case the force under his command should be obliged to take the town by storm, the officers must not be held responsible for any outrages which might be committed by the Indian allies, as it was not in the power of the English officers to control them. This despatch, received at a time when shells were constantly exploding around, caused excessive agitation on the part of Hull, who was immoderately addicted to the use of tobacco, the juice of which streaming out on either side of his mouth and mingling with the powder and dust, gave him the appearance of anything but a white man.

Soon after a shell burst and killed an officer by his side, and Varnum was impressed with the conviction that this occurrence, in connection with the previous despatch, led him (Hull) to the surrender of the city, for which he was afterwards tried and condemned to be shot, but subsequently pardoned.

Among the prisoners taken on this occasion was the Indian Agent Varnum, who was not fully recovered from the effects of his late illness and the fatigue and exposure of his subsequent journey to Toronto, together with the loss of an overcoat, brought on a return of the complaint, so that he was obliged to go into the hospital, where General Brock saw him, and as Varnum thought, concluded to discharge him in order to avoid the expense of burying him. He returned by stage coach to his home in Draent, where he arrived just as his father, who had just returned from Boston, was in great distress, detailing

to his mother the intelligence of the surrender of Detroit and the captivity and sickness of their son, whose sudden appearance, of course, changed their sorrow to joy.

After having thoroughly recovered his health, Varnum next repaired to Buffalo under a commission from Gideon Granger, Postmaster General, appointing him postmaster to the Northern army. He organized a service of expresses from Buffalo to Washington, through Pennsylvania, and it was from him that the first intelligence was sent of cannon having been heard in the neighborhood of Bridgewater, Mich., which gave the name to the Battle of Bridgewater, although the battle was really fought at some distance from that place. It was part of Varnum's duty to pass over in an open boat every day with despatches to and from General Gaines, then in command of Fort Erie, which was under siege by the British. At one point the boat came in sight of the British works, from which a shot was invariably fired at him, which he managed to dodge, and in like manner he had to keep a sharp lookout for the bomb shells, which were constantly bursting over his head, as he traversed an open space between the landing and the fort.

Postmaster Varnum was present delivering despatches to General Gaines when a shell came through the roof and buried itself in the floor, then exploding, disabled the latter for the rest of the war, but only knocked down and stunned the former.

In a letter dated Canandaigua, December 24, 1813, Mr. Varnum writes to his mother, as follows:

"I have just returned to the Niagara frontier after witnessing the most distressing scene I ever beheld. On the 19th inst. Fort Niagara was taken by the enemy, and a great proportion of the troops put to the sword. The sick and wounded were all supposed to be massacred. On the same day Lewiston, Youngstown and Selosher were burned to ashes, and every person who could not escape were cut to pieces by the tomahawk or burnt in their houses. The scene was awful in the extreme; old men, women

and children flying in every direction to escape the fury of the merciless savages. It was early in the morning, and they had hardly time to put on their clothes. Some ran bare foot and others bare headed, leaving their all behind to be destroyed by the devouring foe. I fortunately escaped by being obliged to stop a little short of the theatre of blood the night before. The inhabitants of this part of the country are all in arms, and much exasperated by the fury of the enemy."

On July 28, 1814, he writes to his father, as follows:

"On the 23d inst. our army retired back from the vicinity of Fort George up to Chipawa, for the purpose of drawing the enemy from their stronghold, and to bring him to a field fight, if possible, before General Drummond arrived from Kingston with reinforcements. The movement had the effect intended, but unfortunately for us the enemy's reinforcements arrived sooner than was anticipated, which enabled him to take the field with a superior force against our gallant little army.

"On the evening of the 25th inst., about an hour before sundown, the fight commenced near Chipawa, and continued until near 11 o'clock at night. A more desperate and bloody battle, for the number of men engaged, was never fought in America. Our army behaved most gallantly, and have acquired a high reputation for bravery and perseverance; but their firmness has almost annihilated the army. The slaughter was dreadful on both sides. The killed on both sides could not have been less than seven or eight hundred, besides immense numbers of wounded. Our army drove the enemy in every direction, took their artillery from them, and for a time the victory seemed complete, but large reinforcements coming to the assistance of the enemy enabled him ultimately to recover his artillery and cut down our ranks to such a degree that our troops were obliged to leave the field.

"Many brilliant charges were made by our troops, in which they took upwards of two hundred prisoners. Among them are Major General Rial and suite, one of General Drummond's aids, and fifteen other officers. The prisoners are now on their march to Greenbush, except General Rial, who is wounded and here.

"Most of our artillery and baggage was saved, but unfortunately many of our wounded were left on the field, and fell into the hands of the enemy.

The full extent of our loss cannot be ascertained as yet, but it was immense. General Brown and General Scott were both severely wounded. Only one field officer of the First Brigade escaped death or severe wounds. One whole regiment was commanded by a Lieutenant the morning after the action, and not fifty men were able to parade. I will not undertake to give you a just account of the slaughter; it was immense. The First Brigade was almost annihilated.

"The enemy was most sadly cut to pieces, otherwise they would have pursued our army. I expect the enemy as soon as they can recuperate a little will come up and give us another desperate battle. I must confess I do not consider ourselves in a good situation to meet them. All our best officers are killed or wounded, and most of our well disciplined troops are cut up. I have been incessantly occupied since the battle in assisting the surgeons in dressing the wounded. Many of our officers are desperately wounded, some of them in three or four places. They continued on the field of battle as long as they could stand. We have now in the hospital seven or eight hundred wounded men."

Soon after the war, Mr. Varnum went west in the employ of Mr. John Jacob Astor, who was then largely engaged in the fur trade, in which he found Varnum's experience of great service, and wished to take him into partnership, but Varnum declined to act in any other capacity than agent, being dissatisfied with the other partners with whom Mr. Astor proposed to associate him, having reason to believe that some of them were dishonest.

He remained in the business for a couple of years, and must have found it profitable, for when he returned he had capital enough to establish himself in the dry goods jobbing business in New York, which he carried on for many years, first under his own name, then under the successive firm names of Varnum & Grosvenor, Varnum, Fuller & Co., and Varnum, Graham & Bebb. He then became a special partner in the firm of Graham, Bebb & Graham, retiring from active mercantile business himself. The firms bearing his name acquired great reputation

throughout the west for their extensive business and fair dealing, and during the pecuniary revulsions of 1836-7, when almost everybody failed, or was obliged temporarily to suspend payments, Mr. Varnum maintained his credit unimpaired. His store was at 165 Pearl Street.

Although out of mercantile pursuits he was by no means out of business, for his extensive interests in banks and railroads and the disposal of large tracts of western property, of which he had become possessed in payment of debts, kept him incessantly occupied. His first connection with railroad enterprises was accidental and enforced, but by degrees his interests extended until he became a large stock holder in the New York Central, Panama, and several extensive western lines, notably the "Wabash," in which he became one of the largest stock and bond owners.

Some ten years after he removed to New York, Mr. Varnum married Miss Mary A. Graham, a daughter of Nathan B. Graham, the family being then one of the best known in social and business circles in the city.

Mr. Varnum died in New York, January 17th, 1867, in the 82d year of his age, leaving a large estate.

Mr. Varnum was of quiet and sedate temperament, but like many of his ancestors and his own brothers, was a man of large frame, handsome face, and courtly manner, and strongly resembled the portrait of his distinguished father, General Joseph B. Varnum, which now hangs in the corridor of the House of Representatives, at Washington, a copy of which is produced in this work.

118. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Joseph Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 2 Aug., 1786; died 11 Sept., 1821; married 5 Mar., 1811, Mary, daughter of Maj. Augustine Pease of Suffield, Conn., born 5 Mar., 1783, died 11 Sept., 1847.

## Four children:

- i. Mary Butler,<sup>7</sup> b. 18 Dec., 1811; d. 3 Oct., 1859, m. 13 Sept., 1835, Silas Holman Hill, A.M. Dartmouth College 1832, son of John Burleigh and Mary Libby (Maloon) Hill of Portsmouth, N. H. He was b. 14 Dec., 1807, and d. at Washington, D. C., 13 Oct. 1860. Mr. Hill read law, and commenced the practice of his profession in Portsmouth in 1834. He was offered the position of principal in the leading private school in Washington, D. C., founded by Salmon P. Chase, afterwards Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court, and known as the "Select Classical Academy." Mr. Hamilton Smith succeeded Mr. Chase, and was followed by Mr. Hill. He subsequently became an official in the Treasury Department under the administration of his friend Hon. Levi Woodbury, then Secretary.

After a few years Mr. Hill resigned, to devote his attention chiefly to the care of the family real estate of the Varnums in Washington and to follow literary pursuits of which he was an ardent student. He was a member of the City Council ten years, and at one time acting Mayor of Washington. He was defeated as a candidate for the mayoralty by thirteen votes only. He lived in a handsome house on the corner of E and 6th Streets, which after his death was purchased and became the residence of Chief Justice Chase and his son-in-law Senator Sprague of Rhode Island.

## Two children (Hill):

Helen, m. Dr. John M. McCalla; during the war a surgeon in the U. S. A.

Mary Isabel, m. Nathan Sargent. He was appointed to U. S. N. A. 23 July, 1866; graduated 7 June, 1870; ensign, 13 July, 1871; master, 10 July, 1874; lieutenant, 10 Jan., 1881; lieut.-commander, 3 Mar., 1899; captain, 4 May, 1906.

133. ii. Ann Lonisa, b. 24 May, 1814; d. 16 Aug., 1816.  
 iii. Joseph Bradley, b. 14 June, 1818; m. (1) Susan M. Graham; m. (2) Helen M. Taylor.

iv. James Mitchell, b. 14 June, 1820; m. 11 Sept., 1831. He was killed by a fall from the roof of his mother's dwelling in Washington, whither he had gone to look after his doves.

### JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM<sup>6</sup>.

*By James Mitchell Varnum<sup>8</sup>.*

JAMES MITCHELL, third son of General Joseph B. Varnum, was born at Dracutt, August 2d, 1786, was educated in the common schools of Dracutt and at Westford Academy. About the year 1808 he was brought on by his father to Washington, and appointed by Gideon Granger, then Postmaster General, to a clerkship in that department during the administration of President Madison.

On March 5th, 1811, he married in Washington, Mary, daughter of Major Augustine Pease of Suffield, Conn. (an officer in the Revolution) and a niece of Mrs. Gideon Granger.

Mr. Varnum at this time decided to make Washington his permanent home. He became a magistrate, and took a house on 8th Street, near the present Market Space on Pennsylvania Avenue, and began to make investments in Washington real estate, which he continued to do until his death, all of which subsequently proved to have been made with remarkable intelligence and foresight. His father, then a Senator, lived with him, and Mr. Varnum's house became a great rendezvous for the delightful society of that period—all the prominent men of Congress and the Executive Departments, as well as of the Diplomatic corps.

When war was declared in 1812 and apprehensions were entertained that the City of Washington would be an object of attack, Mr. Varnum was commissioned by President Madison as a Captain, 2d Regiment, District of Columbia Militia, Wil-

William Brent, Colonel, and thereafter became generally known amongst all the residents of Washington as Captain Varnum. He was in active war service in July, 1813, and from August 19th to October 8th, 1814.

When the report came that the British were on their way to Washington (August 1814) Captain Varnum was ordered to report at the Capitol to receive orders, and thence marched with his company to Bladensburg.

In a letter to his mother dated Camp Washington, August 31st, 1814, Captain Varnum says:

"On the 19th of the present month the citizens of Washington received information that the enemy with six or seven thousand men were landing at Benedict on the river Patuxent about 35 or 40 miles from this place, on which information the whole of the District militia were called into the field, also the troops in the surrounding country.

"Our troops manœuvred without getting into action until the 24th inst. on which day we met the enemy at Bladensburg, about five miles from this city, with 7,000 strong, in a most advantageous situation to whip the enemy—that battle commenced about one o'clock—we mowed them down for about fifteen minutes. Nothing was wanted to ensure us a complete victory but a General; but when the enemy were about yielding to us, and at a time too, before one-quarter part of our troops were brought into action, our commander through cowardice, imbecility or some other cause, which may be too black to mention, ordered an immediate and general retreat without order or regularity when only six or seven of our men were killed and 15 or 20 wounded. The enemy's loss about 200 killed and three or four hundred wounded. Our General was so panic stricken that he marched the troops fourteen miles from the city. The enemy discovered that he was frightened. Admiral Cockburn and Maj. Gen. Ross marched into the city at the head of about 200 men, and travelled through the streets of Washington with two or three guards with as much safety as if they had been in London.

"They fired the Capitol, the President's House, the War and Treasury Departments, the Navy Yard and all the rope-walks and very many private buildings.

" Such an indelible stain never was, I am confident, cast upon any country as will be cast upon us by this disgraceful surrender of our capitol without resistance. The Secretary of War is damned by everybody. He will no doubt be removed forthwith. I think Winder, the commander of the troops, will be court-martialed—nothing can be too bad for him."

Captain Varnum soon took a position as one of the leading citizens of Washington, became interested in every public enterprise, and acquired a reputation for strict business habits and unwavering integrity.

He died suddenly on the 11th day of September, 1821, at Washington, leaving one daughter and two sons.

It may be mentioned as a curious coincidence that Captain Varnum's father, Gen. Joseph B. Varnum, died at Dracutt on the same day and almost at the same hour, that his son James M. Varnum died on the 11th of September ten years later, and his widow Mary P. Varnum also on the same date twenty-six years later.

Captain Varnum's widow married some years after his death the Hon. John Varnum, a prominent member of Congress from Massachusetts, and a second cousin of her first husband, who died at Niles, Mich., 20 July, 1836.

119. JACOB BUTLER VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Joseph Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 13 June, 1778; died 23 Jan., 1874; married (1) 2 Sept., 1816, at Mackinac, Mich., where he was stationed as a Government Agent, Mary Ann Aiken, dau. of an English merchant there. She died in childbirth, 27 April, 1817, and was buried in a cemetery near Fort Dearborn, Ill. Her remains were removed to Dearborn Cemetery, and when that became a part of Lincoln Park, were again removed (1870) to Graceland Cemetery, Chicago. Married 8 August, 1819, (2) Catherine, dau. of John and Catha-

rine (Stout) Dodinead, of Detroit, Mich., born 6 April, 1800; died 7 January, 1863, during the investment of Petersburg, Va.

Two children:

134. i. George Washington,<sup>7</sup> b. 7 Jan., 1825; m. (1) Martha A. Evans, (2) Anna K. Busby.  
ii. Mary Jane, b. 30 April, 1830; d. 13 Jan., 1840.

JACOB BUTLER VARNUM, ninth child and fourth son of Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum, was born and passed all his years up to manhood on his father's farm in Dracutt, having received a portion of his education at Westford Academy near his native town. In 1809 he was commissioned by Caleb Strong, then Governor of Massachusetts, as Lieutenant in a home company, and afterwards as Aid de Camp to his father commanding the 3d division of Massachusetts Volunteer Militia. He taught school in East Westford and Dracutt in 1810-11. On Aug. 6, 1811, he was appointed through the influence of his father, Government Agent or Indian Factor at the Trading Post at Sandusky, Ohio. His long and somewhat perilous trip from Dracutt by land and water transportation, is described very graphically by him in an autobiography written in 1863 for his surviving son. He remained at Sandusky until driven out by Indians during the war of 1812.

In July, 1813, he was commissioned by President Madison as Major of the 40th United States Infantry, one of the five regiments authorized by Congress for the defence of the sea-coast, and was ordered under Colonel Loring to Moose Island, near Eastport, Me. While stationed at Fort Sullivan there, a large English fleet headed by H. M. Ship Ramallies, unexpectedly appeared and demanded immediate surrender. Captain Varnum counselled firing one round at the fleet and then retreating to the mainland, but on being found cut off from that

expedient, it was decided that to prevent a loss of life it was the better part of valor to surrender its little garrison of eighty men. These were taken off as prisoners of war to Canada, and suffered a long imprisonment. The officers were released on parole, the papers being signed by Pilkington and Thomas Hardy, officers who had made their reputations under Lord Nelson at Trafalgar.

Thereafter and until the end of the war Major Varnum was chiefly occupied on Court Martial duty, being also President of a Court of Inquiry, sitting at Boston.

After the ratification of the Treaty of Ghent in 1815, closing the war, he resigned from the army, and in August, 1815, was appointed Government Agent at the Trading factory at Fort Dearborn, afterwards Chicago, Ills. After long delays in transportation, and non-arrival of goods, during which time he spent many months at Fort Machinac, Mich., where he met and married his first wife, he reached Fort Dearborn. He arrived at his post in Sept., 1816, four years after the massacre of Capt. Heald and his command. His first duty was gathering up the scattered bones of the unfortunate victims and performing the rites of burial. He says: "The Fort at this time presented a most desolate appearance, only the skeletons of two buildings remained. The smaller of the two was assigned to me and my wife, and after a while was made habitable, although very cramped. It was only twenty feet square and it was parlor, bedroom and kitchen, all in one." It was occupied by them until her death in childbirth in 1817.

He remained in Chicago until 1820, attending to traffic with the Indians, at which date, through the hostility of Senator Benton of Missouri, Indian factories throughout the country were abolished. In the meantime he had visited Detroit, where he met Catherine Dodimead, daughter of John Dodimead, who had settled in Detroit and become very friendly with the In-

dians, and made her on August 8, 1819, his second wife. After turning over the Government property to his successor Major Varnum removed to Washington, D. C., where he was engaged in mercantile business up to 1828. He then removed to Petersburg, Va., where he became a prominent citizen, and resided there up to the close of the Civil War. He was a non-combatant during the strife between the North and the South, being too old for service, and was shut up in Petersburg during the memorable seige, during which he lost his wife and companion. After the war he came North, but resided principally at Washington, where at the National Hotel in 1874 he passed away.

120. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Joseph Bradley<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 11 April, 1795; d. 11 Jan., 1841; married 11 April, 1820, Caroline, daughter of Joseph and Lydia (Worcester) Bradley of Dracut, born 2 Aug., 1802; d. 16 Nov. 1883. Both were lineal descendants of Joseph and Hannah (Heath) Bradley of Haverhill.

Ten children:

- i. Caroline Bradley,<sup>7</sup> b. 27 April, 1821; d. 27 May, 1875; m. 8 Aug., 1844, Alpheus R., son of Abram and Eunice (Kimball) Brown of Hopkinton, N. H., b. 3 Nov., 1814; d. 2 Nov., 1889. He was graduated at Dartmouth College in 1836 and received the degree of A. M. He read law with Judge Horace Chase of Hopkinton, N. H., and William Smith of Lowell, entering into practice there in 1839. He represented Lowell in the Mass. Legislature in 1852; was a member of the Mass. Constitutional Convention in 1853, and city solicitor of Lowell in 1856 to 1858. He removed to Boston in 1871, becoming associate judge of the Police Court, in Somerville, and died at the age of 75. Two children (Brown): Grace Caroline, Alpheus Roberts.

- ii. Joseph Bradley, b. 7 Oct., 1823. He went to California overland, in 1849, as a member of the "Lynn Sagamore Mining and Trading Co.," when he was twenty-six years old. He experienced the usual vicissitudes of gold-mining, locating finally at Iowa Hill a large mining camp in Placer county. In March, 1863, he enlisted in the California battalion of the Second Massachusetts Calvary, Colonel Charles R. Lowell. The battalion was transferred East and joined the Regiment at Readville, Mass., in May. He was made sergeant of his company and saw active service in the neighborhood of Fairfax Court House, Virginia. On the 24 Aug., 1863, while returning from Washington with a consignment of horses, his command was attacked by Moseby's guerillas at Gooding's Tavern, about four miles from regimental headquarters. In this action Sergeant Varnum was killed and four of his comrades. Moseby was badly wounded and for several months incapacitated for duty. According to Gen. Robt. E. Lee, commander-in-chief of the Confederate Army, in the Official Records (vol. 29, pp. 80), Moseby's guerrillas were not at date "mustered into service." This attack was not therefore war, but murder.
- iii. Mary Butler, b. 24 Mar., 1826; d. 20 Mar., 1879; m. 10 Oct., 1867, Moses Giles, son of Rev. Moses How of New Bedford. No issue.
- iv. Benjamin Franklin, b. 13 June, 1826; d. 10 Sept., 1875; m. Ann Mongovan. One child: Alpheus Franklin, b. 7 May, 1869; d. 24 Dec., 1892.
- v. Henry Clay.
- vi. Lydia Worcester, b. 20 May, 1832; d. 17 Mar., 1857; m. 2 Aug., 1853, Moses G., son of Rev. Moses How of New Bedford. Two children (Howe): Alice Lydia, b. 6 June, 1856, d. 2 Sept., 1859; Benj. Varnum, m. Mary Belle Howe.
- vii. George Washington, m. Harriet Tibbetts of Lowell. One child: Mary Lydia, m. Dr. Charles A. Sherman.
- viii. John Marshall. "Si queris operam, circumspice."









HON. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN VARNUM

*High Sheriff of the County of Middlesex, 1831-1841*

From portrait in possession of John M. Varnum

- ix. Rebecca Arms, 26 June, 1838; d. 14 Jan., 1839.  
135. x. William Harrison, b. 6 June, 1840; m. Sarah Frances Tibbetts.

### BENJAMIN FRANKLIN VARNUM.<sup>6</sup>

*By John Marshall Varnum.<sup>7</sup>*

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN, the youngest son of Gen. Joseph Bradley Varnum, attended the district school which was located near his home, his grandfather Samuel having donated to the town of Dracutt its site. He finished his education at the Westford Academy, of which institution his father was one of the incorporators, and on which he bestowed all the weight of his patronage and influence by sending four of his sons there to be educated. After graduation young Varnum kept school in the same school-house where he had been taught the rudiments. It is related that one of his pupils, a cousin and a neighbor, Harriet Varnum, one day bungled over her lesson. "Don't you know that word, Harriet?" kindly asked her instructor. "Yes, I do, Ben Varnum, just as well as you do," was her saucy and defiant reply.

He remained on the farm occupied with its duties, but made a journey at the age of 18 to Washington, where his father was a Senator. He was there entrusted with some business as a clerk to a committee, but did not remain long in that city, as in his absence, matters did not progress well at home. None of his brothers were there. One by one after they had reached manhood they had left the home farm for more active and congenial pursuits. George Washington, the eldest, on whom his father seems to have relied to remain at home and take to farm life, had gone to Virginia and settled at Lynchburg, where he became a prominent man and a member of the State Assembly; Joseph Bradley had become a clerk at Washington, and later

had entered the employ of John Jacob Astor; James Mitchell had also taken a government position at Washington and married there; Jacob Butler had, through his father's influence, become an Indian agent or factor, and later, Major in the 40th United States Infantry; John Hancock had passed away in 1801. His brother Jacob thus fondly alludes to him in after years: "John was a noble, sprightly boy, highly intelligent and ambitious. It was his pride to compete with me both at school and on the farm-acres, and although three or four years my junior, he was generally successful. Active and persevering, he would suffer none of the laborers on the farm to go ahead of him, which was to them a matter of great wonderment. Had the dear boy lived, I have never doubted that he would have taken the lead of his brothers, and assumed a conspicuous stand in the family." Benjamin was thus left the only son to look after his father's interests, and to him therefore was entrusted the farm management, and the various enterprises of his illustrious father.

After the retirement of the General from congressional life in 1817, when his son was 21 years old, and he himself 67, there were still political as well as military matters to engross his attention, as he was a State Senator, and senior Major General of the State Militia, and on his staff with the rank of Major was his youngest son Benjamin. In his journal, young Varnum records at this period the perplexities which troubled him as to his place in life. Manifestly he was averse to the life of a farmer, however attractive it appeared to his father, who, having been actively and laboriously engaged in public affairs, turned with satisfaction to the rest and peace of country life. He longed to get out into the world of activity and bustle, and his brothers' successes were a strong incentive. At the earnest intercession of his father he finally agreed to remain at home to care for him and his mother during their lives, and to the end he faithfully performed his trust.

How methodically and business-like he conducted farm affairs his books show. In these he carefully noted the cost of everything and the details of profit or loss, finally, at the year's end, epitomizing the result in a showing of the values of land; of stock, in cattle, sheep or swine; of fodder or grain or manure. He was thus early a careful business man, and the same minuteness of detail he practiced in all his business affairs throughout his life. His mind was not on farming as a steady pursuit, in fact he could not well follow the plow, for his father's standing early brought him into prominence.

He became a selectman of the town. In 1824 and 1825 he represented Dracutt in the Legislature, and during the successive years up to 1831 he was Senator from Middlesex county.

He had a practical knowledge of surveying, and in 1826 was appointed a member of the Commission on the part of the State to determine the boundary line between Massachusetts and New Hampshire, a question which had occasioned continued controversy from 1741. He was finally employed to set the boundary stones, and so well and accurately did he perform his work that his figures were the final authority which helped end the controversy in 1885. After the abolition of the Court of Sessions, in 1828, he became a member of the first Board of Highway Commissioners, known subsequently as that of the County Commissioners. In the winter of 1831 the Legislature passed an act which limited the tenure of the office of sheriff to the term of five years. Under this law, which took effect June 1, 1831, Mr. Varnum was appointed Sheriff of Middlesex, the most populous county in the State. "No appointment," says a contemporary, "could have been made more satisfactory to the legal profession or to the community. At the expiration of his term in 1836 he was reappointed, not only without opposition or complaint, but in conformity with

the well-known wishes of the public. His varied and responsible duties were performed with decided energy and promptness, and at the same time with characteristic urbanity." He greatly elevated the tone and dignity of the office, devising a court uniform adorned with a handsome button containing the insignia of the Commonwealth, the custom having been to appear in the ordinary civilian dress. This invested the office with some of the ceremony and dignity pertaining to the station in England.

In 1820, when he was 25 years old, he married Caroline, daughter of Joseph Bradley, a prominent man in this section, who came of a Haverhill family who were renowned Indian fighters. Mr. Bradley's father, Amos, had early settled in Dracut, and bought in 1761 the ferry across the Merrimack river where Central bridge now spans the stream. This marriage proved a most happy one, and in after years Mr. Varnum alludes to it thus: "I have abundant reason to thank a kind Providence for giving me a partner in all respects equal to my wishes. Her virtues shine like the stars of Heaven and direct me to that which is good."

On the 24th of February, 1825, Mr. Bradley and others as incorporators, petitioned the General Court of Massachusetts for authority to build a bridge across the Merrimack between the towns of Dracut and Chelmsford, and Mr. Varnum became clerk and executive officer of the corporation. The city of Lowell came into legal existence the following year, and the building of the bridge was a sagacious and far-seeing enterprise.

In 1833, after the death of his mother had released him from his obligation to maintain a home for her at the home farm, he began the erection of a handsome and commodious residence on Dracut heights, overlooking the valley of the Merrimack and the growing manufactories of the thriving city across the

DRACUTT, 1830

*From original plan made for the State of Massachusetts  
by Benj. F. Vurnum, Surveyor.*



Chelmsford

Lowell

Lawrence

Auburton

Woburn

Woburn

St

Melrose

Concord

Beverly River

Concord River

New Hampshire Line

Line

2020

Methuen



river. Here he had the opportunity and the means to indulge his rare tastes in laying out extensive grounds for his residence, adorning with trees and shrubs and flowers to an extent at that date very unusual. Hither he removed in 1834 to enjoy the luxury of a home fashioned after his own cultivated ideals. The locality became known as Centralville to distinguish it from other sections of the town, and here he entered into many projects with Mr. Bradley, who was a large landed proprietor, looking to the building up of this section. An Academy building and subsequently a large boarding-house for scholars was erected, and incorporated as the Centralville Academy, with Mr. Bradley as President and Mr. Varnum as Treasurer. The school house afterwards erected on the site of the Academy building was named by the city of Lowell in honor of Mr. Varnum. At the time of his decease in 1841, Mr. Varnum had a project ready for incorporation, to be called the "Draentt Aqnednet Corporation," for the purpose of supplying the village with pure water. The carrying out of his plan would have made Centralville ultimately a choice locality for the residence of the well-to-do citizens of Lowell.

During his term of office as executive officer of the county, occurred the assault on and the burning of the Ursuline Convent in Charlestown. This was the lawless act of an excited mob, and it required peculiar tact and discretion to allay the popular excitement. It devolved on Sheriff Varnum to carry out the law by the arrest of the leaders, and to preserve the peace of the Commonwealth. This he did so successfully as to elicit from Governor John Davis a letter of commendation, expressing his high sense of confidence and approval.

Having been chosen two terms of five years each to the shrievalty, it was his purpose to retire on the year when he passed away. He was an ardent Whig, and was chief marshal at the famous "log cabin and hard cider" celebration at Con-

cord in 1840, in the campaign when Gen. Harrison was elected President of the United States. His prominence bade fair to elect him to Congress, and his ambition was in that direction, which but for his untimely death would have been realized.

Mr. Varnum came home from his duties at East Cambridge, where he had been attending Court, with a violent attack of fever, on Friday, the 8th of January, 1841. It was the method of practice at that day to resort to bleeding, on the theory that blood letting took away the cause of the disease. It was resorted to in his case and proved too drastic a treatment. He passed away on the following Monday.

In an obituary of him in the Lowell *Courier* of Jan. 14, 1841, the following appropriate and just tribute was paid to his memory: "The various high offices held at different periods by Mr. Varnum have given the public a good knowledge of his qualifications, and have never failed to show him a man of sound judgment, good practical wisdom, and unsullied integrity. . . . His varied and responsible duties as sheriff of the most populous county in the Commonwealth were performed with decided energy and promptness, and at the same time with characteristic urbanity. . . .

Mr. Varnum was employed in much public business in his native town and elsewhere, and in all relations his conduct commanded the highest approbation and respect. He was a good citizen, an exemplary Christian, a kind neighbor and an upright man."

121. DANIEL VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Daniel<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 21 Aug., 1791; died 6 April, 1859; married 9 July, 1834, Nancy Prescott of Lowell.

Four children:

- i. Daniel Hildreth,<sup>7</sup> b. 1850; d. 12 Oct., 1852.
- ii. Lydia Ann, b. Mar., 1854; d. 11 Oct., 1854.

- iii. Joseph Bradley, m. Carrie F. Shaw.
- iv. Daniel Hildreth, m. Florence E. Fleteher.

Daniel Varnum and his family are buried in the Varnum Cemetery at Dracutt.

122. JOSHUA VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Daniel,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 7 Nov., 1795; died 27 Mar., 1885; married 11 Sept., 1818, Susannah Hildreth of Dracutt, born 17 Nov., 1802; died 3 Dec., 1889.

Seven children:

- i. Susannah Hildreth, b. 27 Nov., 1819; m. James Whittemore.
- ii. Joshua, b. 16 Dec., 1822; d. young.
- iii. Persis Adoline, b. 17 Nov., 1824; m. Mark B. Fisher.
- iv. James Hildreth, b. 28 Jan., 1827; m. Harriet E. Meader.
- v. Hannah Elvira, b. 20 Jan., 1828; m. Albert Viles.
- vi. Joshua Burrage, b. 27 Nov., 1830; d. 22 July, 1877.
- vii. Sarah Helena, b. 21 Mar., 1834; m. Charles Greene.

123. MOSES VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Moses,<sup>5</sup> John, Jr.,<sup>4</sup> Col. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*) b. 27 Aug., 1784; d. 20 Oct., 1865; m. 13 Dec., 1812, Sophia Stacey, b. 12 July, 1792; d. 3 Feb., 1854.

Eight children:

- i. John G.,<sup>7</sup> b. 31 Jan., 1814; drowned in Ohio river 1847.
- ii. Susan Stacey, b. 27 Nov., 1815, at Guyandotte, W. Va.; d. 1 Nov., 1884; m. 31 May, 1841, Thomas, son of Joseph and Lucy (Nowlan) Turner of Sheltandoah Co., W. Va.

Six children (Turner):

- Adelaide S., b. 4 June, 1842; m. Reese B. Dillon.
- Albert O., b. 27 Aug., 1844; m. Olivia Chapdue.
- Victor, b. 27 Nov., 1846; m. Clara Harper.
- Victoria, b. 27 Nov., 1846; d. 27 Dec., 1846.
- Lyman C., b. 27 Oct., 1849; m. Sarah E. Leete.
- Senora, b. 22 Mar., 1853; m. Chas. Defoor.

136. iii. Anselm, b. 21 July, 1818; m. Nancy Ward.  
137. iv. Leander, b. 14 June, 1821; m. Angelina Cole Mason.  
v. Orlando, b. 25 Mar., 1824; d. in infancy.  
vi. Sarah Ann, b. 5 June, 1826; m. George Drown of Cabell Co., W. Va.; d. 14 Mar., 1849. No issue.  
vii. Mary Ann, b. 27 Dec., 1828; m. 18 Mar., 1849, James Patterson; removed to Missouri.  
Five children (Patterson):  
William E., Emma, John, James, Sarah.  
138. viii. Moses, b. 6 Mar., 1833; m. Mary A. Darling.

### MOSES VARNUM.<sup>6</sup>

*By Girard Compton Varnum.<sup>8</sup>*

MOSES VARNUM was born August 27th, 1784, in Belfast, Maine. At that time Maine was a wilderness, peopled only by Indians who lived by trapping, hunting and fishing. There were no schools, churches, or any other civilizing influences; hence the early years of Moses Varnum's life were spent among the Indians. He became an expert at trapping and hunting and fishing, and as a boy he was a favorite among the tribes that inhabited the forests.

Beaver, otter, mink, together with moose hunting, seem to have filled the pages of his early history. One story which has been handed down to us, is that while hunting he found two kings of the forest, bull moose, with horns interlocked. He stole as closely to them as he thought he dared, when he made the discovery that they were dead from exhaustion, the result of the battle. He went to an Indian camp near by, told his story and induced the Indians to accompany him back to the place and secured their aid in getting the two animals to town; the steaks were traded as a luxury.

Again, an offer was made for the pelt of a very large wolf

that was destroying the sheep of the neighborhood. Grand-father tried his skill with the trap and finally captured the wolf. For this he got \$27.00, a fortune in those days, and was presented with a fine "Blue Jean Suit" of clothes, and was then the best dressed man in Belfast.

From early manhood until 28 years of age he worked in a saw-mill. His father platted the town of Belfast, but found the venture a failure, as he could not sell the lots. My grand-father becoming disgusted, left the State in a wagon, coming overland to Pittsburg and thence by the Ohio river in a flat boat to Marietta. He located on the Muskingum river, married Sophia Stacey (my father tells me that he does not remember anything about the Stacey family, and I only remember that my grandmother was one of the sweetest dispositioned old ladies I ever knew).

Moses Varnum, the subject of this sketch, built the first saw-mill on the Muskingum river at Rainbow Creek, and began building keel boats. These boats he would load with produce and pole down the Ohio river and sell the boat and load. He kept this up until he had built, loaded and sold twenty-one boats, and fully as many flat boats, which were loaded with corn and sold. In this experience as a river man he lost but one boat, that one being wrecked on the Scioto river and the load lost.

In 1821 he bought a farm near Millersport, on the Ohio river, and moved to it by keel boat, and there began the business of furnishing wood to steamboats (at that early day wood was used for firing steamboats). It was in the spring or early summer of this year that my father, Leander Varnum, was born.

After eight years on this farm, he bought 320 acres of land at Millersport, for which he paid \$600 cash. He lived on this farm four years and then bought a steam mill and furnished the country for miles around with flour, meal and lum-

ber. Fourteen years later he moved back to the farm, and spent the latter days of his life living with my father and my Uncle Moses, his youngest son.

His was a nature filled with such indomitable will power and courage and honesty of purpose, that he knew no such word as fail. He died at the ripe age of 85, and left a name that all who knew him revered and honored.

124. JEWETT VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Moses,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*) born 6 Aug., 1794; died 23 Aug., 1867; married 10 April, 1823, Rachel Dixon of Jefferson Co., Mo., born 21 Dec., 1805, died 11 June, 1869.

Four children:

- i. James Mitchell,<sup>7</sup> b. 10 Oct., 1824; d. unm. 19 Apr., 1898.
- 139. ii. Solomon Dixon, b. 6 June, 1828; m. Elvira Evans.
- iii. Susan, b. 4 July, 1832; d. 4 Mar., 1871; m. 1852, Ninian E. Tolin.

Seven children (Tolin):

- Rufus Loring, John Volney, Lemuel Lee, Edith Olive, Emma Louisa, Mary Alice, Nancy Elizabeth.
- iv. Loring Herbert, b. 15 Oct., 1835; d. 16 June, 1885; m. 1864, Louisa Evans of California.

He married, second, Ann Shields of Monroe Co., Mo. He was born in Belfast, Me., and when his father removed to Ohio with his family, he settled, on attaining to manhood, in Illinois and became a farmer and trader, dying at 73.

125. JUSTUS BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>6</sup> (*Moses,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 24 Nov., 1799; died 22 Sept., 1861; married, 31 Oct., 1830, Sarah Ann Dixon of Jefferson Co., Mo., born 31 Dec., 1808, died 4 April, 1862.

Nine children:

- i. Virginia,<sup>7</sup> b. 4 Nov., 1881; d. in infancy.

- ii. John Carlisle, b. 10 Feb., 1833 ; d. 2 Oct., 1861.
- iii. Christopher Columbus, b. 5 Aug., 1835 ; d. 4 Aug., 1839.
- 110. iv. Austin Dixon, b. 10 May, 1837 ; m. Sarah E. Bayles.
- 141. v. Horace Addison, b. 19 Mar., 1839 ; m. Agnes A. Druse.
- 142. vi. Benjamin Bennett, b. 16 Dec., 1841 ; m. (1) Sarah A. Barker,  
(2) Minnie Boedecker.
- vii. Margaret Isabel, b. 10 May, 1844 ; d. 4 July, 1845.
- 143. viii. Leverett Decatur, b. 4 May, 1846 ; m. Anna Hesterburg.
- 144. ix. Justus Frederick, b. 29 July, 1849 ; m. Barbara Ellen Judd.

JUSTUS BRADLEY VARNUM died in New Design, Ill. His son, Justus Frederick, says of him: "He lived on a farm, and by frugal and careful attention to his work, acquired considerable land interests. In connection with his farm-work he followed the occupation of cooper, and turned out a grade of work which was sought by millers and packers, because of the excellent quality of material and class of workmanship. In 1849, when the gold fever raged, Uncle Jus, as he was familiarly known, remarked, that he 'had a few more wild oats to sow,' and joined a party to California, making the trip overland by ox-team, which took a greater part of six months. He remained in that country nearly two years, during which time he accumulated considerable of the precious metal, returning home to his family in the summer of 1851. He was a man scrupulously honest in his dealings, and square with all men. He was a favorite at all social gatherings, where, as a performer on the violin, he kept one and all in a cheerful mood. His qualities of head and heart are best understood in the profound regrets and deep manifestations at his taking away."

126. JAMES VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Prescott*,<sup>6</sup> *Ebenezer*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 15 March, 1792; died 20 Oct., 1876; married, 1817, Elmira Melvin of Bridgewater, N. H.; died at Stark, Me., 22 July, 1883.

One child:

Mary,<sup>8</sup> b. 17 May, 1819; d. 26 Jan., 1839.

JAMES VARNUM, so says a nephew, John Varnum Bradley of Portland, who was reared by him, "worked on his father's (Col. Prescott Varnum) farm until he was 18 years old, to which occupation he was attached, and would have followed, but for an affliction which left him a cripple, and incapacitated him for agricultural pursuits. Intellectually, he was well adapted to a professional life. He entered the office of Dr. Skilton of Pelham, N. H., with whom he studied medicine, receiving his diploma as fitted for practice from the New Hampshire Medical Society, as was the custom in that day. He first settled in Bridgewater, N. H., where he married. In 1824 he moved to Stark, Me., where for over fifty years he practised his profession, and where he died in 1876. He was a very skilful and successful physician, and was called into the most difficult cases for miles around. As a citizen he was very prominent; many times a member of the Legislature of his State, and held office in town and county. He was broad and liberal in his views of life, entertaining clergy of all denominations. It was said of him that he was so benevolent that in his long years of practice he was never known to exact a fee; yet he acquired a comfortable subsistence. He was very easy and genial in temperament, a ready and witty conversationalist, and a man of rare discrimination."

127. PRESCOTT VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Prescott*,<sup>6</sup> *Ebenezer*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 24 Oct., 1796; died 20 March, 1861; married (1) 24 Nov., 1815, to Lucy Presbury; married (2) 28 Feb., 1820, Elizabeth Clements, born at Cape Ann, Mass., 15 Jan., 1795, died at Metamora, Mich., 29 Sept., 1879.

## Six children:

- i. Laura Augusta,<sup>9</sup> b. 1821; m. Dennis Stocker.
- 145. ii. William Nelson, b. 13 Aug., 1826; m. Julia H. Russell.
- 146. iii. Joseph Bradley, b. 19 May, 1830; m. Maria E. Vibbert.
- iv. Elizabeth Mary, b. 1833; m. James Hodges.
- v. Zephaniah Sexton, b. 3 Apr., 1838; m. Lucinda Vibbert.
- vi. Elvira, b. 3 Apr., 1838.

PREScott VARNUM went from Draeutt to Canada, and shortly after the death of his first wife removed to Genesco, N. Y., where he met Elizabeth Clements, whom he married in 1820. She had settled there with her parents, when it was a wilderness, having been born at Cape Ann, Mass. Some years after marriage, in 1842, she and her husband made their home in Metamora, La Peer Co., Mich., where she died on the farm she had occupied for 25 years.

128. WILLIAM VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Prescott*,<sup>6</sup> *Ebenezer*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 29 July, 1803; died 25 July, 1881; married 21 July, 1833, Sarah Dinsmore of Anson, Me., died 26 Aug., 1883.

## Five children, born at Anson, Me.:

- i. Susan Dinsmore,<sup>8</sup> b. 22 Mar., 1834; m. 6 July, 1851, Calvin P. Knight of Anson, Me.
- ii. Emily, b. 17 July, 1836; m. 27 Jan., 1859, George E. Merrill of Biddeford, Me.
- iii. Mary Elizabeth, b. 23 Dec., 1842; m. M. Belcher of Brunswick, Me.
- iv. Homer Percival, b. 23 Nov., 1845; d. 11 Jan., 1862.
- 147. v. William Prescott, b. 12 Mar., 1853; m. Alice M. Dunning.

WILLIAM VARNUM lived at Anson, Me., where he was a miller. He was a trial justice and Justice of the Peace, holding commission from Gov. Dunlap in 1834. He was a great worker in the temperance cause, and prominent as a church organizer.

129. JOHN VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Prescott,<sup>6</sup> Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 18 May, 1823; married 10 May, 1846, Nancy E., daughter of Sylvanus and Clarissa (Durell) Greene of Tamworth, N. H., born 1 Jan., 1823.

Seven children:

- i. Mary Elizabeth,<sup>8</sup> b. 22 Apr., 1847, at Troy, N. Y.; d. 26 Oct., 1873; m. 11 Nov., 1869, Geo. D. Butler of Lowell, Mass.  
One child (Butler):

Edith May, b. 10 Jan., 1873; d. 4 Aug., 1873.

- 148. ii. Charles Albert, b. 21 June, 1849, at Troy, N. Y.; m. Mary A. Moore.

iii. Lydia Ann, b. 25 Sept., 1851, at Draeutt; d. 11 Sept., 1856.

- 149. iv. John Prescott, b. 26 Feb., 1854; m. Josephine L. Dyer.

v. Archibald Oakley, b. 22 July, 1856; d. 17 Feb., 1865.

vi. Sarah Vivia, b. 29 Jan., 1860; m. 3 Oct., 1881, A. J. Collins.

vii. Henry, b. 19 Dec., 1862.

JOHN VARNUM entered the army as private in 1861, and served through the war, being mustered out as Major. He settled in Florida at the close of the war, and engaged in lumber, brick and meal and grist in West Florida until 1870. He was a member of the State Assembly 1870, and was appointed Adj.-Gen. of the State with the rank of Major-General. This position he held until 1877, during which time he had charge of the Penal Institutions of the State, the quarantine of the coast, public buildings and grounds, and the militia. He was Treasurer and Director of the Florida Agricultural College, and became U. S. Receiver of public moneys at Gainesville, of which city he was Mayor in 1882. He lives at Jacksonville, Fla.

130. HENRY VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Prescott,<sup>6</sup> Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), married 4 Dec., 1853, Marietta Lucretia, daughter of Liab and Lydia A. (Howe) Lee of Concord, Mass.

## Two children:

- i. Helen Carlotta,<sup>8</sup> m. 6 Sept., 1876, Geo. H., son of Dea. George and Nancy (Wood) Hovey of Lowell.
- ii. Irma Lee, m. 4 Nov., 1903, John, son of Jesse L. and Ellen (Wood) Fox of Tewksbury, Mass.

HENRY VARNUM is a farmer living on the Major Daniel Varnum place in Dracutt.

131. PHINEAS FOX VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Phineas,<sup>6</sup> Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 22 Sept., 1806; died 24 Jan., 1892; married 1 Jan., 1834, Elizabeth, daughter of Elias and Elizabeth (Widgery) Thomas of Portland, Me.

## Eleven children:

- i. Charlotte Vivia,<sup>8</sup> b. 14 Jan., 1835; d. 19 Apr., 1870.
- ii. Elizabeth Widgery.
- iii. Prudence Almira, b. 24 Dec., 1837; d. 14 Aug., 1839.
- iv. Phineas Fox, b. 18 Aug., 1839; d. 7 June, 1840.
- v. Gertrude, b. 17 Aug., 1841; d. 8 Oct., 1841.
- vi. Phineas Fox, b. 23 Sept., 1842; d. in infancy.
- vii. Lawrencee Phineas, b. 22 Sept., 1843. He was 2d Lieut. U. S. colored troops. Was at seige of Fort Hudson.
- viii. Helen Josephine, b. 20 Sept., 1846; m. 14 Dec., 1877, Louis J. Stephens of Jacksonville, Fla.

## One child (Stephens):

Phineas Varnum, b. 23 Sept., 1879.

- ix. Elias Thomas, b. 27 Aug., 1847; d. 22 Sept., 1848.
150. x. John Arkwright Marshall, b. 12 Mar., 1848; m. Margaret J. Stanford.
- xi. Georgianna Julia, b. 4 Apr., 1853; m. James A. Gray of Saco, Me.

PHINEAS FOX VARNUM. "Another of the merchants of the old regime," says *Eastern Argus*, Portland, 25 Jan., 1892, "passed away yesterday of pneumonia at the advanced age of 86 years. He was the son of Gen. Phineas Varnum, who came here from Dracutt, Mass., early in 1800, and

a grandson of Lt. Ebenezer Varnum, who fought in Capt. Peter Coburn's Company at Bunker Hill. Mr. Varnum was educated at the celebrated Military Academy of Capt. James Partridge, and shortly after graduation commenced his career as a merchant here, which he continued until old age compelled his retirement. He became a partner of his father, then with E. R. Mudge, and later Moulton & Rogers, among the largest and most important firms of their day. He served for a time in our City Government, being a member of the Common Council in 1835, and President of that board in 1836.

Mr. Varnum was a man of the strictest integrity, great energy, and exhaustless enthusiasm. He saw into the future in many things beyond his compeers. In a speech, made here many years ago, he foretold Chicago's greatness, and explained the causes which would bring it about. Mr. Varnum's magnificent physique will be remembered by our older citizens. No man on our streets carried such bulk and weight with the same ease and grace."

132. CHARLES BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Bradley*,<sup>6</sup> *Bradley*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 5 Sept., 1815; died 14 Oct., 1861; married 8 April, 1844, Rebeeca S. Gage of Dracutt, born 1819, died 3 April, 1896.

Seven children:

- i. Joseph Butterfield, <sup>8</sup> b. 13 Jan., 1845; d. 8 Mar., 1847.
- 151. ii. Charles Frederick, b. 28 June, 1846; m. Abbie L. Davis.
- 152. iii. Joseph Butterfield, b. 13 Apr., 1847; m. (1) Isabel G. Mowry,  
(2) Sadie Ketcham.
- iv. George Cornell, b. 19 Mar., 1850; d. 22 Sept., 1857.
- v. Albert Henry, b. 4 Sept., 1852; d. 25 July, 1874.
- vi. Edwin Bradley, b. 11 July, 1855; d. 30 July, 1857.
- vii. Edwin Bradley, b. 6 Aug., 1857; d. 30 Mar., 1863.

CHARLES BRADLEY VARNUM was a school teacher for fifteen years. He served as a member of the School Committee, and was prominently interested in the town affairs of Dracutt. He was buried in the Col. Joseph Varnum burial-ground, near the Navy Yard, Dracutt.







HON. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM, JR.<sup>7</sup>

*Speaker of the Assembly, State of New York, 1851*

From original portrait in possession of James M. Varnum

133. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM, JR.<sup>7</sup> (*James Mitchell<sup>6</sup>, Joseph Bradley<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 4 April, 1818; died 31 Dec., 1874; married (1) 30 Nov., 1843, Susan M., daughter of Nathan and Jane (Lorimer) Graham of New York City, born 4 July, 1819, died 20 May, 1857.

One child:

153. James Mitchell,<sup>8</sup> m. Mary W. Diekey.

Married (2) 16 April, 1863, Helen M., daughter of Robert and Susan Taylor of New York, born 1835, died 11 July, 1873.

Five children:

i. Susan Graham, m. 7 Mar., 1901, Edward deRose of New York.

One child (deRose):

Susan Rose, b. 22 Aug., 1902.

ii. Robert Taylor, m. 19 Apr., 1906, Catharine Saunders Ingersoll.

iii. Helen Louise.

iv. Joseph Bradley, b. 10 Mar., 1870; d. 16 Aug., 1870.

v. Amy Lenox.

### JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM, JR.<sup>7</sup>

*By James Mitchell Varnum.<sup>8</sup>*

JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM, son of Capt. James Mitchell and Mary (Pease) Varnum, was born in the city of Washington, D. C., on the 4th day of April, 1818. After attending preparatory schools in New England and at Georgetown College, he entered Yale College in 1834, from which he graduated in the class of 1838.

While at Yale, Mr. Varnum was a popular member of his class, a member of the Skull and Bones Society, and especially prominent in a literary way, being one of the editors of the *Yale Literary Magazine*, and the author of numerous magazine articles, and a number of plays, which were performed by

the students in the Calliopean Society, of which he was a member. Some of the programmes of these performances are still in the possession of his son.

In his autobiography, hereinafter referred to, he gives many interesting sketches of the men in college, at that time, of the college discipline, customs, societies, and *rows*; and amongst the latter, the great fight over the retention of the "college bully,"—all of which might be most interesting to graduates of Yale University, but would hardly appeal to the general reader of this sketch.

Mr. Varnum, after graduating from Yale College, spent two years in the Yale Law School, and subsequently entered upon the practice of the law in Baltimore, being for a time a student and clerk in the office of James Mason Campbell, the son-in-law of Chief Justice Taney of the United States Supreme Court. He subsequently opened an office in Baltimore with Mr. George B. Dunkel for a year or so, until he removed to New York, which occurred shortly after his marriage to Miss Susan M. Graham of New York on the 30th of November, 1843. His wife was the youngest sister of the Miss Graham who had married his uncle, Joseph B. Varnum, and to avoid confusion caused by the identity of their names, and the fact that uncle and nephew had married sisters, Mr. Varnum thereafter added the word "Junior" to his name, and was so generally known until the death of his uncle, in 1867.

Soon after his marriage he entered as a student the law office of Graham, Hoffman & Bosworth, the senior partner being his brother-in-law, Gen. James Lorimer Graham, the other partners in the firm, Edward Sanford and James S. Bosworth, becoming some years later well known as distinguished judges in New York.

This firm changed its name to Varnum, Turney & Appleby, and continued, after Mr. Varnum became a member, under

different titles, until 1905 (over 60 years), his elder son, Judge James M. Varnum, retiring upon his elevation to the bench in 1899, and his younger son, Robert Taylor Varnum, withdrawing in 1905. Mr. Varnum, during his legal career, was connected with many important litigations, and was the counsel for many corporations and individuals.

Soon after he settled in New York, Mr. Varnum interested himself in politics, and was elected several times to the Legislature, where he soon took a prominent and distinguished place. He served in the Legislature in 1849, 1850, 1851 and 1857, and in 1851 was elected Speaker of the Assembly.

In 1853 he was the "Whig" candidate for Congress, but "went down" with General Scott and all the other Whig candidates. In politics, Mr. Varnum was a Whig until about 1861, when he joined the Republican party, of which he was ever after a prominent member in the State of New York. He always took a great interest in local affairs in New York City; was for many years a member of the Board of Education; was a member of the famous Committee of Seventy at the time of the overthrow of the "Tweed Ring" in 1871, and served for two years as an alderman of the city, being elected upon a reform ticket in 1866-7.

Mr. Varnum on 20th May, 1858, commenced a series of letters in a journal form addressed to his son James M. Varnum, then a young child, somewhat after the style of the letters of Lord Chesterfield to his son, setting forth the occurrences and customs of the times from his earliest recollection up to 1868. He embodied in them his views of life as drawn from his own experience, and gave calm and dispassionate suggestions and advice to his son as to the future. He also included a general history of the Varnum family, that he might inculcate an interest in his ancestry by a knowledge of the lives of those of his name who had been prominent in the military

service and in the upbuilding of the nation. He had a just and loyally characteristic estimate to make of those of his name who had achieved distinction, and kept in mind dispassionately the tribute to be paid to their memories. As he was a man himself of prominence in public and business life, his estimates are of great weight.

In alluding to his grandfather's family, he says :

" According to the custom which seems to have prevailed in his day, the eldest son received a college education, and Joseph Bradley Varnum, being destined for a farmer, went to the common school only. This gave his elder brother James Mitchell a decided advantage, as he became a distinguished advocate, and figured with renown as Judge, Statesman and Soldier. He has left a great reputation in Rhode Island and the most extraordinary accounts are handed down of the effects produced by his addresses, although it must be acknowledged that the printed reports of his efforts, which have been preserved, do not sustain his reputation. This is not remarkable, as the influence exerted by an orator is quite as much from his manner, gestures, ready tact in debate, and a thousand other things, which the reporters of that day could not give, and which even those of the present time often fail in conveying an accurate impression to the reader. Joseph Bradley Varnum, the younger brother, had a good mind, habits of acute observation and an exceedingly good stock of common sense which made the deficiency of education less apparent than might have been expected. He himself seems never to have regarded it as a very serious deficiency, and looked upon a liberal education as unnecessary for his sons. They never ceased, however, to express their regrets over this omission, and to urge upon their father to give their youngest brother Benjamin the educational advantages of which they were deprived. Gen. Varnum was a Democrat of the Jeffersonian school—a class of politicians who cannot be said to exist at the present day, although the so-called Democrats profess to be of the legitimate succession. He exercised much influence while in Congress by his tact and sound judgment."

Mr. Varnum, although the greater part of his life was spent in New York, was ever a loving and loyal son of Washington

—the Capital City of the United States, and his birth-place. He was among the first if not the very first, to bring before the public the history of its inception, the aims and objects of its creation, the original plans for its foundation and improvement, and the proper and logical action which should be taken on the part of our Government to carry out the high purpose of its founders and make the capital city of the nation, a "city beautiful" as it was planned by Major L'Enfant and its original designers.

Such action has, in part, been already taken, which will be fully carried out, if the plans recently (1906) recommended by the committee of Congress as approved by the leading architects and landscape gardeners of the country are formally adopted by Congress.

In 1847 Mr. Varnum commenced a campaign before the public to secure this ultimate result. He read papers on the subject, before the New York Historical Society, the Maryland Historical Society and an assembly of citizens at Washington. He subsequently published articles bearing on the same subject in *Hunt's Merchants Magazine*, then a leading periodical. In the following year he embodied his views more fully in a book entitled "The Seat of Government of the United States," being a review of the discussions in Congress and elsewhere, on the site and plans of the Federal City, with a sketch of its present position and prospects. He continued his campaign on behalf of the neglected capital city through letters, magazine articles and personal appeals to Congressmen and officials of the Government, and later published another work entitled the "Washington Sketch Book," dealing with the same general subject, and again appealing to the nation for justice and fairness to the city which it had brought into being, and to which it owed the natural obligation for support and encouragement that a parent owes to its legitimate and helpless offspring.

In 1867, so earnest was his zeal in the cause that he drew up an elaborate plan for the taking under Govermental control the entire District of Columbia through a Board of Commissioners appointed by the President of the United States, administering through this Board the financial and civic administration of the city of Washington; the United States Government instead of the municipality being the administrator of its affairs. This charter was put before the prominent citizens of the city, and the result was the inauguration substantially of the present regime, nearly all of his suggestions being adopted. The result has been most gratifying to the nation and has made Washington one of the most beautiful capital cities of the world. Mr. Varnum's predictions as to its future are being realized. He claimed for it that through its gathering of the prominent men in statesmanship in Congressional and Govermental life; its archives of national history and the literature of the United States through the copyright law, and the world of books in the National Library; the scientific knowledge gathered under Govermental auspices by expeditions and researches through the Smithsonian Institute; its National Museum of the treasures of mineral and agricultural resources of the United States; its Army Medical Museum, with its vast collection of medical and surgical specimens, would become the great representative city of the nation in its social and educational influence on the men who would be attracted thither as a residence.

Mr. G. W. Bungay in the *New York Sun*, in 1857, in an article on the members of the State Legislature, thus described him :

" Mr. Varnum is very pleasing in his personal relations, and is an effective speaker, convincing more by the force of his reasoning than by eloquence, peroration or passionate invective, and is as happy in his conclusion as he is forcible in argument. He is a fine looking man, has dark

hair, touched with silver; wears a heavy beard, has an honest face, and wears spectacles."

The Century Association, the leading literary and artistic club in New York City, paid the following tribute to his memory at its first meeting after his death in January, 1875:

"Among us, too, Joseph Varnum, open as frankness itself, and acute and observing with all his *bonhomie*, showed how energy and usefulness in public affairs spring naturally from the plain candor, the honest purpose, the zeal for right, that made his discriminating friendship prized."

134. GEORGE WASHINGTON VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Jacob Butler*,<sup>6</sup> *Joseph Bradley*,<sup>5</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 7 Jan. 1825; married (1) 1855, Martha daughter of John and Eliza (Jackson) Evans of Dinwiddie Co., Va.

One child:

154. i. Joseph Butler,<sup>8</sup> m. Martha E. Robertson.

He married (2) 15 Dec., 1868, Annie L., daughter of Louis and Elizabeth (McClusham) Busby, of Palmyra, Mo.

Five children :

i. Catherine, m. 21 Sept., 1887, George S., son of Samuel and Harriet E. (Fyson) Irish, of Warboys, Hunts, Eng.  
Three children (Irish) :

Amie Fyson, b. 27 Sept., 1889.  
Cecil Varnum, b. 25 Mar., 1891.  
Perey Busby, b. 12 Dec., 1893.

155. ii. James Edgar, m. 22 Feb., 1894, Mabel D. Starbuck.  
 iii. Festus Franklin, b. 12 March, 1874, d. 10 Aug., 1875.  
 iv. Lottie Goldsborough, m. 9 Jan., 1904, Harry W., son of Charles and Maria D. (Whitaker) Ulrick of Plainfield, N. J.  
 v. George Bradley. Lives at Los Angeles, Cal.

GEORGE WASHINGTON VARNUM was born in Georgetown, D. C., and was educated in Petersburg, Va., whither his father removed in 1828. He studied medicine at the University of Pennsylvania, and after his graduation, in 1845, was appointed one of the assistant resident physicians in the Pennsylvania Hospital at Blockley. He settled and practised medicine in Petersburg. In Oct., 1862, he became a contract surgeon at St. Louis under R. C. Wood assistant Surgeon General U.S.A. In Feb., 1863, he received a commission as surgeon U. S. Volunteers signed by President Lincoln and Secretary Stanton, and was assigned to the Ninth Division, Thirteenth Army Corps, before Vicksburg. Here he contracted malaria and incapacitating him for service, he resigned in August, 1863. He resided for some years in Montgomery City, Mo., and afterwards in San Diego, Cal. He now lives in Los Angeles, Cal.

135. WILLIAM HARRISON VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Benj. Franklin,<sup>6</sup> Joseph Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George,<sup>1</sup>*), born 6 June, 1840; died 23 Apr., 1895; married 6 June, 1874, Sarah Frances, daughter of Joseph & Sarah (Stilson) Tibbetts of Lowell.

Child :

- i. William Harrison.<sup>8</sup> At the head (1906) of the Fine Art Department of the James Milliken University, Decatur, Ills.

WILLIAM HARRISON VARNUM served his apprenticeship in the Bank of Mutual Redemption, afterwards becoming Receiving Teller in the Bank of the Metropolis, State street, Boston. Here he remained some years, finally entering the boot and shoe business, having a prominent store on Washington street. He was much given to astronomical and microscopical research, and began the manufacture of astronomical telescopes in Cambridge. He was a man of varied natural gifts, of great probity

of character, and universally beloved. He died of blood poisoning after a short illness, and was buried in the Varnum family lot in the Lowell Cemetery.

136. ANSELM VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Moses*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 21 July, 1818; married 19 Nov., 1845, Naney Ward.

Six children :

- i. Adeline.<sup>8</sup> Deceased.
- ii. James Ward. Married; has two children.
- iii. Anselm. Married; has one child.
- iv. John. Killed in a railroad accident at Cincinnati, Ohio.
- v. Susan. Married Elijah Adkins; has two children.
- vi. Emma. Married J. D. Bowen; has three children.

137. LEANDER VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Moses*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John Jr.*,<sup>4</sup> *Col. Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 14 June, 1821, on the Ohio river, 30 miles from Gallipolis, is still living, and furnished most of the information as to his branch of the family; married 16 June, 1846, Angelina Cole Mason; died 4 March, 1898.

Three children :

- 156. i. John Albim,<sup>9</sup> b. 28 May, 1847; m. Ellen McKnight.
- 157. ii. Girard Compton, b. 7 Oct., 1848; m. (1) Clara W. Johnston, (2) Emma Bay.
- 158. iii. Leander, Jr., b. 19 Dec., 1849; m. Annie Griffith.

138. MOSES VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Moses*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Col. Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 6 Mar., 1833; married 19 Dec., 1864, Mary A., daughter of Moses and Mary Darling.

Six children :

- i. Mary Fenton,<sup>8</sup> b. 18 Feb., 1865; d. 27 Aug., 1869.
- ii. Nancy S., b. 16 June, 1867; m. 12 Jan., 1887, J. T. Thornburg, of Huntington, W. Va. One child (Thornburg) : Frederick.

- iii. Jennie L., b. 3 Oct., 1868; m. 16 June, 1890 J. M. Thornburg of Huntington, W. Va. One child (Thornburg) : Daisy.
- iv. Myrtie, b. 27 Aug., 1873; d. 3 Mar., 1874.
- v. Carl R., b. 4 Feb., 1880; m. 16 June, 1900, Nannie A. McComas.
- vi. Louis C., b. 7 Jan., 1882; m. 24 March, 1906, Retta Reese.

139. SOLOMON DIXON VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Jewett*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 6 Jnne, 1828; married 30 May, 1865, Elvira, daughter of Samuel and Nancy (Lake) Evans, born 11 Jan., 1839, died 7 Nov., 1883.

Six children :

- i. Olive,<sup>8</sup> b. 2 Mar., 1866, d. 2 Feb., 1874.
- 159. ii. Edgar W., b. 2 Mar., 1866; m. Blanche M. Whiting.
- iii. Mary, b. 13 July, 1867; m. 15 Sept., 1885, Samuel R. Taylor, son of Robert Taylor of Etna, Cal.

Six children (Taylor) :

- Thomas Edgar, b. 12 July, 1886.
- Samuel Harold, b. 7 July, 1889.
- Agnes Mary, b. 28 Nov., 1891.
- Gladys Bernice, b. 18 Dec., 1893.
- Cecil Varnum, b. 29 Oct., 1900; d. 28 Sept., 1901.
- Gilbert Earl Robert, b. 24 May, 1903.

- iv. Walter Jewett, b. 28 June, 1871; d. 19 Jan., 1883.
- v. Arthur Solomon, b. 8 Sept., 1872; d. 21 Oct., 1881.
- vi. Susan, b. 27 Jnne, 1876; m. 4 Sept., 1900, Gustav A. Reichman, son of E. Reichman of Fort Jones, Cal. Three children (Reichman) :

- Anna Irma, b. 3 Aug., 1901.
- Cecil Adolph, b. 15 Dee., 1902.
- Frederick, b. 27 Oct., 1904.

**SOLOMON DIXON VARNUM** lived with his father on his farm in Monroe county, Illinois, until nineteen years of age, and then enlisted in the Mexican war, in which he was a sergeant. At its close he returned home to Illinois and remained there until 1852, when he crossed the plains to Portland, Oregon. Two years later he went to California, where he engaged in mining near Yreka for about a year. He then engaged in farming and stock-raising in Scott valley, where he now at Fort Jones resides.

140. **AUSTIN DIXON VARNUM**<sup>7</sup> (*Justus Bradley*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 10 May, 1837; married 23 Jan., 1861, Mrs. Sarah Ellen (Wallace) Bayles.

Five children :

- i. Lilly,<sup>8</sup> b. 23 June, 1863; d. 7 May, 1901.
- ii. Mathilda, b. 13 Dec., 1865; m. John Ryan; four children.
- iii. Cyrus, b. 23 Sept., 1867.
- iv. George Alonzo, b. 13 Feb., 1869; d. 15 July, 1891.
- v. Horace Wood, b. 13 Apr., 1873.

141. **HORACE ADDISON VARNUM**<sup>7</sup> (*Justus Bradley*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>) of New Design, Illinois, born 19 Mar., 1839; d. 20 Apr., 1887; married 25 Sept., 1878, Agnes A., daughter of Harrison and Agnes (Cockshott) Druse of New Design, Ills.

Child :

- i. Vera,<sup>9</sup> b. 15 May, 1885.

142. **BENJAMIN BENNETT VARNUM**<sup>7</sup> (*Justus Bradley*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>) of Ava, Illinois, born 16 Dec., 1841. Farmer; owns 1200 acres of fine land in southern Illinois; married (1) Sarah Ann, daughter of Lewis and Sarah (Tolin) Barker of Waterloo, Ills.; b. 13 Dec., 1843; d. 11 Feb., 1878.

Five children :

- i. Eleanor Elsie,<sup>8</sup> b. 10 Nov., 1863; d. 17 May, 1864.
- ii. Carrie Lois, b. 4 Nov., 1866; d. 12 Dec., 1867.
- iii. Laura Ethel, b. 29 Sept., 1869; d. 23 Feb., 1893.
- iv. Olive Isabel, b. 28 Mar., 1872; d. 7 Feb., 1891.
- v. Justus Warren, b. 24 Nov., 1874; m. Emma M. Corhorn.

He married (2) Minnie, daughter of Henry and Minnie (Spellmeyer) Boedecker of Waterloo, Ills.

Nine children :

- i. Floyd Leslie,<sup>8</sup> b. 11 Feb., 1881; d. 12 Sept., 1881.
- ii. Edwin Bennett, b. 13 April, 1882.
- iii. Grover, b. 18 Sept., 1884.
- iv. Horace Homer, b. 14 Oct., 1886; d. 27 May, 1891.
- v. James Addison, b. 14 Oct., 1888; d. 23 Sept., 1893.
- vi. Blanchard Banks, b. 14 Oct., 1891.
- vii. Nelson Carlisle, b. 13 Feb., 1894; d. 29 April, 1894.
- viii. Noah Claude, b. 19 Sept., 1896.
- ix. William Jewett, b. 21 Feb., 1900.

143. LEVERETT DECATUR VARNUM<sup>7</sup> (*Justus Bradley,<sup>6</sup> Moses,<sup>5</sup> John Jr.,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*) of New Design, Ills., b. 4 May, 1846; m. 28 April, 1887, Annie, daughter of John and Wilhelmina (Bornermann) Hesterburg of Burksville, Ills.

One child :

- i. Alma Caroline,<sup>8</sup> b. 29 January, 1888.

144. JUSTUS FREDERICK VARNUM (*Justus Bradley,<sup>6</sup> Moses,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*). Born in New Design, Ill., where he lived for many years. Is now (1906) a resident of East St. Louis, Ill.; married, 6 June, 1882, Barbara Ellen, daughter of Charles H. and Martha (Sipe) Judd of Winchester, Ind.

## Five children:

- i. Nora Viola,<sup>8</sup> b. 20 May, 1883.
- ii. Gladys, b. 7 June, 1885.
- iii. Edna May, b. May, 1888.
- iv. Earl Frederick, b. 22 March, 1890.
- v. Girard Compton, b. 16 Dec., 1895.

145. WILLIAM NELSON VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Prescott*,<sup>7</sup> *Prescott*,<sup>6</sup> *Ebenezer*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 13 Aug., 1826; died at Vassar, Mich., 20 Oct., 1885; married, 31 Oct., 1847, Julia Hannah Russell of Virgil, N. Y.; born 19 July, 1829.

## Seven children:

- i. Lorinda Betsey,<sup>9</sup> b. 2 Dec., 1848; d. 3 Sept., 1869.
- ii. Prescott Leonard, b. 25 July, 1850; m. Della Steele.
- iii. Laura Elizabeth, b. 29 Dec., 1851; d. 7 Feb., 1852.
- iv. Julia Adelia, b. 8 May, 1853; m. George Smiley.
- v. William Joseph, b. 22 July, 1856; d. 30 Oct., 1856.
- vi. Mary Maroe, b. 26 June, 1858; m. Frank Lockwood.
- vii. Russell Douglass, b. 17 Dec., 1865.

146. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Prescott*,<sup>7</sup> *Prescott*,<sup>6</sup> *Ebenezer*,<sup>5</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), born 19 May, 1830; died 26 Mar., 1896; married 8 Nov., 1856, Maria E., daughter of Stephen Vibbart of Clyde, St. Clair Co., Mich.

## Four children:

- i. Olin Blanchard.<sup>9</sup>
- ii. Celia.
- iii. Wilbur Fisk.
- iv. Antoinette.

## REV. JOSEPH BRADLEY VARNUM.

*Adapted from the Michigan Christian Advocate, June 27, 1906.*

Although born in Canada, at Berlin, Waterloo Co., Province of Ontario, Mr. Varnum's parents were from Massachusetts. His great grandfather was Lt. Ebenezer Varnum, who fought in Capt. Peter Coburn's company from Dracutt, at the Battle of Bunker Hill, and his grandfather was Col. Prescott Varnum of the Regt. of the Seventh Massachusetts militia. His mother was the granddaughter of Col. John Brooks, who was killed by the Indians in the early history of our Country.

In his boyhood he was so closely associated with the German settlers at Berlin, that their language became as familiar to him as his mother tongue. In 1843 his parents removed to Metamora, La Peer Co., Michigan. Here he attended the district school, housed in its building of logs, and also spent a term at the school at Romeo, at which place he taught two terms. In 1851 he went to Albion, where he studied three years at the Wesleyan Seminary. He was ambitious to take a course at the State University at Ann Arbor, but poor health and want of means prevented his so doing.

While teaching school in 1850, he felt impressed by a sense of duty, to consecrate his life to his Maker's service. To this end he was largely led by the influence of a pious mother, whose own life in Massachusetts had been moulded by religious surroundings. Her teachings guided him in the paths of moral rectitude, and she nurtured the workings of his mind to inward light and life. In the conviction that his life should be that of self-consecration, he made public confession at a place of worship—the same school house where he had studied and romped as a boy. He was made superintendent of the Sunday school and urged to enter the ministry. He was then twenty

years old, and was baptized and received into the church at Oxford, by the Rev. George Bradley. Because of his feeling of unfitness he declined several times a license to preach. In 1857, at the earnest intercession of Rev. Joseph Blanchard, he took up the work of local preacher at Forrestville, on the Lake Michigan shore, from which point he had a circuit of missionary work reaching from Lexington to Bay City. He proved his fitness for his calling, from the very first, winning during the first year eighty souls to Christ. He formed classes at Port Sanilac, Cherry Creek, Forrestville, Sand Beach, Willow Creek and Port Austin, and travelled the first year of work 2500 miles on foot.

In 1855 he was received as a "practitioner" into the Michigan, and in 1857 into full membership in the Detroit conference, Bishop Waugh confirming him as Deacon. His appointments were: 1855, Brockway mission; 1856, Memphis; 1857-8, Rome; 1859, Franklin. In 1860 he "located" and went to the State of Missouri to take work; but the Civil War breaking out, he returned to Michigan, was readmitted, and appointed to Clarks-ton, in 1862 to Goodrich, in 1863 to Lainsburg. On March 21, 1864, he enlisted in the 2d Michigan Volunteers, and served in the Army until mustered out in August, 1865, at the close of the War. He was with Grant's army at the siege of Peters-burg, and was wounded in the knee and shot through the hip.

Resuming his life as a preacher, he served 1865 at North Branch, 1867-8 at Rochester, 1869-70 at Williamstown, 1871 at Southfield, 1872 at Unadilla. In 1873 he was appointed at Oakville, but hoping to benefit his health, which had become impaired by reason of his wounds in the war, he removed to Albion, Iowa. Here he dwelt for eleven years, and having in 1874 been placed among the "Superannuated," he took up and followed the pursuit of dairyman. In 1884, he removed to Gale, So. Dakotah, being among the pioneers in that State,

where he became a farmer. He was highly esteemed among the settlers, and honored by an election to the State Legislature, in which he became a member of influence, having been regarded as one of the best speakers in that body. He was buried at Gale, S. D., having passed out of life May 26, 1896.

147. WILLIAM PRESCOTT VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*William<sup>7</sup>, Prescott<sup>6</sup>, Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>, Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*) lives in Cumberland Mills, Me.; married (1) 1 Mar., 1853, Alice H., daughter of Ebenezer and Alice (Stanwood) Dunning of Brunswick, Me.; died 15 June, 1881. Two children :

- i. Frank Prescott,<sup>9</sup> m. Mildred M. Waldron.
- ii. Arthur Dunning.

He married (2) Bertha J., daughter of John A. G. and Abbie A. (Negus) Cottrell, b. 7 Jan., 1863, d. 1 May, 1892. He married (3) Alice M., dau. of John W. and Charity Harrison of St. Stephen, N. B. One child :

Bertha A., b. 19 May, 1900.

148. CHARLES ALBERT VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*John<sup>7</sup>, Prescott<sup>6</sup>, Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>, Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), married 1 Dec., 1886, Mary Alice, daughter of Louisa D. and Lydia Moore.

Three children:

- i. Georgia Moore,<sup>9</sup> b. at Fort Yates, N. D., 15 Dec., 1887.
- ii. Mary Lydia, b. at Fort Sill, Okla., 1 Jan., 1889; d. 16 Jan., 1889.
- iii. John Prescott, b. at Fort Riley, Kas., 18 Feb., 1892.

CHARLES ALBERT VARNUM was educated in Dracutt. He was appointed cadet at the United States Military Academy, 1 Sept., 1868, from Florida, and graduated No. 17 in a class of fifty-seven, 14 June, 1872, and was commissioned Second Lieutenant, Seventh U. S. Cavalry, at that date, and made First

Lieutenant, 5 June, 1876. He served as Regimental Quartermaster from 14 Nov., 1876, to 31 Oct., 1879. He was commissioned Captain, 22 July, 1900; Major, 1 Feb., 1901; Lieutenant Colonel, 10 April, 1905. He sailed under orders for the Philippine Islands from San Francisco, 5 Sept., 1905.

From his graduation up to 1890 he was in constant and vigilant service against the Indians, under the commands of Generals Miles, Howard and Custer. He received a medal of honor from Congress "for most distinguished gallantry in action at White-day Creek, South Dakota, 30 Dec., 1890." This record appears in the U. S. Army Register: "This officer was in command of Troop B and a part of Troop E, Seventh U. S. Cavalry, the regiment then executing an order to withdraw by detachments before a superior force of hostile Indians. Captain Varnum saw that a continuance of the movement would result in exposure of another troop of his regiment to being cut off and surrounded. Disregarding his orders to retire, he placed himself in front of his men, led a charge upon the advancing Indians, regained a commanding position that had just been vacated, and thus insured the safe withdrawal of both detachments without further loss."

149. JOHN PRESCOTT VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*John<sup>7</sup> Prescott<sup>6</sup>, Ebenezer<sup>5</sup>, Joseph<sup>4</sup>, Joseph<sup>3</sup>, Samuel<sup>2</sup>, George<sup>1</sup>*), born 26 Feb., 1854; died 5 Dec., 1888; married 14 Dec., 1875, Josephine Louise, daughter of Christopher and Almira (Littlefield) Dyer of East Stoughton, Mass.

Three children:

- i. Charles Archibald,<sup>9</sup> b. 25 Feb., 1877.
- ii. Grace Dyer, b. 17 July, 1879.
- iii. Edith Christine, b. 9 March, 1883.

JOHN PRESCOTT VARNUM was a leading journalist of Jacksonville, Fla., and connected with several leading papers in

that State. He was a bright young newspaper man and wielded a versatile pen. He gave promise of distinguished success in his calling, until overcome by the deadly malaria of Florida. He died at his wife's home at Avon, Mass., at the early age of thirty-four years.

150. JOHN ARKWRIGHT MARSHALL VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Phineas Fox,<sup>7</sup> Phineas,<sup>6</sup> Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born and lives in Portland, Me. He was one of the youngest volunteers in the war of the Rebellion, and was mustered out of the Invalid Corps at its close; he married 31 Aug., 1865, Margaret Irving Stanford of Baltimore, Md.

Five children :

- i. Elizabeth Josephine,<sup>9</sup> b. 9 June, 1866; d. 31 Aug., 1867.
- ii. Lillian, b. 1 June, 1868; d. 22 Oct., 1869.
- iii. Vivia, b. 18 Mar., 1870; d. 20 Aug., 1891; m. 15 Oct., 1890, Charles L. Lewando of Boston. One child (Lewando) :  
Reginald Freeman, b. 4 Aug., 1891.
- iv. Charlotte Thomas, b. 12 Sept., 1876.
- v. Elizabeth Widgery, b. 1 Nov., 1878; m. 26 Apr., 1906, Rev. Herbert B. Pulsifer of Boston.

151. CHARLES FREDERICK VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Charles Bradley,<sup>7</sup> Bradley,<sup>6</sup> Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George,<sup>1</sup>*), carpenter and builder; lives in Lowell, Mass.; married 25 Dec., 1871, Abbie L., daughter of Reuben P. and Elizabeth (Griffin) Davis of Gloucester, Mass.

Five children:

- i. Charles Frederick,<sup>9</sup> b. 26 Mar., 1873; d. 4 July, 1894.
- ii. Aliee Davis, b. 20 June, 1878; d. 30 May, 1897.
- iii. Mabel Louise, b. 17 May, 1880.
- iv. Thomas Howard, b. 29 Nov., 1885.
- v. Percy Edwin, b. 7 Aug., 1887.

152. JOSEPH BUTTERFIELD VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Charles Bradley,<sup>7</sup> Bradley,<sup>6</sup> Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), carpenter and builder; lives in Lowell, Mass.; married (1) 5 July, 1869, Isabel E., daughter of Sherman M. and Sarah (Smith) Morey of Lowell; died 17 June, 1890.

Four children :

- i. Ethel Gertrude,<sup>9</sup> b. 6 June, 1870; d. 31 July, 1872.
- ii. Gertrude Mary, b. 9 May, 1873.
- iii. Albert Henry, b. 4 May, 1878; m. Oma A. Brown.
- iv. Joseph Belfield, b. 18 Apr., 1879; d. 9 Aug., 1879.

He married (2) 18 Apr., 1892, Zadie, daughter of Stephen M. and Caroline (Staey) Keteham of Potsdam, N. Y.

153. JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Joseph Bradley,<sup>7</sup> James Mitchell,<sup>6</sup> Joseph Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), married 14 June, 1899, Mary Witherspoon, daughter of Charles Denston Dickey of New York and Mary Witherspoon his wife of Greensboro, Ala.

JAMES MITCHELL VARNUM, eldest son of Hon. Joseph B. Varnum of New York, was born in the city of New York, and graduated from Yale University in the Class of 1868, and from the Law School of Columbia University in 1871. He has since been engaged in the practice of the law in the city of New York.

In 1879 and 1880 he was a member of the New York Legislature.

In 1880 he was appointed by Governor Cornell as senior aide-de-camp on his staff, with the rank of Colonel, and on Jan. 1, 1895, he received from Governor Levi P. Morton a commission as Paymaster General of the State of New York, with the rank of Brigadier General in the National Guard.

In February, 1899, Governor Theodore Roosevelt appointed

him Surrogate (Judge of Probate) for the County of New York.

Mr. Varnum was in 1889 the candidate of the Republican party for Attorney General of the State, but was unsuccessful, although receiving about four hundred and ninety thousand votes, and running considerably ahead of his party ticket.

In 1890 he was the candidate of the Republican and Anti-Tammany coalition for Judge of the Superior Court, but failed of an election, as did all of his associates upon the ticket.

In 1891 he was elected as permanent chairman of the Republican State Convention at Rochester.

Mr. Varnum took a prominent part for many years in all the great national and international celebrations held in New York State and city.

He was specially deputed by the Governor of New York to meet and receive General Grant on behalf of the State, on his return from his tour of the world.

In 1881 he was appointed a member of the State commission to receive the distinguished French and German guests of the nation at the time of the Yorktown celebration, and as chairman of the reception committee had personal charge of the guests during their stay in the State of New York.

In 1883 he was one of the five gentlemen in charge of the centennial celebration of the evacuation of New York by the British, and in 1889 one of the five members of the managing committee of the great celebration of the centennial of the inauguration of General Washington as President of the United States.

In 1893 he was selected, although a Republican, by the Democratic Mayor of the city of New York as the manager of the great Columbian Naval Ball, given by the city to the officers of the fleets of ten foreign nations, at which about ten thousand people were present.

In the same year he was also appointed by the Mayor of New York chairman of the special reception committee in charge of her Royal Highness the Infanta Eulalia of Spain, who was the guest of the nation as the specially deputed representative of the King of Spain to the Columbian Exposition, and in that capacity he prepared the plans for and had charge of the reception and entertainment of the Princess while in New York.

In May, 1902, he organized and was chairman of the grand banquet given by the members of the Society of the Cincinnati to the members of the official mission sent by the French government to this country on the occasion of the dedication of the Rochambeau monument in Washington.

It is somewhat interesting to note the fact that Mr. Varnum received his commission as Brigadier General of militia 119 years after his great grand uncle General James M. Varnum, and 93 years after his great grandfather General Joseph B. Varnum, received their similar commissions, and that he was appointed in like manner to a judicial position 112 years after the former and 104 years after the latter.

General Varnum is a hereditary member of the old Order of the Cincinnati, founded by Washington and his officers in 1783, and in 1890 was elected Vice President of the Rhode Island branch of that Order, succeeding in that position, after the lapse of 117 years, General James M. Varnum of the Continental Army.

He is also a member of several of the well known American patriotic societies and organizations, and is now (1906) Governor of the Society of Colonial Wars in the State of New York, and in January, 1903, was created by the French Government a chevalier of the Legion of Honor of France.

154. JOSEPH BUTLER VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*George Washington,<sup>7</sup> Jacob Butler,<sup>6</sup> Joseph Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), lives and is in business in Rochport, Mo.; married 10 June, 1885, Martha Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin F. and Mary E. (Gillum) Robertson of Foley, Lincoln Co., Mo.

Five children :

- i. George Winthrop,<sup>9</sup> b. 17 Nov., 1889.
- ii. Franklin Robertson, b. 19 Aug., 1893.
- iii. Elizabeth Winthrop, b. 18 Sept., 1895.
- iv. Varina Dorothy, b. 19 Aug., 1897.
- v. Joseph Bradley, b. 14 Aug., 1906.

155. JAMES EDGAR VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*George Washington,<sup>7</sup> Jacob Butler,<sup>6</sup> Joseph Bradley,<sup>5</sup> Samuel,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), lives and is in business in Los Angeles, Cal.; married 22 Feb., 1894, Mabel, daughter of Milton C. and Tacy C. (Frame) Starbuck of Barnesville, O.

Two children :

- i. Marjorie Clara,<sup>9</sup> b. 1 Nov., 1896.
- ii. Kathryn Starbuck, b. 21 May, 1902.

156. JOHN ALBIM VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Leander,<sup>7</sup> Moses,<sup>6</sup> Moses,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), lives at Ironton, O.; married, 28 Dec., 1877, Ellen, daughter of William F. and Margaret (Higgins) McKnight.

Two children :

- i. Frederie,<sup>9</sup> b. 20 Jan., 1879; m. Harriet Pease.
- ii. Ruth, b. 12 June, 1902.

157. GIRARD COMPTON VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Leander,<sup>7</sup> Moses,<sup>6</sup> Moses,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), married 11 July, 1882, Clara W., daughter of Benjamin and Nancy Johnson, born 26 Aug., 1852; died 1901.

## Two children:

- i. Benjamin,<sup>9</sup> b. 1 June, 1883; d. in infancy.
- ii. Ernest Johnston, b. 7 Nov., 1886; d. 25 June, 1887.

He married (2) 26 June, 1902, Emma, daughter of Thomas and Julia E. (Smith) Bay of Frankfort, O.

GIRARD COMPTON VARNUM enlisted as a private in an Ohio regiment in 1863, at the age of fifteen years, and served until Jan., 1866, when he was mustered out. After his return from the army he graduated from the National Normal University of the State of Ohio, and was a teacher for twelve years. He was elected County Auditor of Lawrence County, Ohio, in 1890. He is now (1906) manager of the Great Atlantic and Pacific Tea Co. in Chicago, having under his charge the control of eight stores.

158. LEANDER VARNUM,<sup>8</sup> JR. (*Leander*,<sup>7</sup> *Moses*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>), lives in Millers, O.; married 1879, Annie, daughter of Andrew and Martha (Dawson) Griffith.

## Five children:

- i. George,<sup>9</sup> b. 15 May, 1880; m. Norma Burcham.
- ii. Mattie, b. 13 Sept., 1882; d. 2 Jan., 1887.
- iii. Vivian, b. 28 March, 1884.
- iv. Virgil, b. 17 Dec., 1885; d. 28 Oct., 1891.
- v. Jessie, b. 13 Nov., 1887.

159. EDGAR WHITING VARNUM<sup>8</sup> (*Solomon Dixon*,<sup>7</sup> *Jewett*,<sup>6</sup> *Moses*,<sup>5</sup> *John*,<sup>4</sup> *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>) married 23 Nov., 1902, Blanche M., daughter of Doris D. and Mary E. (Burgan) Whiting of Fort Jones, Cal.

## Two children:

- i. Doris Dixon,<sup>9</sup> b. 13 Dec., 1903.
- ii. Edgar Whiting, b. 6 Aug., 1905.

EDGAR WHITING was educated in the schools of San Francisco. He is a mining engineer and millwright in California. His home is at Fort Jones.

160. PRESCOTT LEONARD<sup>9</sup> (*William Nelson,<sup>8</sup> Prescott,<sup>7</sup> Prescott,<sup>6</sup> Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> Joseph,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 25 July, 1850; lives at Vassar, Mich.; married 4 Oct., 1875, Della Steele of Union, Ontario.

Three children :

- i. Julia Estelle,<sup>10</sup> b. 3 Mar., 1877.
- ii. Guy Nelson, b. 17 Aug., 1879.
- iii. Carrie Adelia, b. 31 Jan., 1884.

161. GEORGE VARNUM<sup>9</sup> (*Leander Jr.,<sup>8</sup> Leander,<sup>7</sup> Moses,<sup>6</sup> Moses,<sup>5</sup> John,<sup>4</sup> Joseph,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 15 May, 1880; a farmer; married 18 Oct., 1902, Norma Burcham. Lives in Millers, O.

Two children :

- i. Inez,<sup>10</sup> b. 6 Nov., 1903.
  - ii. Girard Compton, b. 29 June, 1906.
- 

Thus hath been gathered into one fold all of the name of Varnum, from George who, with his wife Hannah and his children Samuel and Hannah, landed in Ipswich in Massachusetts on or about the year 1635, down through Samuel, his son, and Thomas, John and Joseph, his grandsons, who founded Dracut in Massachusetts in 1664.

I N D E X.



## INDEX.

[Family of Thomas from 27 to 12; of John, 45 to 114; of Joseph, 117 to 290.]

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>Abbott, ——, 85<br/>    Mary Jane, 35, 36, 308<br/>    Moody B., 224<br/>    Nehemiah, 132</p> <p>Adair, Eliza, 97</p> <p>Adams, Nathan, 49</p> <p>Adkins, Elijah, 275</p> <p>Aiken, Ezekiel, 87<br/>    Mary Ann, 184, 246</p> <p>Alden, Mary B., 103</p> <p>Allen, Alvin B., 101<br/>    Addie Fletcher, 104<br/>    Christopher, 49<br/>    Helen M., 36, 104, 307</p> <p>Alvord, Mary, 73</p> <p>Ames, ——, 95</p> <p>Anderson, Climenia, 100, 109<br/>    Peter, 71</p> <p>Ansart, Julia, 136, 234</p> <p>Armstrong, Agnes, 104, 111</p> <p>Atkinson, Mary, 33<br/>    Timothy, 71</p> <p>Bagley, Ephraim, 134</p> <p>Bailey, Elizabeth P., 134</p> <p>Baker, Charles, 229</p> <p>Baldwin, Cyrus, 68, 137</p> <p>Bamford, Mary, 183</p> <p>Barker, Daniel, 227<br/>    Sarah A., 261, 277</p> <p>Barnett, Anna, 134<br/>    Carleton O., 134<br/>    Clarissa, 134<br/>    Eliza, 134<br/>    Frye Bayley, 134</p> <p>Gilman, 134</p> <p>Hannah, 134</p> <p>John D., 33, 306</p> <p>Persis, 134</p> <p>Robert, 133</p> | <p>Barron, Abiah Varnum, 129<br/>    Abigail, 129<br/>    Benjamin, 129<br/>    Benjamin Mitchell, 129<br/>    De Lafayette, 129<br/>    Elisha, 129<br/>    Hannah, 129<br/>    James Mitchell, 129, 224<br/>    John Varnum, 129<br/>    Joseph Bradley, 129<br/>    Lydia, 129<br/>    Martha, 129<br/>    Martha Varnum, 129<br/>    Mary, 21, 118<br/>    Oliver, 129<br/>    Samuel, 129<br/>    Samuel Varnum, 129</p> <p>Barrows, Oliver, 234</p> <p>Bartlett, Moses, 87<br/>    W. T. S., 308</p> <p>Batchelder, Joanna, 48</p> <p>Bay, Emma, 275, 289</p> <p>Bayles, Sarah E., 261, 277</p> <p>Beleher, M., 263</p> <p>Bell, ——, 97<br/>    Asa Varnum, 97<br/>    George, 97<br/>    James,<br/>    Joseph, 97<br/>    Mary, 97<br/>    Sarah, 97<br/>    Walker, 97<br/>    William, 125</p> <p>Bendick, Holsey, 224</p> <p>Benner, Ida M., 101, 110</p> <p>Biekford, Carrie E., 99, 108<br/>    Susan, 100</p> <p>Blanchard, Locanda, 88, 99</p> <p>Blaisdell, William, 235</p> <p>Blood, Esther, 133<br/>    Robert, 45, 68</p> <p>Bodwell, Charles, 33, 306<br/>    Elizabeth B., 306<br/>    Hannah P., 306<br/>    Jane, 306<br/>    Mary Varnum, 306<br/>    Phebe Varnum, 306<br/>    Sarah Ann, 33, 306</p> <p>Boedecker, Minnie, 261, 278</p> <p>Bovee, Mark, 107</p> <p>Bowan, J. D., 275</p> <p>Bowers, Anna, 118, 126<br/>    George, 35, 307<br/>    John, 125<br/>    Jonathan, 31, 35, 307<br/>    Kitty A., 35, 307<br/>    Minnie Brown, 31, 307</p> <p>Boyden Lydia, 45, 66</p> <p>Boynton, Frank P., 225</p> <p>Braden, Thomas J., 107</p> <p>Bradford, Louise L., 91</p> <p>Bradley, Amos, 228<br/>    Caleb, 71<br/>    Caroline, 181, 219<br/>    Cyrus Augustus, 228<br/>    George Prescott, 228<br/>    John Varnum, 228<br/>    Rebecca, 183</p> <p>Bragdon, Samuel, 181</p> <p>Brazier, Charles Edward, 72<br/>    Elizabeth Varnum, 72<br/>    Ellen, 72<br/>    Henrietta, 72<br/>    James, 72<br/>    John, 72<br/>    Mary Saltonstall, 72<br/>    William Farwell, 72<br/>    William Phillips, 72<br/>    Sarah Farwell, 72</p> <p>Bridges, Eleanor, 51, 78</p> <p>Briggs, Almon, 225<br/>    Charles E., 225</p> |
|--|---|

- Brooks, Francis A., 71  
 Brown, Alpheus R., 249  
   Dorcas, 51, 70  
   Eunice, 126, 133, 134  
   Grace, Caroline, 249  
   Harriet, 99  
   Jane, 183  
   Josiah, 183, 184  
   Mary, 32, 34  
   Sarah, 99  
     William, 184  
 Bryant, Charles, 134  
 Burclam, Norma, 289, 290  
 Buete, Henry, 114  
 Burbank, Joseph, 224  
 Burroughs, Mary, 134  
 Busby, Anna L., 247, 273  
 Butler, Caleb, 71  
   Charles Varnum, 71  
   Carissa, 71  
   Edith May, 264  
   Frances, 71  
   George, 71  
   George D., 264  
   Henrietta, 71  
   Molly, 128, 181  
   Polly, 129, 224  
   Rebekah, 71  
   Sarah, 87  
   Susan, 71  
   William, 71  
 Butterfield, Rachel, 126, 136  
   Sarah, 126, 132  
  
 Cahill, Mary, 99, 107  
 Carr, Mary A., 101, 110  
 Carter, Lydia, 183  
   Martha J., 225  
 Chan berlain, Josiah, 226  
   Warren, 226  
 Chamberlin, Benjamin A., 133  
   Dorcas, 133  
   Ernoch Lane, 133  
   Phineas, 133  
   Phineas Whiting, 133  
   Lydia Smith, 133  
 Chandler, Mehitable, 97, 104  
 Chandler, Joseph, 73  
 Chaplin, Harriet, 90, 100  
 Chapdue, Olivia, 257  
 Chase, Roscoe L., 308  
  
 Chickering, William, 224  
 Child, Martha, 128, 141  
 Clark, Betsey, 99  
   James, 99  
   Mary L., 99  
   Sophronia, 99  
   Thomas George, 99  
 Clements, Elizabeth, 228, 262  
 Coburn, Abel, 234, 306  
   Adeline N., 225  
   Bartlett, 33, 306  
   Benj. Varnum, 73  
   Benj. Sherburn, 73  
   Czarina, 33, 305  
   Eleannah Bridges, 79  
   Elizabeth C., 234  
   Emily, 183  
   Ephraim, 183  
   Fanny W., 33, 305  
   George W., 183  
   Hannah Augusta, 183  
   Henry Dearborn, 183  
   Jane, 183  
   Jeremiah Varnum, 33, 305  
   Jesse, 234  
   John Hancock, 183  
   John M., 35, 305  
   Jonas, 68  
   Joseph B. V., 183  
   Lauretta, 183  
   Lillian A., 305  
   Marquis de L., 228  
   Mary, 126, 133, 183  
   Mary Almira, 183  
   Mary Jane, 79  
   Peter, 33, 50, 305  
   Peter Sullivan, 33, 305  
   Robert Parker, 33, 305  
   Samuel A., 79, 183  
   Simon, 182  
   Thomas Jefferson, 183  
   Timothy Varnum, 33, 305  
 Colburn, Aaron, 27  
   Timothy, 27  
   Abraham, 21  
   Deborah, 27  
   Daniel, 27  
   Eleazer, 27  
   Ezra, 20, 21  
   Hannah, 21, 27  
   Jacob, 27  
  
 Colburn (continued)  
   James, 117, 118  
   John, 21  
   Mary, 27  
   Ruth, 118  
   Samuel, 21  
   Sarah, 21, 68, 86, 118  
   Thomas, 27, 118  
 Colby, 87  
 Collins, A. J., 264  
 Colliston, James, 224  
 Colston, Lucy I., 105, 112  
 Colton, John Jay, 308  
   Nellie Varnum, 35  
   Alice Maria, 35  
 Corhorn, Emma M., 278  
 Cottrell, Bertha J., 282  
 Cran, Lucy P., 100, 109  
 Craytey, Julia, 105, 111  
 Cummings, Ebenezer, 27  
 Cutter, John P., 96  
   John Varnum, 96  
  
 Dana, David, 88  
   Josiah, 98  
   Elijah Varnum, 98  
   Frank, 98  
   Julia A., 98  
   Mary E., 98  
 Davis, Abbie L., 266, 284  
   Mary Jane, 98, 101  
 Darling, Mary A., 258, 275  
 Dean, Ichabod, 100  
   Sarah, 132, 227  
 Dearborn, Abigail, 15, 69  
 Defoor, Charles, 257  
 de Rose, Edward, 236, 267  
   Edward Livingston, 236  
   Susan, 236  
   Susan Rose, 267  
 Dickey, Albert Pre-cott, 133  
   Charles, 133  
   George Reed, 133  
   George Wallace, 133  
   Gilman, 133  
   Hannah Whiting, 133  
   Henry, 133  
   James Varnum, 133  
   Jane Wallace, 133  
   John, 133  
   John Pinkerton, 133

Dickey (continued)  
 Mary W., 267, 285  
 Matthew Wallace, 133  
 Phineas Whiting, 133  
 Sarah Clarissa, 133  
 William Gage, 133  
 Dillon, Reese B., 257  
 Dinsmore, Abel, 140  
     Augusta Ann, 228  
     Sarah, 229, 263  
 Dixon, Gilbert, 67  
     Rachel, 227, 260  
     Sarah Ann, 227, 260  
 Doble, William, 68  
 Dodamead, Catharine, 184, 246  
 Doe, Amos W., 139  
     Charles, 139  
     Cyrene, 139  
     Harrison, 139  
     Leonard, 140  
     Mary, 139  
     Otis, 139  
     Sarah Jane, 140  
     Stephen, 140  
     William, 140  
 Dole, Estella, 108, 114  
 Downes, Frances, 225  
 Drown, George, 258  
 Druse, Agnes A., 261, 277  
 Dunning, Alice H., 263, 282  
 Durgin, Sarah, 226  
 Durant, Sarah A., 73  
 Dutton, Ervilia, 93, 101  
 Dyer, Josephine L., 264, 283  
 East, Abigail, 68, 86  
     Anna, 68, 85  
 Eastman, Adeline, 73  
 Eaton, Anna F., 78  
     Isabel Varnum, 94  
     Joseph Giles, 94  
     W. P., 72  
 Edwards, Chester C., 113  
 Elliott, Clarissa, 87  
     Richard A., 225  
     Polly, 131  
 Emerson, Samuel, 89  
 Evans, Elvira, 260, 276  
     Louisa, 260  
     Martha A., 247, 273

Falkenburg, H. S., 107  
     Lydia, 107  
 Farrington, Sarah, 49  
 Ferguson, James, 139  
 Fink, Harriet V. R.C., 102, 110  
 Finnell, Edward P., 229  
 Fish, Lydia, 183  
 Fisher, Mark B., 257  
 Fiske, Betty, 67  
     Daniel, 67  
     Josiah, 67  
     Mary, 67  
     Micah, 67  
     Nathan, 67  
     Sarah, 67  
     Varnum, 67  
     Walter, 67  
 Fletcher, Florence E., 257  
     J. Tyler, 235  
     Jonathan, 228  
     Mary, 72  
 Foran, William H., 224  
 Ford, Elmer S., 105  
     Fowler S., 105  
     Jonas Varnum, 105  
     Mehitable, 35, 308  
 Foster, Lucretia, 228  
 Fox, Hannah, 83, 93, 126, 132  
     Jenny Maria, 102  
     John, 265  
     Mary Ann, 225  
     Prudence, 134, 230  
 Frost, Josiah, 227  
 Gage, Abel, 139  
     Rebecca S., 234, 266  
 Gale, Benjamin, 78  
     Benj. Franklin, 78  
     Eleanor Varnum, 78  
     James Varnum, 78  
     John Varnum, 78  
     Levi Bartlett, 78  
     Ruth, 78  
         Ruth Carter, 78  
 Galloway, Irene, 107, 113  
 Gates, Harriet S., 105, 113  
 Getchell, Abby, 95, 103  
 Gibson, Caroline, 78  
 Gilman, George W., 183  
     Susan, 227  
 Gibson, John, 78  
 Gilfillan, Jemima, 99–108  
     Marietta E., 99, 109  
     Mary, 99, 108  
 Gilson, Eunice, 85, 95  
 Goodenough, Asa, 87  
     Jane, 87  
     Peter, 87  
     Phineas, 87  
     Stephen, 87  
 Goodhue, Mary, 27, 30  
     Rachel, 118, 125  
 Gooding, Benjamin, 85  
 Graham, Mary Ann, 184, 235  
     Susan M., 243, 267  
 Gray, James A., 265  
     Samuel, 140  
 Green, Charles, 257  
     Nancy E., 230, 264  
 Greenleaf, Phillip, 134  
     Moses, 49  
 Griffin, Abigail, 96  
 Griffith, Annie, 275, 289  
 Gunther, Franklin L., 236  
 Hale, Persis, 129, 223  
 Hamblett, Abby, 33, 306  
     Cyrus, 34, 306  
     Daniel Varnum, 33, 306  
     John P., 34, 306  
     Oliver, 34, 306  
     Theodore, 33, 306  
 Hand, Frances M., 105, 112  
 Hardy, Abigail, 45, 68  
 Harper, Clara, 257  
 Harriman, Lydia Ann, 139  
 Harris, William, 30  
 Harrison, Alice M., 282  
 Harvey, Betsey, 98, 106  
     Charles D., 100  
     Duncan C., 99  
     Etta Elvira, 100  
     George B. McC., 100  
     Lou Ella, 100  
     Nellie Mary, 100  
 Haskell, Elbridge G., 140  
 Hatch, Almira, 133  
 Hesterburg, Anna, 261, 278  
 Hildreth, 27  
     Fisher A., 183  
     Josiah, 128  
     Prudence, 51, 78

## INDEX.

- Hildreth (continued)  
 Susannah, 224, 257
- Hill, Helen, 243  
 Mary Isabel, 243  
 Silas Holman, 243
- Hills, Peter, 69
- Hodges, James, 263
- Hotchkiss, II. Maria, 72
- Howard, Charles, 136  
 Caroline, 136  
 Catharine, 235  
 Clarissa, 136  
 Mary, 136  
 Harriet, 136  
 Jacob, 136
- Howe, Alice Lydia, 250  
 Benjamin V., 250  
 Edward Sawyer, 96  
 Mary Belle, 250  
 Moses G., 250
- Hovey, Augustus, 230  
 George H., 265
- Hoyt, John, 87
- Huggins, Freeman, 73
- Hull, William H., 73
- Humphrey, Minna, 112
- Hunt, Walter M., 224  
 Sarah, 182
- Ingersoll, Catherine S., 267
- Irish, Amie Fysom, 273  
 George S., 273  
 Cecil Varnum, 273  
 Percy Busby, 273
- Jackman, Henry, 235  
 Sarah, 139, 235
- Jackson, Ann M., 139  
 William T., 235  
 Robert, 30
- Jewett, Frank E., 307  
 Joanna, 21, 27  
 Ruth, 21, 117
- Johnson, Anna Moody, 139  
 Ezekiel, 134  
 Mary Ann, 139  
 Nancy, 49  
 Ruth Moody, 138, 234  
 William, 138
- Johnston, Clara W., 275, 288
- Jourdan, John, 230
- Judd, Barbara Ellen, 261, 278
- Kelsey, Sarabel G., 101
- Ketcham, Zadie, 266, 285
- Kingsbury, Cyrus, 72  
 John Parker, 72
- Kimball, Elizabeth A., 99, 107
- Kinney, Emily, 97
- Kilburn, Martha B., 94, 102
- Knight, Calvin P., 263
- Ladd, Charles D., 99  
 Harvey E., 99  
 Seneca, 99
- Lakin, Nathaniel, 103
- Lang, Sarah A., 109
- Lane, Ezckiel, 69
- Langton, Sarah, 16, 20
- Lawrence, Clara M., 99, 109  
 Doctor, 97
- Lee, Marietta, 230, 264
- Lemen, Moses, 227
- Leete, Sarah E., 257
- Lewando Chas. L., 284  
 Reginald Freeman, 284
- Lindsay, David, 129
- Littlefield, Nathaniel, 71
- Libbie, Cynthia, 225
- Livingston, William, 139
- Lockwood, Frank, 279
- Lowe, Joseph T., 236
- Lowrey, Henrietta A., 103
- Lyman, Mary, 72
- Mansur, John, Jr., 131  
 Samuel, 129, 131
- Martin, Frances E., 140
- Mason, Angelina C., 258, 275
- Marshall, Horatio W., 34, 307  
 Phyllis M., 78
- MacAllister, Elizabeth, 133,  
 228
- McAdams, Martha, 51, 79
- McCalla, John M., 243
- McCall, Maggie, 108
- McComas, Nannie A., 276
- McCoy, Martha, 73, 93
- McClure, Alexander, 89  
 Frederic, 89  
 Martha, 89
- Moses Varnum, 89
- McDermid, Archibald, 86
- McDermit, A., 87
- McDole, Robert, 85  
 Thos., 85
- McDormitt, 98
- McGaw, Jacob, 50
- McKnight, Ellen, 275, 288
- McLachlin, Charles F., 106  
 James, 99
- McLellan, Aaron, 87  
 Benjamin, 87  
 Daniel, 87, 98  
 Dorothy, 87  
 Duncan, 87  
 Elizabeth, 87  
 Hanuah, 87  
 John, 87  
 Joseph, 87  
 Julia, 98  
 Louis, 98  
 Moses, 87  
 Rebecca, 87  
 Sarah, 87  
 William, 87
- McNabb, Alice, 307
- McQuesten, Eliza, 83, 93
- Meader, Harriet E., 257
- Melvin, Elmira, 228, 261
- Mercer, Lucy, 132, 227
- Merrill, Ann Moody, 49  
 George E., 263  
 Mary, 49, 87  
 Samuel, 235
- Meyer, Henrietta Graham, 236
- Mitchell, Abiah, 118, 126  
 Hannah, 118, 128  
 James, 79
- Miller, Jane, 183
- Mongovan, Ann, 250
- Moore, Anna, 85, 97  
 James, 133  
 Mary Alice, 264, 282
- Moores, Peter, 70
- Morgan, Charles, 183
- Morrill, Elisha, 78
- Morrison, Robert, 229
- Morse, Julia E., 78  
 Mary 88, 98
- Mosher, Abijah, 67
- Mott, Emma, 236  
 Henry, 236

Mott (continued)  
 Henry A., 236  
 Joseph Varnum, 236  
 Mary, 236  
 Louisa, 236  
 Mowry, Isabel G., 266, 270

Nelson, Lucy, 21  
 Noyes, Caroline Persis, 224  
 Charles D. Varnum, 224  
 Ellen Varnum, 224  
 Emily, 221  
 Fanny, 224  
 Frederick, 223  
 Hannah Varnum, 224  
 Lydia Jane, 224  
 Mary, 224  
 Sarah, 224  
 Nutting, Benjamin, 67  
 John, 50  
 Nye, Mill, 227

Osgood, Abiah, 51, 73  
 Emma W., 96, 103  
 Timothy, 235

Park, Mary, 83, 94  
 Parker, Anna M., 229  
 Charles Frederick, 95  
 Edmund, 66  
 Fred F., 95  
 Henrietta E., 95  
 Henry Alfred, 95  
 Lydia, 66  
 Phebe, 45, 48  
 Polly, 51  
 Mary, 128, 139  
 Mercy, 183  
 Page, Calvin, 139  
 Palmer, Emeline, 87  
 Patten, Elizabeth, 69, 89  
 Patterson, Ebenezer, 87  
 Emma, 258  
 James, 258  
 John, 258  
 Sarah, 258  
 William E., 258  
 Peabody, Ephraim S., 96  
 Anna L., 96  
 Pease, Harriet, 288  
 Mary, 184, 242

Phelps, Timothy, 133  
 Pickell, Kate, 101  
 Pierson, Mattie A., 104, 111  
 Platts, Abel, 118  
 Samuel, 117  
 Poor, Benjamin, 48  
 Betsey, 49  
 Dolly, 49  
 Dorothy, 49  
 Ebenezer, 49  
 Elizabeth, 50  
 James, 49  
 Lydia, 49  
 Patty, 48, 49  
 Persis, 49  
 Phebe, 48  
 Phebe Varnum, 50  
 Samuel, 49  
 Susan, 49  
 Susannah, 49  
 Sylvanus, 49  
 William, 49  
 Porter, Arabella Coburn, 96  
 Potter, Sarah, 90, 100  
 Presbury, Lucy, 228, 262  
 Prescott, Nancy, 221, 256  
 Dorothy, 21, 45  
 Prime, Mary, 118, 128  
 Pulsifer, Herbert B., 284

Reed, Phidelia, 87  
 Reese, Retta, 276  
 Reichman, Anna Irma, 276  
 Cecil Adolph, 276  
 Frederick, 276  
 Gustav A., 276  
 Richardson, Andrew, 229  
 Calvin, 229  
 Charles A., 35  
 Cyrus, 229  
 Dana, 182  
 David, 229  
 Edward E., 229  
 Elizabeth Jane, 229  
 Ephraim O., 230  
 Franklin, 229  
 Frances, 229  
 George Augustus, 229  
 Henry Edward, 229  
 Josiah, 27  
 Lorenzo, 229

Richardson (continued)  
 Lydia, 133, 229  
 Mary, 21  
 Phineas, 229  
 Prescott V., 229  
 Samuel, 228  
 Samuel Wood, 229  
 Ricord, Lucy, 96  
 Robbins, John D., 33, 306  
 Fatima, 98, 105  
 Robertson, Martha E., 273,  
 288  
 Robie, Anna, 69, 88  
 Rockwood, Walter, 182  
 Rowe, Lucy, 88, 100  
 Samuel II., 134  
 Ross, John Wesley, 226  
 Rugg, Samuel S., 33, 306  
 Russell, Julia H., 263, 279  
 Ryan, John, 277

Saltonstall, Mary C., 71, 90  
 Sanborn, Hiram A., 105  
 Sargent, Moses, 70  
 Nathan, 243  
 Sawyer, Isaac, 100  
 Saxon, Susan, 97  
 Shannon, D. F., 224  
 Shaw, Carrie F., 257  
 Shead, Rebeca, 45, 68  
 Shepley, Abner, 95  
 Mary, 66  
 Shipley, Ella, 107, 113  
 Naney, 85, 95  
 Sherman, Chas. A., 250  
 Shields, Ann, 227, 260  
 Skelton, Benjamin, 96  
 Smiley, George, 279  
 Smith, William, 183  
 Zachens, 97  
 Somers, William W., 106  
 Spaulding, Phebe, 136, 233  
 Rebeeca, 67, 85  
 Spence, Nathaniel, 87  
 Stacey, Sophia, 227, 257  
 Stanford, Margaret I., 265,  
 281  
 Stanton, Abby L., 108, 113  
 Starbuck, Mabel D., 273, 288  
 Staule, Ann, 118, 131  
 Stearns, Charles Oliver, 73

Stearns (continued)  
     Daniel, 100  
     Dorcas Ann, 73  
     George Parker, 73  
     Laurens, 73  
     Luther, 73, 100  
     Mary Elizabeth, 73  
     Oliver, 72  
     Susan M. C., 73  
     William Henry, 73  
 Stephens, Jennie, 111, 114  
     Louis J., 265  
     Phineas Varnum, 265  
 Stevens, Benjamin, 50  
     Betsey, 49  
     Brinsley, 224  
     Dolly, 85, 96  
     George, 96  
     James, 129  
     John Varnum, 50  
     Jonathan, 50  
 Steele, Della, 279, 290  
 Stocker, Dennis, 263  
 Storer, Martha J., 93, 101  
 Storey, Elisha, 235  
     Franklin, 235  
 Swan, Nathan, 49  
 Swett, Benjamin II., 182  
     Charles, 182  
     Daniel, 181, 182  
     Elizabeth, 182  
     Elizabeth A. A., 182  
     Emily, 182  
     Harriet, 181  
     Hitty Varnum, 182  
     Mary Butler, 181  
     Sarah Bradley, 191  
 Taylor, Agnes Mary, 276  
     Cecil Varnum, 276  
     Gladys B., 276  
     Gilbert E. R., 276  
     Helen M., 243, 267  
     Samuel Harold, 276  
     Samuel R., 276  
     Thomas Edgar, 276  
 Tenney, Augusta Coburn, 224  
     Harriet Varnum, 224  
     Emma Brown, 226  
     Franklin, 225  
     Georgette A., 226  
     Paul, 224

Tibbetts, Harriet, 250  
 Sarah Frances, 251, 274  
 Thissell, Daniel, 224  
     Daniel Varnum, 224  
     Charles A., 225  
     Jane Coburn, 225  
     John Wallace, 225  
     Franklin Tenney, 225  
     George Nelson, 225  
     Lydia Ann, 225  
     Mary Ellen, 225  
     Orphah, 225  
     Prudence A., 225  
     William H. H., 225  
 Thomas, Elizabeth, 231, 265  
 Thorngrove, Daisy, 276  
     Frederick, 275  
     J. T., 275  
     J. M., 276  
 Tolin, Edith Olive, 260  
     Emma L., 260  
     Lemuel L., 260  
     Mary A., 260  
     John V., 260  
     Nancy E., 260  
     Ninian E., 260  
     Rufus L., 260  
 Tuck, Edward, 183  
 Tucker, Betsey B., 95, 103  
 Tufts, Sarah, 183  
 Turner, Adelaide S., 257  
     Albert O., 257  
     Lyman C., 257  
     Senora, 257  
     Thomas, 257  
     Victor, 257  
     Victoria, 257  
 Tuttle, E. Belle, 107, 113  
 Tyler, Jacob, 49  
 Ulrick, Harry W., 273  
 Underhill, Frances T., 236  
     James Varnum, 236  
     James W., 236  
     Mary Louise, 236  
 Underwood, Abby Ann, 96  
     Thomas D., 96  
     Thomas J., 96  
 VARNUM, Abi, 138  
     Abiah, 68, 126, 129  
     Abiah Mitchell, 137

VARNUM (continued)  
     Abigail, 68, 69, 86, 87, 129  
     140, 183  
     Abraham, 20, 45, 67, 68,  
     86, 97  
     Adeline, 96, 235, 275  
     Albert Henry, 266, 285  
     Alice, 106  
     Almira, 99  
     Almira Mercy, 231  
     Alice Davis, 284  
     Alma Caroline, 278  
     Alpheus Franklin, 250  
     Amy Lenox, 267  
     Ann Louisa, 243  
     Anna, 85, 132  
     Anne, 95, 100  
     Annie Emma, 111  
     Anselm, 258, 275  
     Antoinette, 279  
     Archibald Oakley, 229,  
     264  
     Arthur Clayton, 36  
     Arthur Dunning, 282  
     Arthur Solomon, 276  
     Asa, 68, 85, 86, 96, 97, 98,  
     104, 138  
     Ascenath, 139  
     Atkinson Clayton, 35, 36  
     Augusta, 96  
     Austin Dixon, 261, 277  
     Benjamin, 68, 131, 289  
     Benjamin B., 261, 277  
     Benj. Franklin, 99, 104,  
     109, 184, 249, 250  
     Bertha A., 282  
     Bessie, 106  
     Betsey, 85, 87, 133  
     Betsey Jane, 100  
     Blanchard Banks, 278  
     Blanche, 113  
     Bradley, 126, 136, 234  
     Burton Wyman, 114  
     Byron Guy, 108, 113  
     Bryant, 83  
     Carl R., 276  
     Caroline Bradley, 249  
     Carrie Adelia, 290  
     Carrie Emily, 109  
     Carrie Louise, 278

## VARNUM (continued)

Catbarue, 273  
 Celia, 279  
 Charles, 73, 96, 99, 137  
 Charles Albert, 264, 282  
 Charles Archibald, 283  
 Charles Bickford, 109  
 Charles Bradley, 234, 266  
 Charles Butler, 226  
 Charles Edwin, 101, 111  
 Charles Frederick, 266,  
   281  
 Charles Henry, 93, 101  
 Charles James, 103  
 Charles Payne, 105  
 Charlotte, 96  
 Charlotte Ann, 235  
 Charlotte R., 229  
 Charlotte Thomas, 284  
 Charlotte Vivia, 265  
 Christopher C., 261  
 Clara E., 106  
 Clarissa, 71  
 Clarissa Sophia, 230  
 Clark, 107, 113  
 Clark Shipley, 113  
 Cyrus, 96, 103, 277  
 Cyrus David, 104  
 Czarina Coburn, 35, 308  
 Daniel, 34, 129, 223, 224,  
   256, 306  
 Daniel Hildreth, 256, 257  
 Deborah, 30, 118  
 Diodamia, 85  
 Doreas, 51, 71, 72, 133  
 Dolly, 50, 71, 85, 87, 97,  
   100, 132  
 Doris Dixon, 289  
 Dorothy, 45  
 Earl Frederick, 279  
 Ebenezer, 126, 132  
 Edgar Whiting, 276, 289  
 Edith Christina, 283  
 Ednah, 33, 306  
 Ednah Hamblett, 35, 308  
 Edna May, 279  
 Edward C., 101, 110  
 Edward Chester, 110  
 Edward Payson, 93, 101

## VARNUM (continued)

Edwin Bennett, 278  
 Edwin Bradley, 266  
 Eleanor, 79, 183, 234  
 Eleanor Elsic, 278  
 Electa Isadore, 105  
 Elias Thomas, 265  
 Elizabeth, 67, 68, 137, 228  
 Elizabeth Josephine, 284  
 Elizabeth Mary, 263  
 Elizabeth Morse, 235  
 Elizabeth Widgery, 265,  
   284  
 Elizabeth Wimble, 234  
 Elizabeth Winthrop, 288  
 Elvira, 263  
 Ernest E., 112  
 Ernest Johnston, 289  
 Esther, 28, 106  
 Ethel Gertrude, 285  
 Ethel Stephens, 114  
 Emma, 275  
 Emily, 263  
 Eugene Murray, 106  
 Eunice, 95, 235  
 Fanny, 229  
 Fanny M., 110  
 Festus Franklin, 273  
 Franklin, 98, 104, 106  
 Frank Benjamin, 104, 110  
 Frank Louis, 111  
 Frank Preseott, 282  
 Franklin M., 111, 114  
 Franklin W. H., 105, 111  
 Franklin Robertson, 288  
 Frederic C., 109  
 Frederick, 137, 227, 288  
 Frederic Stevens, 108  
 Frederick F., 101  
 Freeland Gardner, 101  
 Flora Fatima, 106  
 Floyd Leslie, 278  
 George, 15, 20, 99, 289,  
   290  
 George A., 101  
 George Alonzo, 106, 277  
 George Bradley, 273  
 George Cornell, 266  
 George Lawrence, 109

## VARNUM (continued)

George Stevens, 96  
 George Washington, 97,  
   100, 109, 183, 247, 250,  
   273  
 George Winthrop, 288  
 Grace Dyer, 283  
 Grosvenor Chanplin, 101,  
   109  
 Grover, 278  
 Georgia Moore, 282  
 Georgiana, 106  
 Georgiana Julia, 265  
 Gertrude, 265  
 Gertrude Mary, 285  
 Girard Compton, 275,  
   279, 288, 290  
 Gladys, 279  
 Guy Nelson, 290  
 Guy Robert, 113  
 Hannah, 16, 20, 28, 33,  
   45, 50, 67, 93, 96, 98,  
   128, 133, 183, 223, 227,  
   228, 305  
 Hannah Elvira, 257  
 Hannah Jane, 235  
 Hannah Sylvia, 105  
 Harold Abbott, 36  
 Harriet, 224, 234  
 Harriet Ann, 103  
 Harriet Chanplin, 110  
 Harriet Louisa, 101  
 Harriet Sweett, 182  
 Harvey Blanehard, 99,  
   108  
 Harvey William, 108, 113  
 Hattie Ellen, 111  
 Helen, 36  
 Helen Carlotta, 265  
 Helen Josephine, 265  
 Helen Louise, 267  
 Henry, 230, 264  
 Henry C., 110  
 Henry Clay, 250  
 Henry James, 108  
 Hiram Chandler, 104, 111  
 Hitty, 181  
 Horace Addison, 261, 277  
 Horace Homer, 278  
 Horace Wood, 277

## INDEX.

**VARNUM** (continued)  
Homer Percival, 263

Inez, 290  
Irma Lee, 265  
Isaac Kimball, 107  
  
Jacob Butler, 181, 246  
Jacob Guy, 99, 108  
James 45, 51, 69, 73, 78,  
88, 100, 128, 228, 261  
James Addison, 278  
James Brown, 35, 307  
James Edgar, 273, 288  
James Ward, 275  
James Hildreth, 257  
James Lorimer, 236  
James Mitchell, 128, 141,  
185, 226, 242, 244, 260,  
267, 285  
Jane, 28, 95  
Jane Coburn, 35, 308  
Jane Mary, 107  
Jennette, 112  
Jennie L., 276  
Jeremiah, 33, 35, 306, 308  
Jessie, 112, 289  
Jewett, 132, 227, 260  
Joanna, 27  
Joel, 132  
John, 21, 45, 48, 50, 69,  
71, 85, 88, 89, 90, 95,  
98, 103, 105, 112, 118,  
131, 227, 230, 264, 275  
John Abram, 105  
John Albim, 275, 288  
John A. M., 265, 284  
John Carlisle, 261  
John Cuttrell, 114  
John G., 257  
John Gage, 104, 111  
John Hancock, 184  
John Hand, 112  
John Jay, 90  
John Marshall, 250  
John Parker, 93, 101  
John Prescott, 264, 282,  
283  
Jonas, 45, 51, 66, 67, 82,  
83, 85, 93, 95  
Jonas Galusha, 105

**VARNUM** (continued)  
Jonas Parker, 94  
Jonas Spaulding, 85, 95  
Jonathan, 68, 85, 95, 97,  
100  
Joseph, 21, 117, 118, 125,  
126, 138, 234  
Joseph Bradley, 95, 103,  
128, 181, 184, 235, 236,  
243, 250, 257, 263, 267,  
279, 288  
Joseph Belfield, 285  
Joseph Butler, 273, 288  
Joseph Butterfield, 136,  
233, 235, 266, 285  
Joseph Parker, 102  
Joshua, 224, 257  
Joshua Burrage, 257  
Josiah, 69, 88, 100  
Julia, 98, 104, 106  
Julia Adelia, 279  
Julia Ansart, 234, 306  
Julia Augusta, 234  
Julia Estelle, 290  
Julia Mathilda, 236  
Justus Bradley, 227, 260  
Justus Frederick, 261,  
278  
Justus Warren, 278  
  
Kathrynu Starbuck, 288  
Laura, 106  
Laura Ann, 229  
Laura Augusta, 229, 263  
Laura Elizabeth, 279  
Laura Ethel, 278  
Laurent K., 113  
Lawrence Phineas, 265  
Leander, 258, 275, 289  
Leonard R., 105, 112  
Leverett Deetatur, 261,  
278  
Lillian, 284  
Lilly, 277  
Lizzie Sophronia, 107  
Lorinda Betsey, 279  
Loring Herbert, 260  
Lottie Goldsborough, 273  
Louis C., 276  
Louisa, 96  
Louisa Graham, 236

**VARNUM** (continued)  
Lucretia, 73  
Lucy, 68  
Lulu May, 113  
Lydia, 49, 66, 100  
Lydia Ann, 256, 264  
Lydia Emily, 230  
Lydia Jane, 107  
Lydia Worcester, 250  
Lyman, 100  
  
Mabel Louise, 284  
Madilla F., 109  
Margaret, 99  
Margaret Ann, 236  
Margaret Isabel, 261  
Margaret Sarah, 99  
Maria Prudence, 35, 308  
Marianne Jane, 110  
Marjorie Clara, 288  
Mark, 99, 108  
Martha, 15, 67, 89, 126,  
129  
Martha A., 106  
Martha Adoline, 96  
Martha Belle, 111  
Martha Bradstreet, 138,  
235  
Mary, 27, 30, 33, 67, 70,  
118, 128, 129, 227, 228,  
262, 276  
Mary Anne, 34, 94, 97,  
258, 307  
Mary Bradstreet, 138  
Mary Butler, 243, 250  
Mary Dole, 114  
Mary E., 106  
Mary Eliza, 105  
Mary Elizabeth 36, 263,  
264  
Mary Fenton, 275  
Mary Grace, 36  
Mary Jane, 234, 236, 247  
Mary Johnson, 235  
Mary Locada, 109  
Mary Louise, 102  
Mary Lydia, 282  
Mary Maroe, 279  
Mary Martha, 106  
Mary Parker, 140  
Mary Pease, 90

## VARNUM (continued)

Mary S., 98  
 Mathilda, 277  
 Mattie, 289  
 May, 111  
 Mehitable, 28, 131, 225  
 Mehitable Maria, 35, 308  
 Mercy, 27, 85, 87, 137  
 Molly, 182  
 Moses, 100, 109, 132, 227,  
 257, 258, 275  
 Myrtie, 276

Nancy, 228  
 Nancy S., 275  
 Nathaniel, 83  
 Nathaniel Saltoustall, 90  
 Nehemiah, 30  
 Nellie A., 113  
 Nelson Carlisle, 278  
 Noah Claude, 278  
 Nora Viola, 279

Obediah Richardson, 230  
 Olive, 30, 276  
 Olive Isabel, 278  
 Olín Blanchard, 279  
 Oliver P., 34, 307  
 Orlando, 258  
 Orrin, 99

Parker, 51, 70, 73, 93  
 Pascal, 98  
 Percy Edwin, 284  
 Persia Adoline, 257  
 Persis Hale, 129, 224  
 Peter, 51, 69, 89  
 Phebe, 48, 183, 184  
 Phebe Parker, 72  
 Phebe Spaulding, 235  
 Phineas, 88, 99, 134, 229,  
 230  
 Phineas Fox, 231, 265  
 Phineas George, 107  
 Phineas Isaac Keys, 109  
 Polly, 71, 83, 89, 100,  
 221  
 Prescott, 133, 228, 262  
 Prescott Leonard, 279,  
 290  
 Prudence, 78, 87, 98  
 Prudence Almira, 265  
 Prudence Ford, 35, 308

## VARNUM (continued)

Prudence Gale, 224  
 Prudence Harris, 231

Rachel, 30, 85, 88, 125,  
 136, 139  
 Rebekah, 85, 227  
 Rebecca Arms, 251  
 Rhoda, 133  
 Richard Saltonstall, 90,  
 100, 110  
 Robert Monroe, 114  
 Robert Taylor, 267  
 Russell Douglass, 279  
 Ruth, 87, 117, 131, 288  
 Ruth Moody, 235  
 Sally Johnson, 234

Samuel, 16, 20, 27, 30, 33,  
 118, 128, 139, 140, 235  
 Samuel Chandler, 111  
 Sarah, 27, 33, 45, 50, 67,  
 68, 70, 86, 106, 117, 131,  
 133, 227, 306  
 Sarah Ann, 235, 258  
 Sarah Atkinson, 34, 307  
 Sarah Bowdoin, 72  
 Sarah Coburn, 230  
 Sarah Cutter, 111  
 Sarah Elizabeth, 104  
 Sarah Helena, 257  
 Sarah Vivia, 264  
 Sidney, 105  
 Silas, 139  
 Simon Blanchard, 99, 107  
 Solomon Dixon, 260, 276  
 Sophronia, 99  
 Susan, 73, 100, 260, 275,  
 276  
 Susan Dinsmore, 263  
 Susan Graham, 267  
 Susan Stacey, 257  
 Susannah, 49, 134, 229  
 Susannah Hildreth, 257

Thaddeus Stevens, 112  
 Thomas, 21, 27, 28, 31,  
 33, 34, 35, 36, 305, 307  
 Thomas Barrett, 35, 307  
 Thomas Howard, 284

Varina Dorothy, 288  
 Vera, 277

## VARNUM (continued)

Virginia, 260  
 Virgil, 289  
 Vivian, 289  
 Vivia, 284

Walter Jewett, 276  
 Webster, 109  
 Wilbur Fisk, 279  
 William, 68, 86, 95, 97,  
 99, 103, 104, 107, 137  
 229, 263  
 William Bentley, 94, 102,  
 110  
 Wilbert Francis, 109  
 William Francis, 103  
 William Harrison, 251,  
 274  
 William Jewett, 278  
 William Joseph, 279  
 William Moore, 97  
 William Parker, 83, 94,  
 102  
 William Prescott, 263,  
 282  
 William Nelson, 263, 279  
 William Wallace, 111

Zephaniah Sexton, 263

Vibbert, Lucinda, 263  
 Maria E., 263, 279  
 Viles, Albert, 257  
 Vining, Annie, 307

Ward, Nancy, 258, 275  
 Wason, Lucy L., 49  
 Whiting, Blanche M., 276,  
 289  
 Phineas, 133  
 Whitney, Rufus B., 35, 308  
 Fred A., 35

Whittemore, James, 257  
 Wickman, J. H., 110  
 Wilder, Luke, 49  
 Williams, Harriet, 224  
 Wilson, Charles, 224  
 Wimperly, Anna, 97  
 Winslow, Charles, 140  
 Sidney, 236  
 Wyman, Laura P., 98, 104

York, Hester Ann, 225



## ADDENDA.

---

(See Page 16.)

SAMUEL VARNUM. "The Old Manse, the home of Rev<sup>d</sup> Nathaniel Rogers, pastor of the 1st Church, is on the site of the lot sold by Samuel Varnum, Sen., to Edward Dean with a house, Apr. 8, 1665." (Ipswich Deeds, 2, 245.) *Waters' Ipswich* (1905) p. 385.

In diagram (No. 2, page 338) the lot is located on the High Street, near Meeting-house Green, and marked Samuel Varnum.

(See pages 33, 34, 35.)

6. THOMAS VARNUM<sup>5</sup>, born 5 May, 1743; died 1 July, 1805; married (int.) "Mr. Thomas Varnum entered with me his intention of marriage with Mrs. Polly Atkinson of Pelham." Dracutt T. R., Vol. 2, p. 433. She was born in 1762, died 10 Feb., 1818.

Nine children:

- i. Mary,<sup>6</sup> b. 11 Nov., 1784; d. 8 Sept., 1859; m. 29 June, 1813, Lt. Peter, son of Hezekiah Coburn of Dracutt, who died 12 Feb., 1832.

Four children (Coburn):

Robert Parker, b. 6 Oct., 1814; d. 1820.

Jeremiah Varnum, b. 18 Dec., 1815; d. 1851.

Peter Sullivan, b. 21 Dec., 1817; d. 27 Feb., 1895;  
m. Lucy Bowman.

Fanny, b. 27 July, 1823; m. Robert Mills.

- ii. Hannah, b. 29 Aug., 1786; d. 27 Jan., 1844; m. 3 Nov., 1807, Timothy, son of Jacob and Lydia (Hall) Coburn, b. 29 Aug., 1778; d. 14 June, 1819.

Four children (Coburn):

Czarina, b. 14 Aug., 1808; d. 11 Oct., 1842.

Timothy Varnum, b. 12 April, 1810; d. 19 April, 1860;  
m. Catharine P. Hardy.

- Abel, b. 24 Aug., 1816; d. 2 Oct., 1894; m. 12 Nov., 1845, Julia Ansart Varnum.  
 Bartlett, b. 6 July, 1819; d. 18 Aug., 1844.  
 iii. Thomas, b. 19 April, 1788; m. Mary Brown.  
 iv. Sarah, b. 21 Oct., 1790; d. 30 Aug., 1853; m. 25 Feb., 1810, Charles, son of Parker and Hannah (Abbott) Bodwell of Methuen, b. 25 Aug., 1788; d. 7 July, 1862.  
 Six children (Bodwell):  
   Mary Varnum, b. 9 Aug., 1810; d. 23 Oct., 1834; m. 25 Dec., 1833, Samuel S. Rugg, of Lowell.  
   Sarah Ann, b. 11 Jan., 1813; d. unm. 15 Mar., 1885.  
   Jane, b. 24 Feb., 1815; d. 1895; m. (1) 19 May, 1836, John D. Barnett of Barnett, Vt.; (2) 13 June, 1843, John D. Robbins of Lowell.  
   Phebe Varnum, b. 3 Dec., 1823.  
   Hannah Poor, b. 26 July, 1825; d. 10 Aug., 1903; m. (1) John R. Moore of N. H.; (2) Charles H. Madeley.  
   Elizabeth Baldwin, b. 30 June, 1828; lives (1906) in Lowell.  
 v. Samuel, b. 29 March, 1792; d. unm. 7 Feb. 1879.  
 vi. Jeremiah, b. 16 Mar., 1794; m. Mehitable Ford.  
 vii. Ednah, b. 21 Feb. 1796; d. 1 Feb., 1832; m. 23 May, 1822, Theodore, b. 3 May, 1793, d. 30 Sept., 1880, son of John and Elizabeth (Perham) Hamblet of Dracut.  
 Five children (Hamblet):  
   Abigail Butterfield, b. 23 Mar., 1823; d. 27 Jan., 1892; m. 31 March, 1846, William Tuck of Andover.  
   Daniel Varnum, b. 18 Nov., 1824; m. 26 April, 1849, Helen A. Peasley.  
   Cyrus, b. 15 Jan., 1827; m. 1. Jan., 1855, Mary Ann Merrill of Tyngsboro.  
   John Perham, b. 28 Nov., 1828; d. unm. 16 Oct., 1885.  
   Oliver, b. 28 Mar., 1831; d. 22 Dec., 1844.  
 viii. Daniel, b. 10 Feb., 1798; d. 4 May, 1881, unm. "He was the last of a family of nine children, and died in the old ancestral home, where he and his brother Samuel, who d. in 1879, aged 87, lived with their eldest brother Thomas, who d. in 1879."

- ix. Oliver P., b. Mar., 1805; d. unm. 1 Nov., 1839. He was a deeply religious man, a fine performer on the violin, which he played at church, regarding it as consecrated to sacred music, and none other would he play thereon.

Thomas Varnum lived and died on the ancestral acres which descended from his grandfather Thomas; and lies buried beside his wife in the Woodbine Cemetery, on Varnum Avenue, near his home in Dracut, now Pawtucketville, Lowell. He was a farmer. He was one of the 81 Minute Men, who, under Capt. Stephen Russell, "marched on ye 19th Apr., 1775 against the Ministerial Troops." In the same company was his cousin Joseph Bradley Varnum. He left no will. His wife was appointed administratrix 21 Sept., 1819. His estate was appraised by Parker Varnum, James Varnum and Thomas Hovey, 4th Oct., 1810, at \$5527.90.

7. THOMAS<sup>6</sup> VARNUM (*Thomas,<sup>5</sup> Thomas,<sup>4</sup> Thomas,<sup>3</sup> Samuel,<sup>2</sup> George<sup>1</sup>*), born 29 April, 1788; died 13 April, 1857; m. 6 June, 1822, Mary, dau. of Abel and Mary (Barrett) Brown of Concord, Mass., born 30 April, 1803, died 1 Oct., 1850.

Five children:

- i. Mary Ann,<sup>7</sup> b. 5 Apr., 1823; d. 3 Sept., 1862; m. 9 May, 1846, Horatio W. Marshall.
- ii. Thomas Barrett, b. 27 Apr., 1825; d. in infancy.
- iii. Sarah Atkinson, b. 11 Oct., 1826; d. 31 Dec., 1897; m. 25 Dec., 1850, Jonathan, son of Jonathan and Anna (Coburn) Bowers, of Dracut, b. 2 Mar., 1825; d. 28 Dec., 1894.

Four children (Bowers):

Minnie Brown, m. 12 Sept., 1876, Frank E. Jewett of Lowell.

Kittie Annie.

Jonathan, Jr., m. 10 Dec., 1885, Alice McNabb.

George, m. 14 Nov., 1888, Annie Vining

- iv. James Brown, b. 17 Feb., 1832; d. in infancy.

- v. Thomas, m. (1) Sarah M. Pierce; (2) Helen M. Allen.

Thomas Varnum, like those of his name, lived and died on the ancestral acres originally purchased by Samuel Varnum at the Pawtucket upper falls, Dracutt. With him lived his brothers Samuel, Daniel and Oliver. He was a successful farmer. His family burial lot is in Woodbine Cemetery.

S. JEREMIAH<sup>6</sup> (*Thomas*,<sup>5</sup> *Thomas*,<sup>4</sup> *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> *George*<sup>1</sup>) born 10 Mar., 1794; died 18 April, 1876; married 5 Mar., 1822, Mehitable, dau. of Timothy Ford and Mehitable Rowell his wife, of Hudson, N. H., who died 15 Apr., 1890.

Children:

- i. Mehitable Maria,<sup>7</sup> b. 5 June, 1823; d. 5 Apr., 1844.
- ii. Prudenee Ford, b. 20 Sept., 1824; d. 30 June, 1833.
- iii. Jane Coburn, b. 23 May, 1826; d. 15 Jan., 1882; m. Rufus B. Whitney.

One child: Fred A., d. 3 Sept., 1866.

- iv. Atkinson Clayton, b. 27 Jan., 1828; m. Mary Jane Abbott.
- v. Ednah Hamblett, b. 25 Feb., 1831; d. unm. 5 Nov., 1866.
- vi. Maria Prudence, b. 30 July, 1834; m. Nov. 13, 1861, John M. Coburn, b. 1823, d. 1883.

One dau.: Lillian Arabella, m. Charles Arthur Richardson.

- vii. Czarina Coburn, b. 13 Nov., 1837; m. 23 Nov., 1856, John Jay Colton, M.D.

Two daughters:

Nellie Varnum, m. Roscoe L. Chase.

Alice Maria, m. William T. S. Bartlett.

Jeremiah Varnum was a farmer in Dracutt. He was chosen Elder of the West Church of Dracutt (now the Pawtucket Congregational of Lowell), 15 Aug., 1831, and served as an Elder until April, 1859. He was a pronounced anti-slavery advocate, and in 1834 contributed money with other Dracutt men in aid of the cause. He lived in Dracutt on the original Shatswell-Varnum purchase which descended to him through Thomas, first son of Samuel. He was a man of sturdy independence of character, which gave him universal esteem.

312 P.M.











